

तमसा मा ज्योतिर्गमय

SANTINIKETAN  
VISWA BHARATI  
LIBRARY

095

M 642















The Poetical Works  
of  
John Milton



The Poetical Works  
of  
John Milton

With Introductory Memoir  
Notes, Bibliography  
Etc.



LONDON  
FREDERICK WARNE AND CO.  
AND NEW YORK





# Preface



THE first edition of the "Chandos" Milton was issued in 1872. It was carefully edited from the early editions; and some of the best notes of Hume, Dunster (for "Paradise Regained"), Bishop Newton, and Todd were retained, and original ones added. But a change was made in the placing of one line. In Book IX., line 25, we had in Milton's account of his choice of a subject for an epic—

" Since first this subject for heroic song  
Pleased me, long choosing and beginning late,  
Wars, hitherto the only argument  
Heroic deemed, chief mastery to dissect," etc.

Here the line, "*not sedulous by nature to indite*," was evidently meant to follow "beginning late," thus—

" long choosing and beginning late,  
Not sedulous by nature to indite  
Wars, hitherto the only argument," etc.—

but that line was found at line 96, where it destroyed the sense, thus—

" For in the wily snake  
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,  
As from his wit and native subtlety  
Proceeding, which in other beasts observed  
*Not sedulous by nature to indite*<sup>1</sup>  
Active within beyond the sense of brute."

The line removed to its right place left—

" Proceeding, which in other beasts observed  
Active within beyond the sense of brute."

---

<sup>1</sup> How could the snake or other beasts "indite"?

## Preface

It was with reluctance that even this obvious misplacement was rearranged;—the misplaced line is still retained in the new Aldine Edition—but we are glad to see that Professor Masson, the biographer of Milton, has made the same correction in his Globe Edition of the poems in 1877. With this exception, the text has been faithfully followed.

In the present edition the only change made is that of putting *ed* instead of 'd at the end of the past tense of verbs; with an accent over the è when it is to be pronounced; but we have retained the apostrophe over omitted syllables, though the modern editions give the full word, thus either making the line a syllable too long, or encouraging the modern slovenly habit of pronunciation, by which we often hear such a nobly-sounding word as "history" hissed out as "hist'ry," "Freeman's Hist'ry," "Lecky's Hist'ry," etc. We have also retained the spelling of words peculiar to Milton's period, as *highth* for *height*—*meath* for *mead*, etc. (It is singular how the people of Hampshire still say "highth" not "*height*.") Modern writers and editors seem to have generally discarded that valuable stop, the colon, which was much used by Milton and his contemporaries, and is surely of great importance in the "Paradise Lost." Its place is generally taken now by a period or full stop. The punctuation of this edition is kept as near to that of the poet as is possible for modern readers.

The Notes explain Milton's allusions to the astronomy and philosophy of his age, and give some account of the persons to whom his sonnets are addressed, or to whom reference is made in his minor poems.

Many suggestions have been made as to whence Milton might have derived the idea of a poem on the Fall of Man. Of these, the only probable sources seem to be Cædmon's "Paraphrases of Holy Writ," in which the monk of Whitby (whose strange story is told in Bede's *Ecclesiastical*

## Preface

*History*) relates, also dramatically, the fall of the rebel angels, and tells, in short Anglo-Saxon measure, how Satan led the others into rebellion. There is a kind of likeness in the sense of the archangel's speeches, as in—

"This narrow place is most unlike  
That other that we ere have known," etc.;

but the story of the Temptation is quite different. Cædmon's poem was published in 1655 by Francis Junius, eleven years before the appearance of "*Paradise Lost*."

Andreini has been also supposed to have suggested the great poem by his "*Adamo*," which Cowper translated for Hayley's Edition of Milton.

The strongest resemblance, however, to the "*Paradise Lost*" is found in Joost Van Den Vondel's "*Lucifer*," published in 1654. Vondel, one of the most distinguished Dutch poets, was born at Cologne in 1587, and died in 1659. His name is still honoured in Holland, as that of Shakespeare is in England. An elaborate comparison between "*Lucifer*" and "*Paradise Lost*" was given in 1885, in "*Milton and Vondel; a Curiosity of Literature*," by G. Edmundson. That age and the one immediately preceding it were, however, fruitful in great authors everywhere; and it is quite likely that Milton never saw the Dutch "*Lucifer*." The mere title of a poem would be suggestion enough for him, as the question of Ellwood was for the "*Paradise Regained*," and this he must have found in Dante's "*Divine Comedy*," resemblances to which we have ventured to point out in the Introductory Memoir, showing that there was a likeness of thought, sometimes of expression, between the great poet of Italy and the sublime poet of England.

L. VALENTINE.

*April, 1896.*



# Contents



	PAGE		PAGE
INTRODUCTORY MEMOIR . . . .	17	PARADISE LOST.	
EARLY POEMS.		Book I . . . . .	123
On the Death of a Fair Infant, dying of a Cough . . . .	29	Book II . . . . .	126
At a Vacation Exercise in the Col- lege . . . . .	32	Book III . . . . .	155
ODES.		Book IV. . . . .	176
On the Morning of Christ's Nativity .	36	Book V. . . . .	204
The Hymn . . . . .	37	Book VI . . . . .	229
Upon the Circumcision . . . .	44	Book VII . . . . .	253
The Passion . . . . .	45	Book VIII . . . . .	271
On Time . . . . .	48	Book IX. . . . .	289
At a Solemn Music . . . .	48	Book X. . . . .	320
Song. On May Morning . . . .	49	Book XI. . . . .	350
EPITAPHS.		Book XII. . . . .	374
An Epitaph on the Marchioness of Winchester . . . . .	50	PARADISE REGAINED.	
An Epitaph on the Admirable Dramatic Poet W. Shak- speare . . . . .	52	Book I. . . . .	301
On the University Carrier . . .	53	Book II . . . . .	406
Another on the Same . . . .	53	Book III. . . . .	42
IL ALLEGRO . . . . .	54	Book IV. . . . .	433
IL PENSEROSO . . . . .	59	SAMSON AGONISTES . . . . .	45
ARCADES.		SONNETS AND CANZONE.	
Song I. "Look, nymphs, and shepherds look" . . . .	64	To a Nightingale . . . . .	501
Song II. "O'er the smooth en- amelled green" . . . .	67	To an Italian Lady, perhaps Leonora Baroni . . . .	502
Song III. "Nymphs and Shep- herds dance no more" . . .	67	Canzone . . . . .	503
COMUS, A MASK . . . . .	68	On his being arrived at the Age of Twenty-three . . . . .	505
LYCIDAS . . . . .	97	When the Assault was intended to the City . . . . .	505
		To a Virtuous Young Lady . . .	506
		To the Lady Margaret Jey . . .	507
		On the Detraction which followed upon my Writing Certain Treatises . . . . .	508
		On the Same . . . . .	508
		To Mr. H. Lawes, on the Publish- ing his Airs . . . . .	509
		On the Religious Memory of Mrs. Catherine Thomson . . . .	510
		To the Lord General Fairfax . .	510
		To the Lord General Cromwell .	511
		To Sir Henry Vane the Younger .	512
		On the Late Massacre in Piedmont	512

# Contents

	PAGE		PAGE
<b>SONNETS—continued.</b>		<b>JOANNI MILTONI LONDINENSIS.—</b>	
On his Blindness . . . . .	513	ELEGIARUM LIBER . . . . .	554
To Mr. Lawrence . . . . .	514	Eleg. I. Ad Carolum Deodatum,	
To Cyriac Skinner . . . . .	514	1627. . . . .	555
To the Same . . . . .	515	Eleg. II. Anno Ætatis 17. In	
On his Deceased Wife . . . . .	516	Obitum Præconis Academici	
On the New Forcers of Conscience		Cantabrigiensis . . . . .	557
under the Long Parliament . . . . .	516	Eleg. III. Anno Ætatis 17. In	
		Obitum Præsulis Whintoniensis	558
<b>TRANSLATIONS TAKEN FROM</b>		Eleg. IV. Anno Ætatis 18. Ad	
<b>MILTON'S PROSE WORKS.</b>		Thomam Junium præceptorem	
The Fifth Ode of Horace, Lib. I. . . . .	518	suum, apud mercatores Anglicos	
From Geoffrey of Monmouth . . . . .	518	Hamburgæ agentes, Pastoris	
From Dante . . . . .	519	munere fungentem . . . . .	560
From Petrarch . . . . .	519	Eleg. V. Anno Ætatis 20. In Ad-	
From Ariosto . . . . .	519	ventum Veris . . . . .	563
From Horace . . . . .	519	Eleg. VI. Ad Carolum Deodatum	
From Horace . . . . .	520	ruri commorantem . . . . .	567
From Euripides . . . . .	520	Eleg. VII. Anno Ætatis 19. . . . .	570
From Horace . . . . .	520		
From Sophocles . . . . .	520	<b>EPIGRAMMATUM LIBER.</b>	
From Homer . . . . .	521	In Proditionem Bombardicam . . . . .	573
From Seneca . . . . .	521	In Eandem . . . . .	573
		In Eandem . . . . .	574
<b>PSALMS.</b>		In Inventorem Bombardæ . . . . .	574
Psalms I. Done into Verse, 1653 . . . . .	522	Ad Leonoriam Romæ Canentem . . . . .	574
Psalms II. Aug. 8, 1653. Terzette . . . . .	522	Ad Eandem . . . . .	575
Psalms III. Aug. 9, 1653. "When		In Salmasii Hundredam . . . . .	575
he Fleed from Absalom" . . . . .	523	In Salmasium . . . . .	576
Psalms IV. Aug. 10, 1653 . . . . .	524	Apologus de Rustico et Hero . . . . .	576
Psalms V. Aug. 12, 1653 . . . . .	525	Ad Christinam Suecorum Reginam,	
Psalms VI. Aug. 13, 1653 . . . . .	526	Nomine Cromwelli . . . . .	577
Psalms VII. Aug. 14, 1653. "Upon			
the Words of Chush the Ben-		<b>SYLVARUM LIBER.</b>	
jamite against him" . . . . .	527	In Obitum Procancellarii Medici.	
Psalms VIII. Aug. 14, 1653 . . . . .	529	Anno Ætatis 17 . . . . .	578
Psalms LXXX. April, 1648 . . . . .	530	In Quintum Novembris. Anno	
Psalms LXXXI. . . . .	532	Ætatis 17. . . . .	579
Psalms LXXXII. . . . .	534	In Obitum Præsulis Eliensis. Anno	
Psalms LXXXIII. . . . .	535	Ætatis 17 . . . . .	585
Psalms LXXXIV. . . . .	537	Naturam non Pati Senium . . . . .	587
Psalms LXXXV. . . . .	539	De Idea Platonica Quemadmodum	
Psalms LXXXVI. . . . .	540	Aristoteles Intellexit . . . . .	589
Psalms LXXXVII. . . . .	542	Ad Patrem . . . . .	590
Psalms LXXXVIII. . . . .	543	Ad Salsillum, Poetam Romanum,	
A Paraphrase on Psalm CXIV. . . . .	545	Ægrotantem . . . . .	593
Psalms CXXXVI. . . . .	546	Mansus . . . . .	595
Psalms CXIV. . . . .	548	Epitaphium Damonis . . . . .	598
		Ad Joannem Rousium Oxoniensis	
<b>JOHANNIS MILTONI LONDINENSIS</b>		Academiæ Bibliothecarium . . . . .	604
POEMATA . . . . .	550		
Ode . . . . .	551	<b>BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . . 607</b>	

# Introductory Memoir



THE genius of Milton has been acknowledged for more than two hundred years, and his work has been criticised by our greatest writers. Yet, while Italy burst forth into a pæan at the glorious intellect of the young poet from beyond the seas ; while the patron of Tasso welcomed him and told him—imitating Gregory the Great—that if he were not a heretic he would be—“not an Angle but an angel,” he had not attained great fame in his own calmer and colder land. But his genius was acknowledged by the next great poet of his age, Dryden, in the well-known lines—

“Three poets in three distant ages born,  
Greece, Italy, and England did adorn,  
The first in loftiness of thought surpassed  
The next in majesty ; in both the last,  
The force of Nature could no farther go,  
To make a third she joined the former two.”

This tribute Milton never saw ; but, during his life, his friend Andrew Marvel praised his poems in a Latin epistle. Addison introduced the, at that time, neglected Epic to *his* public, through the criticism in the *Spectator*, and from that time Milton's fame has been growing with the years. The writers of his life and the critics of his works are too numerous to recount, and their names are the best known in our literature. Very little remains to write on the subject ; yet we can scarcely pass on to our brief biographical notice without pointing out how the spirit of the age in which our great poet lived is reflected in his work. And this is invariably the case. Only the nineteenth century, with its culture, refinement, and long series of preceding great poets, could have given us a Tennyson or a Browning. Introspection, doubt, pessimism, over-culture, are of this age, which could not have produced a Shakespeare or a Milton ; for, talk and dream as men will, of writing for lasting fame, they (in reality) write of and for their present.



## Introductory Memoir

We may therefore be thankful that a happy providence has been manifested in the periods when our greatest poets have appeared.

The days of chivalry—though then passing away—gave us Chaucer; the glorious reign of Elizabeth, Spenser and our world-renowned Shakespeare; the age of Puritanism and the Commonwealth, Milton's grand Epic. In fact, this powerful influence of the present on writers is strikingly manifest in Milton himself at two different periods. In his youth there was a king, a court, a peaceful England, and he wrote his exquisite "Allegro" and "Penseroso," and his matchless "Comus," his "Epitaph on Shakespeare," and his sonnets. Nearly twenty years pass. England is under the shadow of a stern Puritanism, and Milton, who has then reproached his king for reading our glorious dramatist's plays, lays aside his dream of an Arthurian Epic, and chooses a biblical subject, making it, by his genius, one of the grandest poems ever written, but in a strain from which the old beauty and music of the "Allegro" and "Penseroso" are gone. With the gravity of the times, the poet's measure changes, and blank verse in a far different strain, though as sublime as it is peculiar, is used instead; while "Samson Agonistes" replaces "Comus." Yet the great classic scholar, who wrote Latin poems as no Englishman had ever done before, who could write Italian sonnets that won the praise of Tasso's friend, the Marchese Manso, still brought his knowledge of heathen poets and of Italian literature to his solemn task, and when memory recalled their descriptions, he embellished and improved them, bringing truly out of his treasures "things new and old."

Addison, in his celebrated criticism on the "Paradise Lost,"<sup>1</sup> has pointed out the passages in which Milton has followed Homer; but he (Milton) seems also to have been greatly influenced and impressed by Dante, with whose Divine Comedy he was doubtless well acquainted. May not the "Inferno" and "Paradiso" have even suggested the "Paradise Lost," with its pathetic subject and title, different as the fiends of the latter are from the hideous beings of the first; and superior as are the angels of Milton to those of Dante or even of Tasso? That the English poet found suggestions in the Italian poets is evident, since we find in the "Paradise Lost" many lines and ideas closely resembling them. We give a few instances from Dante. The Italian poet describes the sounds of hell as whirling—

"Round through the air with solid darkness stained,  
Like to the sand that in the whirlwind flies."

"Inferno," can. i. 29

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Spectator*, March 22, 1711-12, 333.

# Introductory Memoir

Milton describes the embryo atoms of Chaos as—

“Unnumbered as the sands  
Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,  
Levied to side with warring winds.”  
“Paradise Lost,” bk. ii. 904.

Dante speaks of the fate of the condemned as doomed—

“Into eternal darkness there to dwell  
In fierce heat and in ice.”  
“Inferno,” can. iii. 106, 107.

Milton says—

“Thither, by harpy-footed Furies baled,  
At certain revolutions all the damned  
Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change  
Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
From beds of raging fire to starve in ice<sup>1</sup>  
Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
Immovable, infixed, and frozen round,  
Periods of time; thence hurried back to fire.”  
“Paradise Lost,” bk. ii. 596.

Dante makes the heathen poet Virgil speak of those in Limbo as—

“Only so far afflicted that we live,  
Desiring without hope.”  
“Inferno,” can. iv. 72, 73.

Eve, in her lamentation, speaks of—

“With desire to languish without hope.”  
“Paradise Lost,” bk. x. 995.

Dante says of the glory of God—

“His glory by whose might all things are moved  
Pierces the universe, and in one part,  
Sheds more resplendence, elsewhere less.”  
“Paradiso,” can. i. 3.

Milton writes—

“His magnetic beam that gently warms  
The universe, and to each inward part,  
With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep.”  
“Paradise Lost,” bk. iii. 586.

The description of Satan turning into a serpent closely follows that of Dante in the “Inferno,” canto xxv. 121.

There are, in fact, numerous instances of Milton's acquaintance with the other Italian poets. His Limbo, or Paradise of Fools, is evidently taken, not from Dante's “Limbo,” but from Ariosto's.

<sup>1</sup> See also Shakespeare's “Measure for Measure,” act iii. sc. 1.

## Introductory Memoir

There are even lines in the poem reminding us of Guarini's "Pastor Fido;" and Dr. Johnson thought that Milton might have taken the idea of writing in blank verse from Trissino's "Italia Liberata." But Milton's blank verse, solemn and grand, "a mighty line," is entirely original; though he brings to his treatment of his subject the most wonderful amount of varied knowledge possible. His prodigious memory must have been saturated with all that the other great poets had written, and with all the science of his time which he constantly reproduces. He had formed for himself a style capable in great measure, if not entirely, of expressing his sublime thoughts. That there are faults in this great poem is merely saying that it is human. Yet we may venture to regret that Milton left the two singular blunders of

"God and His Son except,  
*Created thing* nought valued lie nor shunned."

Here, of course, Milton never *meant* to say (as he does) that God and our Lord are created beings.

"The fairest of her daughters Eve,"

is also something bewildering, undoubtedly, but they are, in fact, mere inadvertencies, mistakes that, could Milton have used his own eyes, would assuredly have been corrected. We must not, indeed, forget that this grand Epic was the production of a blind man, and may rather wonder at the few faults that have been found in it, than at mistakes like these. He had to trust to his memory for every correction, and it must have been difficult for him to follow unerringly the voice that read to him. In our own century, great wonder and admiration have been expressed for the American historian who, with imperfect sight, compiled and wrote his admirable History of Ferdinand and Isabella; but few remember that our own great blind poet *dictated* twelve books of an Epic that would have been, as some critic has said, "the greatest in the world had not Homer preceded him."

The life-story of this wonderful genius has more of incident in it than is to be found in that of most writers; for the period to which we owe his marvellous poem was one of remarkable events,—of change, and trouble, and civil war. But all was yet peace, under that most pacific monarch, James I., when, early on the morning of December 9, 1608, the infant destined to immortal fame was born. He was the son of John Milton, a gentleman of old family, whose ancestors had formerly possessed the estate of Milton, near Thame in Oxfordshire; but this property they lost during the Wars of the Roses, and the poet was born at

## Introductory Memoir

his father's house, "The Spread Eagle," in Bread Street, London—the house taking its name from his father's armorial bearings, as gentlemen's houses then did, the numbering of dwellings being unknown.<sup>1</sup>

Milton's grandfather, John Milton, keeper of the forest of Shotover, was a bigoted Roman Catholic. He sent his son John to Christ Church, Oxford; and the youth, a man of great ability, as his son has told us, imbibed the principles of the Reformation, and was in consequence disinherited by his father. Compelled to work for his living, John Milton adopted the profession of a scrivener—or lawyer—which he practised at the "Spread Eagle," Bread Street. He married a Miss Sarah Jeffreys. There has been much disputation as to the name of the poet's mother, but her true surname was discovered in 1868 by Colonel Chester, an American antiquary, who informed the *Athenæum* for November (of that year) that, in examining the Bishop of London's registry of marriages, he had found one attested by John Milton, "who had married the sister of the bride, *Margaret Jeffery*." This register confirmed the parish register of All Hallows, where there is an entry, February 22, 1610, of the burial of "Mrs. Ellen Jefferys, the mother of Mr. John Mylton's wife, of this parish." Sarah Jeffreys (Mrs. Milton) became the mother of the poet who has immortalised his name. The beautiful and gifted infant was reared in a home of intelligence and harmony. His father was a good classical scholar, and a fine musician, and was capable of appreciating and training the child's precocious intelligence. Milton has given us some account of his parents. He describes his mother as "most excellent," and particularly known for her charities in the neighbourhood.

"My father," he says in his "Second Defence," "destined me from my infancy to the study of polite literature, which I embraced with such avidity, that, from the age of twelve, I hardly ever retired from my books before midnight. This proved the first source of injury to my eyes, whose natural weakness was attended with frequent pains in the head; but as all these disadvantages could not repress my ardour for learning, my father took care to have me instructed by various preceptors, both at home and at school."<sup>2</sup>

The precocious genius of the boy might well have incited his father to give him every advantage; Aubrey, who was acquainted with Milton, tells us that he wrote poetry at

<sup>1</sup> Numbers to houses were very rare till 1756. It is said that the first house numbered in London was No. 1 Strand, which stood next to old Northumberland House.

<sup>2</sup> From the *Literary Miscellany*, 1812.

## Introductory Memoir

ten years old; and a beautiful portrait by Jansen, of the child at that age, exists to attest the paternal pride in him.

The tutor whom Mr. Milton engaged for his wondrous son was the Rev. Thomas Young of Essex, for whom his pupil formed a sincere attachment. In 1623, when the lad was fifteen, Young quitted his native land on account of religious persecution, leaving a lively and tender remembrance of him in the mind of his pupil. Milton was then at St. Paul's School, where he worked hard under Alexander Gill for a twelvemonth. At this time he translated the 114th and 136th Psalms. The following year, 1625, he was admitted a pensioner of Christ's College, Cambridge. During his residence there he composed most of his Latin poems, of which Dr. Johnson says, "I once heard Mr. Hampton, the translator of Polybius, say that Milton was the first Englishman who, after the revival of letters, wrote Latin verses with classical elegance."

While at Cambridge he wrote his Elegy, "*Ad Thomam Junium præceptorem suum, apud mercatores Anglicos Hamburgæ agentes, Pastoris munere fungentem.*"

Young returned to England, thus fulfilling the young poet's earnestly expressed wishes, in 1628, and was appointed to the Mastership of Jesus College, Cambridge, in 1644. Afterwards he became Vicar of Stow Market for thirty years.

At Cambridge, Milton formed a friendship for Edward King, whose death he laments in "*Lycidas.*" Another early and dearly-loved friend of his youth was Charles Diodati, the son of an Italian physician who had settled in England, and practised his profession there with great success. Charles Diodati's uncle, Giovanni (John) Diodati, was the translator of the Bible into Italian; the family had adopted the principles of the Reformed faith, and Giovanni was a professor of theology at Geneva.

Milton was remarkable, in his youth for his great personal beauty, which obtained him the name of the "Lady" of his college. He was not tall, but graceful in person, and, like Tasso—"He of the sword and pen"—he was a skilful swordsman and fond of the exercise. His long and light-brown hair was parted on his brow and fell to his shoulders; his eyes were dark grey, his complexion fair and delicate. In after-years, when time and sorrow were creeping on him, he still looked ten years younger than he was; and his eyes did not betray by their appearance the sad secret of their blindness. "His harmonical and ingenuous soul," says Aubrey, "dwelt in a beautiful and well-proportioned body."

He passed seven years at Cambridge, with the exception of a brief interval of absence, during his first year there, caused by some difference with his tutor, Chappell; but he returned, and

## Introductory Memoir

was allowed to select another tutor—Nathaniel Tovey. He took his degree of B.A. in 1629, and M.A. in 1632. He had designed, when he first went to Cambridge, to enter holy orders, but could not bring himself to sign the Articles of the Church or submit to its discipline. He determined, therefore, to return to his home and lead the life of a student.

His father had, by this time, made a competence, retired from business, and taken a house at Horton, in Buckinghamshire. Thither Milton repaired from Cambridge, his indulgent parent being ever ready to yield to his wishes.

During his residence at the University he had written all the earlier poems, amongst them the magnificent "Hymn to the Nativity," but it had not yet won him fame, or even general notice. His poem on Shakespeare was the first published. It appeared in the Folio Shakespeare of 1632.

In the lovely seclusion of his country home he read, it is said, all the Greek and Latin authors, and also wrote some of his most charming poems. He was, like his father, an accomplished musician, and counted amongst his friends the great lutanist of the time, Henry Lawes, who taught music in the family of the Earl of Bridgewater. In the year 1634, Lord Bridgewater was President of Wales, and held his court at Ludlow Castle, in Shropshire. On a journey thither to join their father, his two sons, Lord Brackley, and Mr. Egerton and his daughter, Lady Alice Egerton, were benighted in Haywood Forest, in Herefordshire, and the young lady for a short time was lost. At Lawes's request, Milton commemorated the incident in the exquisite "Mask of Comus," which was "presented" before the Earl at Ludlow; his children and Lawes being the chief actors. We cannot refrain from adding that the "Lady" afterwards married the Earl of Carbury, and at his seat, "Golden Grove," in Carmarthenshire, sheltered and protected Milton's great contemporary, Jeremy Taylor, during the usurpation of Cromwell. The eloquent divine preached her funeral sermon, in which her character is admirably drawn. Her sister, Lady Mary, was married to the celebrated Lord Herbert of Chisbury.

The "Comus" had been preceded by the "Arcades," which the youthful poet wrote for the family of his fair neighbour the Dowager Countess of Derby, who lived near Uxbridge, and at whose house he frequently visited. Here, probably, also he had made the acquaintance of the Bridgewater family, for Lord Bridgewater had married a daughter of Lady Derby's. This lady was a very accomplished woman, and of kin to Spenser the poet.

During his five years' residence in his father's house, Milton

## Introductory Memoir

occasionally visited London, to buy books, enjoy the society of his friends, and to visit the theatres, in which he greatly delighted at this period of his life—that brilliant and gifted youth which we so reluctantly quit for his harder and sterner manhood.

In 1637 his friend Edward King was lost in the Irish Sea, and Milton honoured his memory by writing "Lycidas" as a monody on his death.

It is not possible to fix the date of the composition of the "Allegro" or the "Penseroso," but there is every reason to believe that those enchanting pictures of rural life, of mirth and melancholy, were written at Horton.

He was beginning to grow weary of the country, and had thoughts of taking chambers in one of the Inns of Court, when his mother died; and his father shortly afterwards was persuaded to let him travel on the Continent. Before his departure, he received from the celebrated Sir Henry Wotton the wise instruction to keep "*i pensieri stretti ed il viso sciolto*," *i.e.* "close thoughts and a frank countenance."

In 1638 he quitted England, and went first to Paris. Here Lord Scudamore, the English ambassador, gave him an introduction to Grotius, the learned ambassador of the singular and (also) learned Christina, Queen of Sweden. From Paris, after a short stay, Milton proceeded to Italy, then the classic land of Europe, to which his thoughts and affections had continually travelled. There Tasso had quite recently charmed the world with his "*Gerusalemme Liberata*"; Ariosto was still a modern poet, and the renown of Dante and Petrarch, now two centuries old, was at its height. In the recent reigns of Elizabeth and James, the intercourse between Italy and England had been frequent. "To have swum in a gondola" was, as Shakespeare tells us, the boast of travelled youths. The fame of the arts and science of "*le belle contade*" was world-spread. No marvel that Milton eagerly mastered the language and hurried to its shores.

The Italians were deeply interested in all literature, and far better able to appreciate the gifted Englishman than the generality of his less cultivated countrymen;—amongst whom, as Johnson says, with respect to the sale of "*Paradise Lost*," "to read was not then a general amusement; neither traders, nor often gentlemen, thought themselves disgraced by ignorance: the women had not then aspired to literature, . . . and of that middle race of students who read for pleasure or accomplishment, the number was comparatively small."

To pass from the England of 1638 to the Italy of that period must have been like going from darkness to light.

## Introductory Memoir

Milton went from Nice to Genoa, thence to Leghorn and Pisa, and proceeded to Florence, where he remained two months. Sir Henry Wotton (whose heart had been won by the "Comus") had given the poet introductory letters to the chief literary men of the city, and Milton met with a most enthusiastic reception.

He formed friendships with the celebrated Carlo Dati, Frescobaldi, and Antonio Malatesta, and during his residence there he visited the recently liberated prisoner of the Inquisition—Galileo. It is thought probable that Grotius had urged Milton to see the great astronomer, for in the very month in which the young English poet was presented to him, he wrote thus to Vossius of Galileo:—"This old man, to whom the universe is so largely indebted, worn out with maladies, and still more with anguish of mind, gives us little reason to hope that his life can be long. Common prudence, therefore, suggests to us to make the most of the time while we can yet avail ourselves of such an instructor."

Milton next paid a short visit to Sienna, then proceeded to Rome, where he remained two months. Holstenius, a savant of European renown (who had known Milton when he (Holstenius) was at Oxford) was then Librarian to the Vatican. He introduced the young Englishman to Cardinal Barberini, afterwards Pope Urban VIII., who invited him to a concert, received him at the doors, and presented him, in the most flattering terms, to the brilliant assembly. Amongst them Milton's eyes lighted on a woman, beautiful, with the rare and intellectual loveliness of a Grecian muse: she was Leonora Baroni—the first singer in the world. Her mother as beautiful and nearly as fine a singer as herself, sat near her with her lute. The rapture of the poet may be imagined when he heard the fair wonder sing to her mother's accompaniment. He celebrated her genius in three fine Latin epigrams. Whether she was the "Donna" of his Italian sonnets we cannot tell; her name recalled the Leonora of Tasso; her talent was just that which Milton best loved.

From Rome Milton travelled to Naples, in company with a hermit, who must have been able to appreciate the poet, as, on their arrival at Naples, he introduced him to Manso, Marquis of Villa, the friend, patron, and biographer of Tasso. Manso was delighted with his new acquaintance, and addressed to him a distich, with the same play on words with which Gregory the Great inaugurated his plan for the conversion of Britain—

*"Ut mens, forma, decor, facies, mos, si pietas sic  
Non Anglus, verum hercle Angelus ipse fores."*



# Introductory Memoir

Thus translated by Cowper—

"The Neapolitan, John Baptist Manso, Marquis of Villa, to the Englishman,  
JOHN MILTON.

"What features, form, mien, manners, with a mind,  
Oh, how intelligent! and how refined!  
Were but thy piety from fault as free,  
Thou wouldst no *Angle*, but an angel be."

Milton, in return, addressed to the Marquis a Latin poem, which must have greatly impressed the learned Italians.

Milton purposed visiting Sicily and Greece, but letters from home told him how England was shaken to its centre by the differences between the King, Charles I., and his Parliament, and the young man thought that duty and patriotism alike forbade his absence from his native land in her hour of sore trial. Therefore he bent his steps homeward, not, however, hurrying his journey. Again he visited Rome, though warned of plots formed by the Jesuits against him on account of the openness with which he had discussed religious topics. At Naples, Manso had told him that his religion alone precluded him from great distinction. He felt sure that his nationality protected him from personal danger, and remained again two months in Rome. From thence he went to Florence, to Lucca, and to Venice. From the latter city he sent his father a collection of music and books, and proceeded to Geneva, then the seat of Puritanism, and the spot from whence republican doctrines were promulgated over Europe. Here he found a friend in Charles Diodati's uncle, John (or Giovanni), and in Frederick Spanheim, who was also a learned Professor of Divinity. From Geneva he returned to France, and thence home, having been absent from England a year and three months.

The news of the death of his dear friend, Charles Diodati, met him on his return; he commemorated the loss in the "Epitaphium Damonis."

The youth of Milton closes with this grief. He was now a man of thirty-one years of age, and it behoved him to take up the work of life in earnest. He had drawn largely on the means of his generous father, and he was not the only child—he had a brother Christopher, a lawyer; his sister Anne was well married before he went to Cambridge. She had recently been widowed and married a second time. Milton at once decided on his own course. He resolved to take pupils, and the first he received were his sister's sons by her first husband—John and Edward Philips. He took a lodging at the house of a tailor named Russell, in St. Bride's Churchyard, and began the

## Introductory Memoir

prosaic task of teaching; but the locality was unendurable to him, and he removed into a pleasant house, standing in a garden, at the end of a passage leading out of Aldersgate Street. Here he received more private pupils to board and teach.

And now we come to the reverse of the brilliant picture of his youth. For twenty years the poet sang no more. All that long period was occupied in school duties, political controversy, and household troubles. In considering this period of Milton's life, when he used his great abilities (obscured in prose) against his sovereign and the National Church, we must pause for a moment to consider the age in which he had been born and brought up.

When his infant eyes unclosed in Bread Street, James I. had been five years king of Britain. The glorious reign of Elizabeth, with its host of great Statesmen, Warriors, Poets, and Discoverers, was succeeded by that of a contemptible and pedantic sovereign, whose favouritism led to crimes of the darkest dye. Our readers will find in the vivid pages of Mr. Hepworth Dixon's *Her Majesty's Tower*, a picture of corruption disgraceful to any country. The murder of Sir Thomas Overbury must have been the talk of Milton's nursery. He must have heard continually the extravagances and wickedness of the favourite Villiers made the theme of animadversion; the death of Sir Walter Raleigh must have been to him a boyish horror; all England lamented that murder; and the persecution of his tutor, and the bigotry of his grandfather, which had robbed him of a fair heritage, must have all conspired to sway him towards the side of the Puritans.

True, his "gentle" instincts, his fine taste and early associations, and the better character of Charles I., for a time held the balance, but now he had to choose his side: no one at that time could remain neutral, and he threw in his lot with the Parliament.

In 1641, he published a *Treatise of Reformation*, in two books, against the established Church, being anxious to help the Puritans, who were, he said, "inferior to the prelates in learning."

Hall, the Bishop of Norwich (with whose quaint *Meditations* our readers are probably acquainted), had published a *Humble Remonstrance in defence of Episcopacy*, to which five ministers, the initial letters of whose names made the celebrated word Smectymnuus,<sup>1</sup> replied. "Of this answer a confutation was attempted," says Johnson, "by the learned Usher." To this

<sup>1</sup> They were, Stephen Marshall, Edmund Calamy, Thomas Young (Milton's tutor ?), Matthew Newcomen, and William Spurstow.

## Introductory Memoir

confutation Milton (seeing that the Archbishop had the best of the argument) replied.

His next work was *The Reason of Church Government urged against Prelacy*.

"In this book," says Johnson, "he discovers, not with ostentatious exultation, but with calm confidence, his high opinion of his own powers; and promises to undertake something, he yet knows not what, that may be of use and honour to his country." "This," says he (Milton), "is not to be attained but by devout prayer to that Eternal Spirit that can enrich with all utterance and knowledge, and sends out His Seraphim with the hallowed fire of His altar to touch and purify the lips of whom He pleases. To this must be added industrious and select reading, steady observation, and insight into all seemly arts and affairs; till which in some measure be compassed, I refuse not to sustain this expectation."

"From a promise like this, at once fervid, pious, and rational," says Johnson, "might be expected the 'Paradise Lost.'"<sup>1</sup>

Milton's controversial writings did not interrupt his school duties. He did everything diligently and with earnestness. His youth had been pure and moral; his manhood was almost ascetic; he lived sparingly, drank water, and set his pupils an example of hard study. Now and then he took a day's recreation with some gay friends of Gray's Inn, and displayed his beautiful and well-dressed person on the fashionable promenades of Gray's Inn Gardens and Cheyne Walk, Chelsea.

After Reading was taken by the king's forces, Milton's beloved father came to live with him, and in 1643, at Whitsuntide, he brought home a fair young bride, whom he had wooed and won from the adverse party of the Cavaliers.

Mary Powel was the daughter of a country gentleman, a justice of the peace for Oxfordshire, and had been used, as Philips, her husband's nephew, tells us, "to a great house, much company," and the fun and joviality of the ranting Royalists. She was beautiful, but seems to have been a spoilt child, and not to have possessed the intellect her husband needed in a companion;—this is inferred from his own words when he speaks of a "mute and spiritless mate."

It is only just, also, to give a glance at Mary Powel's side of the question. She found herself, when barely seventeen, suddenly transplanted from a lively and liberal home to a house where profound stillness reigned, save when it was broken by the crying of punished schoolboys. No visitors came to the house; or if they came, they were of the solemn Puritans, whom she had been brought up to laugh at as rogues and hypocrites.

<sup>1</sup> Johnson's *Lives of the Poets*, vol. i. p. 26.

## Introductory Memoir

Her gay Cavalier songs were exchanged for solemn hymns ; her feasting for hard fare ; her husband, occupied by his pupils and his controversy, could have given her but a small portion of his time ; there was no sympathy round her,—in her passionate loyalty, her country tastes and habits. Her parents asked if she might spend part of the summer with them, and, her husband assenting, she left him. He pursued his studies, occasionally visiting the accomplished Lady Margaret Leigh, but at Michaelmas he wrote to Mary to summon her home. He received no answer ; he wrote again and again with the same result. At last, knowing how uncertain was the arrival of letters in the now distracted country, he despatched a messenger for Mistress Milton. The man was sent back with contempt. Milton, excessively angry, resolved to divorce his disobedient wife, and published, as a preliminary justification of his conduct, a treatise on *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*, which was followed by *The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce*, and his *Tetrachordon*.

The clergy, then holding their famous assembly at Westminster, were greatly scandalised by these productions, and had the writer brought before the House of Lords. But that House had matter of more import to engage it than the dreams (as they doubtless thought) of a visionary Puritan, and the case was dismissed. But Milton never forgave his former friends, the Presbyterians, for their share in this prosecution. He proceeded to put his theory in practice by wooing Miss Davis, the daughter of Dr. Davis, who, however, had scruples on the legality and morality of such a marriage. Whilst she still hesitated, a circumstance decided the doubt for her. As Milton was one day at the house of a relative of the name of Blackborough, in St. Martin's Lane, his wife rushed from an adjoining room and threw herself at his feet, imploring his forgiveness. He resisted her entreaties for a time, but yielded at length, and received her to his heart and home once more. Their reunion proved happier than might have been expected. Baby hands came to draw them together, and Mary Milton lived to give birth to a son and three daughters, and then died at the age of twenty-six. But long before that period the generous poet had given shelter in his house to all her family, when the Republican party had risen to power. Subsequently he arranged their affairs for them. The next year Milton published his *Areopagitica*, a speech for the liberty of unlicensed printing, his best prose work.

The new Council of State, in which were Bradshaw and Sir Harry Vane, chose Milton as their Latin Secretary, and employed him to write against the celebrated book called *Icon*

## Introductory Memoir

*Basilike*, then supposed to have been written by the unhappy Charles I., and which was turning the hearts of the people back to him. Milton wrote against it the *Iconoclastes*. But we must not omit to mention the much more interesting fact that in 1645 his Latin and English poems were published. It is with regret we add that, after the execution of the king, Milton wrote a treatise to justify it to the Presbyterians, and to "compose the minds of the people." He was right, however, in declaring that the Presbyterians had, in fact, brought about the king's death themselves. He was now suffering from *gutta serena*, which threatened him with loss of sight; but on being called on by the Parliament in 1651 to answer the celebrated Salmasius's *Defensio Regia pro Carolo I.*, written at the request of Charles II. (then an exile at The Hague), he undertook the task, and pursued it steadily, knowing all the time that its cost would be his sight. But he believed it to be his duty, and from that he never flinched. He was rewarded for it with a present of a thousand pounds.

Cromwell now assumed the Protectorate, but Milton, who appears to have had at that time a sincere admiration for Oliver, and who must have seen that Government, in such a state of anarchy, could not be carried on without him, retained the Latin Secretaryship, assisted towards the close of the Protectorate by the Puritan poet, Andrew Marvel.

It would be a weary task to chronicle all the controversial writings of Milton during the ensuing years; we will rather return to his domestic history. Four years after the death of Mary Powel, he married again. His second wife appears to have won his whole affections. Her name was Katherine Woodcock, the daughter of Captain Woodcock of Hackney. But their happiness continued only a year: she died in giving birth to a child, that survived only a few weeks, and Milton deplored her loss in a pathetic sonnet, something resembling the famous one of Petrarch to his dead Laura.

Milton now set himself to three great works: preparing a Latin Dictionary, writing a History of England, and commencing his Epic. If an author of our own day had not shown us how possible research and study is even to the blind, we might marvel at such undertakings being attempted by a sightless man, but we think of Prescott, and marvel no longer.

The Dictionary—probably the most difficult undertaking for him—was never finished; the History goes only to the Norman Conquest; the Epic is the immortal "Paradise Lost." He had already prepared the same subject for a drama or mystery, which was to begin with Satan's address to the Sun, but his increasing Puritanism, and the remembrance of his having re-

## Introductory Memoir

proached the dead king in the *Iconoclastes*, for making a companion of the works of Shakspeare, probably caused him to turn the singular drama into an epic poem.

The death of Oliver Cromwell led to the Restoration, and Milton, who had retired from the service of the Parliament on a pension for life, was in considerable danger from his writings against the Royal cause, for, just before the Restoration, he had written a work entitled, *The ready and easy way to establish a Free Commonwealth, and the excellence thereof, compared with the inconvenience and dangers of readmitting Kingship in this Nation*. While all England held festival on the return of her exiled sovereign, the great poet was therefore obliged to seek safety in concealment; and it is said that his enemies were deceived by a report of his death and a mock funeral. Whether there is truth in this story cannot now be ascertained: but the Act of Oblivion, passed August 19, enabled him again to appear openly. A prosecution was commenced against him for his defence of the execution of the king, but it fell to the ground; Charles was not vindictive, and we perhaps owe to his easiness of temper the greatest poem in our language,—moreover, Milton had a friend at court in Sir William Davenant.

Milton retired to Jewin Street, near Aldersgate Street, and though now poor and blind, gained a third wife, who survived him—Elizabeth Minshull, the daughter of a Cheshire gentleman. They lived happily, it is believed, but Philips, who remembered Mary Powel, says that the stepmother “oppressed her (Mary’s) children in Milton’s lifetime, and cheated them at his death.”

In 1661, Milton published a school book, *Accidence commenced Grammar*, to make grammar easy to children. About this time Ellwood, the Quaker, was recommended to him as a reader; and he attended the poet every afternoon, except on Sundays. Milton, who hated to hear Latin read with the English accent, taught him to pronounce it in Italian, and his ear was so quick, that if the young Quaker did not understand a passage (Ellwood relates this fact), Milton would find it out by the want of expression or emphasis, and would make him pause, that he might explain it to him.

Milton now removed to a house in Artillery Walk, leading to Bunhill Fields, and set seriously to work at the “*Paradise Lost*,” the subject of which he says he had been “long choosing and begun late.”

But though Milton had passed out of the field of politics and statecraft, his genius still brought him visitors of distinction, both from the Continent and of his own countrymen.

Richardson describes him as sitting before his door in warm sultry weather, to enjoy the fresh air, dressed in a grey coat of

## Introductory Memoir

coarse cloth ; and there, as well as in his own rooms, he received his guests. It is supposed that "Samson Agonistes" was written about this time.

In 1665, the Plague broke out in London, and Ellwood, who was living in the family of an opulent Quaker at Chalfont, in Bucks, advised his friend to quit the city. Milton desired him to find his family a refuge in his neighbourhood, and it was at the temporary home thus selected that he finished the "Paradise Lost." He gave the manuscript to Ellwood to read. The young Quaker appreciated it, but added pleasantly, "Thou hast said much here of 'Paradise Lost,' but what hast thou to say of 'Paradise Found'?" This hint, Milton afterwards told his friend, gave birth to the idea of "Paradise Regained."

On his return to London, Milton, in 1667, sold the copyright of his great poem to a bookseller, called Samuel Symmons, for £5 in hand ; £5 more when 1,300 copies were sold, and the same sum on the publication of the second and third editions. The number of each edition was limited to 1,300 copies. Of this agreement, Milton lived to receive £15 ; his widow sold her claims for future editions for £8.

But though Milton gained but little pecuniary benefit from his masterpiece, it won him "golden opinions" from the best writers of the age,—Dryden, Marvel, and Denham. Yet the poem was never thoroughly brought before the public till after the Revolution, when Addison, by his elegant criticism in the *Spectator*, discovered to the nation the treasure so long hidden from them ; which they were then far better able to value than in the troubled days when it first issued from the press.

In 1671, Milton published "Samson Agonistes" and "Paradise Regained." He preferred the latter poem to the "Paradise Lost," it is said.

We have a record of how the blind poet spent his day. He rose at four in summer and five in winter, and began each day by hearing a chapter in the Hebrew Bible ; the man who read then left him to meditation, and returning at seven, read or wrote for him till twelve. He then allowed himself an hour for exercise, generally walking, but sometimes he had recourse to a swing. After his early and temperate dinner, he was wont to play for a time on the organ or violoncello ; he had a fine voice, and sang well.

It is said that his domestic relations were not happy. Philips gives some clue to the home disturbances by his mention of the stepmother's oppression of his two daughters, who were employed to read to him in languages they did not comprehend. When, however, the poet discovered how great this infliction was on his children, he released them from their detested task,

## Introductory Memoir

and sent them to learn embroidery in gold and silver, so that they should be able to support themselves by a trade if required to do so. The youngest, Deborah, spoke with great affection of him after his death.

In July, 1674, he felt so ill that he sent for his brother Christopher, a benchman of the Inner Temple, to explain his last wishes to him.

"Brother," said he, "the portion due to me from Mr. Powel, my first wife's father, I leave to the unkind children I had by her. But I have received no part of it; and my will and meaning is that they shall have no other benefit of my estate than the said portion, and what I have besides done for them; they having been very undutiful to me. And all the residue of my estate I leave to the disposal of Elizabeth, my loving wife."<sup>1</sup> Such was the brief testament of the great poet. He sold his books before his death, and left £1,500 to his widow. The daughters received from their stepmother £100 each.

On the 15th November, 1674, on Sunday night, quietly and silently, John Milton passed away from earth. He was buried in the Church of St. Giles, Cripplegate, attended by a numerous concourse of friends.

Of his family, Anne, the eldest daughter, who was deformed, married a master-builder, and died in child-birth. Mary died single. Deborah married Abraham Clark, a weaver in Spitalfields, and died in August, 1727. She had seven children, but all died childless except Caleb and Elizabeth. The latter married Thomas Foster, a weaver in Spitalfields, and had seven children, who all died. For this descendant's benefit "Comus" was performed at Drury Lane, in 1750, with a prologue by Dr. Johnson, who tells us that this was the only pecuniary advantage that Milton's family received for his great work. Caleb went to India, and had two sons; it is said that the last descendant of Milton died a parish clerk at Calcutta, but we know of no authority for the assertion beyond an East Indian rumour.

Milton's brother took the opposite side in the politics of the time, and when the Republican Party was in the ascendant, his brother's influence enabled him to live quietly. He supported himself so honourably by chamber practice, that, soon after the accession of James II., he was knighted and made a judge, but retired shortly afterwards into private life, on account of bad health. He was thus saved from the difficulties which beset the path of conscientious judges when Jeffreys was head of the law. Both the nephews of Milton became authors: one his biographer.

The judgment of two centuries and of all Europe has decided

<sup>1</sup> *Literary Miscellany*, 1812.



## Introductory Memoir

as to the merits of Milton. A word more on the subject of his poems is therefore superfluous. Of his prose, few general readers know much. His controversial writings were chiefly in Latin, and of those in English many would be objectionable and tedious in the present day ; nevertheless, he wrote English prose with as masterly a pen as he wrote poetry, and when the subject was worthy of his genius, his style was as noble as in the "Paradise Lost."

At the close of two hundred years, Milton occupies a niche of fame beside Shakspeare and the great poets of antiquity ; his faults, his mistakes, and his controversial writings buried in a merciful oblivion, while the good he did

"Lives after him,"

rejoicing, for all times, the nation which holds as one of its claims to glory the name of John Milton.

A memorial window to Milton was placed in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster, February 18, 1888, by Mr. George Childs of Philadelphia. It is very beautiful ; four panels are on subjects from the poet's life. The two upper represent him dictating "Paradise Lost" to his daughters. The two below are the boy Milton at St. Paul's School, and Milton visiting Galileo. Eight other panels are of scenes in "Paradise Lost" and "Paradise Regained."—At the base of the window is inscribed—

"To the glory of God and in memory of the immortal poet John Milton, whose wife and child<sup>1</sup> lie buried here, this window is dedicated by George W. Childs of Philadelphia, 1888.

'The New World honours him whose lofty plea  
For England's freedom made her own more sure ;  
Whose song, immortal as its theme, shall be  
Their common freehold while both worlds endure.'

J. G. WHITTIER."

---

<sup>1</sup> Katherine Woodcock and her infant.

# Early Poems



ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT,<sup>1</sup> DYING  
OF A COUGH.

1625.

## I.

O FAIREST flower, no sooner blown but blasted,  
Soft silken primrose fading timelessly,  
Summer's chief honour, if thou hadst out-lasting  
Bleak Winter's force that made thy blossom dry ;  
For he being amorous on that lovely dye  
That did thy cheek envermeil, thought to kiss,  
But killed, alas ! and then bewailed his fatal bliss.

## II.

For since grim Aquilo<sup>2</sup> his charioteer  
By boisterous rape the Athenian damsel<sup>3</sup> got,  
He thought it touched his deity full near,  
If likewise he some fair one wedded not,  
Thereby to wipe away the infamous blot  
Of long-uncoupled bed, and childless eld,  
Which 'mongst the wanton Gods a foul reproach  
was held.

<sup>1</sup> The Poet's infant niece, daughter of his sister, Mrs. Philips.

<sup>2</sup> Boreas, or the North Wind.

<sup>3</sup> Orithyia.—OVID, *Metam.* 6.

## Early Poems

### III.

So mounting up in icy-pearlèd car,  
Through middle empire of the freezing air  
He wandered long, till thee he spied from far ;  
There ended was his quest, there ceased his care.  
Down he descended from his snow-soft chair,  
But all unwares with his cold-kind embrace  
Unhoused thy virgin soul from her fair biding place.

### IV.

Yet art thou not inglorious in thy fate ;  
For so Apollo, with unweeting hand,  
Whilom did slay his dearly-lovèd mate,  
Young Hyacinth,<sup>1</sup> born on Eurotas' strand,  
Young Hyacinth, the pride of Spartan land :  
But then transformed him to a purple flower :  
Alack, that so to change thee Winter had no power !

### V.

Yet can I not persuade me thou art dead,  
Or that thy corse corrupts in earth's dark womb,  
Or that thy beauties lie in wormy bed,  
Hid from the world in a low delvèd tomb ;  
Could Heaven for pity thee so strictly doom ?  
Oh no ! for something in thy face did shine  
Above mortality, that showed thou wast divine.

### VI.

Resolve me then, oh Soul most surely blest,  
(If so it be that thou these complaints dost hear,)  
Tell me, bright Spirit, where'er thou hoverest,  
Whether above that high first-moving sphere,  
Or in th' Elysian fields, (if such there were,)  
Oh say me true, if thou wert mortal wight,  
And why from us so quickly thou didst take thy flight.

<sup>1</sup> A prince of Sparta, said to have been accidentally slain by Apollo.  
Festivals to his honour were held annually by the Greeks at Amyclæ,  
a city of Laconia.

## Early Poems

### VII.

Wert thou some star which from the ruined roof  
Of shaked Olynipus by mischance didst fall ;  
Which careful Jove in nature's true behoof  
Took up, and in fit place did reinstall ?  
Or did of late earth's sons besiege the wall  
Of sheeny Heaven, and thou some Goddess fled  
Amongst us here below to hide thy nectared head ?

### VIII.

Or wert thou that just Maid, who once before  
Forsook the hated earth, O tell me sooth,  
And camest again to visit us once more ?  
Or wert thou that sweet-smiling youth ?  
Or that crowned matron sage white-robed Truth ?  
Or any other of that heavenly brood  
Let down in cloudy throne to do the world some good ?

### IX.

Or wert thou of the golden-winged host,  
Who having clad thyself in human weed,  
To earth from thy prefixed seat didst post,  
And after short abode fly back with speed,  
As if to show what creatures heaven doth breed,  
Thereby to set the hearts of men on fire  
To scorn the sordid world and unto heav'n aspire ?

### X.

But oh, why didst thou not stay here below  
To bless us with thy heav'n-loved innocence,  
To slake His wrath whom sin hath made our foe,  
To turn swift-rushing black Perdition hence,  
Or drive away the slaughtering Pestilence,  
To stand 'twixt us and our deserved smart ?  
But thou canst best perform that office where thou art.

# Early Poems

XI.

Then thou, the Mother of so sweet a Child,  
Her false imagined loss cease to lament,  
And wisely learn to curb thy sorrows wild ;  
Think what a present thou to God hast sent,  
And render Him with patience what He lent ;  
    'This if thou do, He will an offspring give  
That till the world's last end shall make thy name to live.



ANNO ÆTATIS 19.

AT A VACATION EXERCISE IN THE COLLEGE.  
1627.

PART LATIN, PART ENGLISH.

The Latin speeches ended, the English thus began :—

HAIL, native Language, that by sinews weak  
Didst move my first endeavouring tongue to speak,  
And madest imperfect words with childish trips,  
Half unpronounced, slide through my infant lips,  
Driving dumb silence from the portal door,  
Where he had mutely sat two years before :  
Here I salute thee, and thy pardon ask,  
That now I use thee in my latter task :  
Small loss it is that hence can come unto thee,  
I know my tongue but little grace can do thee :  
Thou need'st not be ambitious to be first,  
Believe me I have thither packed the worst ;  
And, if it happen as I did forecast,  
The daintiest dishes shall be served up last.  
I pray thee then deny me not thy aid  
For this same small neglect that I have made :  
But haste thee straight to do me once a pleasure,  
And from thy wardrobe bring thy chiefest treasure,

## Early Poems

Not those new-fangled toys, and trimming slight<sup>1</sup>  
Which takes our late fantastics with delight,  
But cull those richest robes, and gay'st attire  
Which deepest spirits, and choicest wits desire :  
I have some naked thoughts that rove about,  
And loudly knock to have their passage out ;  
And weary of their place do only stay  
Till thou hast decked them in thy best array ;  
That so they may without suspect or fears  
Fly swiftly to this fair assembly's ears.  
Yet I had rather, if I were to choose,  
Thy service in some graver subject use,  
Such as may make thee search thy coffers round,  
Before thou clothe my fancy in fit sound :  
Such where the deep transported mind may soar  
Above the wheeling poles, and at Heav'n's door  
Look in, and see each blissful Deity  
How he before the thunderous throne doth lie,  
List'ning to what unshorn Apollo sings  
To the touch of golden wires, while Hebe brings  
Immortal nectar to her kingly sire :  
Then passing through the spheres of watchful fire,  
And misty regions of wide air next under,  
And hills of snow, and lofts of piled thunder,  
May tell at length how green-eyed Neptune raves,  
In Heav'n's defiance mustering all his waves ;  
Then sing of secret things that came to pass  
When beldam Nature in her cradle was ;  
And last of kings and queens and heroes old,  
Such as the wise Demodocus<sup>2</sup> once told,  
In solemn songs at king Alcinous' feast,  
While sad Ulysses' soul, and all the rest,  
Are held with his melodious harmony,  
In willing chains and sweet captivity.  
But fie, my wand'ring Muse, how thou dost stray !  
Expectance calls thee now another way,

<sup>1</sup> Milton alludes to the affected phraseology of the period, called *Euphuism*, which originated in Lily's *Euphuës*, and his *England*, a book intended to refine the English language. Scott has given us a lively picture of this affected jargon in his Sir Pierce Shafton, in the *Monastery*.

<sup>2</sup> A Greek bard. See *Odyssey*, Book VIII.

## Early Poems

Thou know'st it must be now thy only bent  
To keep in compass of thy predicament :  
'Then quick about thy purposed business come,  
'That to the next I may resign my room.

Then Ens<sup>1</sup> is represented as father of the Predicaments<sup>2</sup> his ten sons, whereof the eldest stood for Substance with his canons, which Ens, thus speaking, explain :—

Good luck befriend thee, Son ; for at thy birth  
The fairy ladies danced upon the hearth ;  
Thy drowsy nurse hath sworn she did them spy  
Come tripping to the room where thou didst lie,  
And sweetly singing round about thy bed  
Strow all their blessings on thy sleeping head.  
She heard them give thee this, that thou shouldst still  
From eyes of mortals walk invisible :  
Yet there is something that doth force my fear,  
For once it was my dismal hap to hear  
A Sibyl old, bow-bent with crooked age,  
That far events full wisely could presage,  
And in time's long and dark prospective glass  
Foresaw what future days should bring to pass ;  
"Your son," said she " (nor can you it prevent),  
Shall subject be to many an Accident."<sup>3</sup>  
O'er all his brethren he shall reign as king,  
Yet every one shall make him underling,  
And those that cannot live from him asunder  
Ungratefully shall strive to keep him under,  
In worth and excellence he shall out-go them,  
Yet being above them, he shall be below them ;  
From others he shall stand in need of nothing,  
Yet on his brothers shall depend for clothing.  
To find a foe it shall not be his hap,  
And peace shall lull him in her flow'ry lap ;

<sup>1</sup> Ens, a term in metaphysics signifying entity, being, existence. In this mask it is personified, as are also Substance, Quantity, Quality, and Relation. "This affectation," says Warton, "will appear more excusable in Milton, if we recollect that everything in the Masks of this age appeared in a bodily shape."

<sup>2</sup> A Predicament is a category in logic ; that is, a series of all the predicates or attributes contained under a genus. The logic of Aristotle comprised ten categories : Substance, Quantity, Quality, Relation, Action, Passion, Time, Place, Situation, and Habit. These were personified in the Mask.

<sup>3</sup> A pun on the logical accidents.—WARTON.

## Early Poems

Yet shall he live in strife, and at his door  
Devouring war shall never cease to roar ;  
Yea it shall be his natural property  
To harbour those that are at enmity."  
What pow'r, what force, what mighty spell, if not  
Your learnèd hands, can loose this Gordian knot ?

The next Quantity and Quality spake in prose ; then Relation was called  
by his name.

RIVERS, arise ; whether thou be the son  
Of utmost Tweed, or Ouse, or gulphy Don,  
Or Trent, who like some earth-born giant spreads  
His thirty arms<sup>1</sup> along the indented meads,  
Or sullen Mole that runneth underneath,<sup>2</sup>  
Or Severn swift, guilty of maiden's death,<sup>3</sup>  
Or rocky Avon, or of sedgy Lee,  
Or coaly Tine, or ancient hallowed Dee,  
Or Humber loud that keeps the Scythian's name,<sup>4</sup>  
Or Medway smooth, or royal towered Thame.

The rest was prose.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is said that there were thirty sorts of fish in this river, and thirty religious houses on its banks.

<sup>2</sup> At Mickleham, near Dorking, the river Mole, in hot summers, sinks through its sands, and finds a subterranean channel. In winter, and when heavy rains fall, it keeps its usual bed.

<sup>3</sup> Sabrina. See "Comus," verse 827.

<sup>4</sup> Humber was a Scythian king, said to have been drowned in this river by Lochrine, three hundred years before the Romans landed in Britain.





# Early Poems

## ODE ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY.

1629.

### I.

THIS is the month, and this the happy morn,  
Wherein the Son of heaven's eternal king,  
Of wedded Maid, and Virgin Mother born,  
Our great redemption from above did bring;  
For so the holy sages<sup>1</sup> once did sing,  
That He our deadly forfeit should release,  
And with His Father work us a perpetual peace.

### II.

That glorious form, that light unsufferable,  
And that far-beaming blaze of majesty,  
Wherewith He wont at heaven's high council-table  
To sit the midst of Trinal Unity,  
He laid aside; and here with us to be,  
Forsook the courts of everlasting day,  
And chose with us a darksome house of mortal clay.

### III.

Say, heav'nly Muse, shall not thy sacred vein  
Afford a present to the Infant God?  
Hast thou no verse, no hymn, or solemn strain,  
To welcome Him to this His new abode,  
Now while the heav'n by the sun's team untrod,  
Hath took no print of the approaching light,  
And all the spangled host keep watch in squadrons  
bright?

<sup>1</sup> The Prophets.

# Odes

## IV.

See how from far upon the eastern road  
The star-led wizards<sup>1</sup> haste with odours sweet :  
O run prevent them with thy humble ode,  
And lay it lowly at His blessèd feet ;  
Have thou the honour first thy Lord to greet,  
And join thy voice unto the Angel-quire,  
From out His secret altar touched with hallowed fire.



## THE HYMN.

### I.

It was the winter wild,  
While the heaven-born child  
All meanly wrapt in the rude manger lies ;  
Nature in awe to Him  
Had doff't her gaudy trim,  
With her great Master so to sympathize :  
It was no season then for her  
To wanton with the sun, her lusty paramour.

### II.

Only with speeches fair  
She woes the gentle air  
To hide her guilty front with innocent snow,  
And on her naked shame,  
Pollute with sinful blame,  
The saintly veil of maiden white to throw,  
Confounded that her Maker's eyes  
Should look so near upon her foul deformities.

<sup>1</sup> The Magi. The word "wizard" meant simply wise men, and is so used in Sir John Cheke's translation of St. Matthew's Gospel.

## Early Poems

### III.

But He her fears to cease,  
Sent down the meek-eyed Peace ;

She, crowned with olive green, came softly sliding  
Down through the turning sphere  
His ready harbinger,

With turtle wing the amorous clouds dividing ;  
And waving wide her myrtle wand,  
She strikes a universal peace through sea and land.

### IV.

Nor war, or battle's sound  
Was heard the world around :

The idle spear and shield were high up hung,  
The hookèd chariot stood  
Unstained with hostile blood,

The trumpet spake not to the armèd throng,  
And kings sat still with awful eye,  
As if they surely knew their sov'reign Lord was by.

### V.

But peaceful was the night,  
Wherein the Prince of light

His reign of peace upon the earth began :  
The winds with wonder whist<sup>1</sup>  
Smoothly the waters kist,

Whispering new joys to the mild ocean,  
Who now hath quite forgot to rave,  
While birds of calm sit brooding on the charmèd wave.

### VI.

The stars with deep amaze  
Stand fixed in steadfast gaze,

Bending one way their precious influence,  
And will not take their flight,  
For all the morning light,

Or Lucifer that often warned them thence ;  
But in their glimmering orbs did glow,  
Until their Lord Himself bespake, and bid them go.

<sup>1</sup> Silent, or hushed.

# Odes

## VII.

And though the shady gloom  
Had given day her room,  
The sun himself withheld his wonted speed,  
And hid his head for shame,  
As his inferior flame  
The new enlightened world no more should need ;  
He saw a greater sun appear  
Than his bright throne, or burning axletree could bear.

## VIII.

The shepherds on the lawn,  
Or ere the point of dawn,  
Sat simply chatting in a rustic row ;  
Full little thought they then  
That the mighty Pan<sup>1</sup>  
Was kindly come to live with them below ;  
Perhaps their loves, or else their sheep,  
Was all that did their silly thoughts so busy keep.

## IX.

When such music sweet  
Their hearts and ears did greet,  
As never was by mortal finger strook,  
Divinely-warbled voice  
Answering the stringèd noise,  
As all their souls in blissful rapture took  
The air such pleasure loth to lose,  
With thousand echoes still prolongs each heavenly  
close.

## X.

Nature that heard such sound,  
Beneath the hollow round  
Of Cynthia's seat, the airy region thrilling,  
Now was almost won  
To think her part was done,  
And that her reign had here its last fulfilling ;  
She knew such harmony alone  
Could hold all heaven and earth in happier union.

<sup>1</sup> God of shepherds.

## Early Poems

### XI.

At last surrounds their sight  
A globe of circular light,  
That with long beams the shamefaced night  
arrayed ;  
The helmèd Cherubim,  
And sworded Seraphim,  
Are seen in glittering ranks with wings displayed,  
Harping in loud and solemn quire,  
With unexpressive notes to Heaven's new-born Heir.

### XII.

Such music (as 'tis said)  
Before was never made,  
But when of old the sons of morning sung,  
While the Creator great  
His constellations set,  
And the well-balanced world on hinges hung,  
And cast the dark foundations deep,  
And bid the welt'ring waves their oozy channel keep.

### XIII.

Ring out, ye crystal spheres,  
Once bless our human ears,  
If ye have power to touch our senses so ;  
And let your silver chime  
Move in melodious time,  
And let the base of heav'n's deep organ blow ;  
And with your ninefold harmony  
Make up full concert to the angelic symphony.

### XIV.

For if such holy song  
Inwrap our fancy long,  
Time will run back, and fetch the age of gold,  
And speckled Vanity  
Will sicken soon and die,  
And leprous Sin will melt from earthly mould ;  
And Hell itself will pass away,  
And leave her dolorous mansions to the peering day.

# Odes

## xv.

Yea Truth and Justice then  
Will down return to men,  
Orbed in a rainbow ; and, like glories wearing,  
Mercy will sit between,  
Throned in celestial sheen,  
With radiant feet the tissued clouds down steer  
ing :  
And heav'n, as at some festival,  
Will open wide the gates of her high palace hall.

## xvi.

But wisest Fate says No,  
This must not yet be so,  
The Babe yet lies in smiling infancy,  
That on the bitter cross  
Must redeem our loss ;  
So both Himself and us to glorify ;  
Yet first to those ychained in sleep,  
The wakeful trump of doom must thunder through the  
deep ;

## xvii.

With such a horrid clang  
As on mount Sinai rang,  
While the red fire, and smouldering clouds out  
brake :  
The agèd carth aghast,  
With terror of that blast,  
Shall from the surface to the centre shake ;  
When at the world's last session,  
The dreadful Judge in middle air shall spread His  
throne.

## xviii.

And then at last our bliss  
Full and perfect is,  
But now begins ; for from this happy day

## Early Poems

The old Dragon under ground  
In straiter limits bound,

Not half so far casts his usurpèd sway,  
And wroth to see his kingdom fail,  
Swinges the scaly horror of his folded tail.

### XIX.

The oracles are dumb,  
No voice or hideous hum

Runs through the archèd roof in words deceiving.  
Apollo from his shrine  
Can no more divine,

With hollow shriek the steep of Delphos leaving.  
No nightly trance, or breathèd spell  
Inspires the pale-eyed priest from the prophetic cell.

### XX.

The lonely mountains o'er,  
And the resounding shore,

A voice of weeping<sup>1</sup> heard and loud lament ;  
From haunted spring, and dale  
Edged with poplar pale,

The parting genius is with sighing sent ;  
With flow'r-inwoven tresses torn  
The Nymphs in twilight shade of tangled thickets  
mourn.

### XXI.

In consecrated earth,  
And on the holy hearth,

The Lars,<sup>2</sup> and Lemures<sup>3</sup> moan with midnight  
plaint ;

In urns, and altars round,  
A drear and dying sound

Affrights the Flamens at their service quaint ;  
And the chill marble seems to sweat,  
While each peculiar Pow'r foregoes his wonted seat.

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the voice said to have been heard by mariners at sea, crying, "The great Pan is dead." The story is told by Plutarch.

<sup>2</sup> Household gods,

<sup>3</sup> Ghosts.

# Odes

## XXII.

Peor and Baälim

Forsake their temples dim,

With that twice-battered God of Palestine ;<sup>1</sup>

And moonèd Ashtaroth,

Heav'n's queen and mother both,<sup>2</sup>

Now sits not girt with tapers' holy shine ;

The Lybic Hammon shrinks his horn,

In vain the Tyrian maids their wounded Thammuz<sup>3</sup>  
mourn,

## XXIII.

And sullen Moloch, fled,<sup>4</sup>

Hath left in shadows dread

His burning idol all of blackest hue ;

In vain with cymbals' ring

They call the grisly king,

In dismal dance about the furnace blue ;

The brutish gods of Nile as fast,

Isis and Orus, and the dog Anubis haste.

## XXIV.

Nor is Osiris<sup>5</sup> seen

In Memphian grove or green,

Trampling the unshowered grass with lowings loud :

Nor can he be at rest

Within his sacred chest,

Nought but profoundest hell can be his shroud ;

In vain with timbrelled anthems dark

The sable-stolèd sorcerers bear his worshipped ark.

## XXV.

He feels from Judah's land

The dreaded Infant's hand,

The rays of Bethlehem blind his dusky eyn ;

<sup>1</sup> Dagon.

<sup>2</sup> She was called "Regina cœli" and "Mater Deum."—NEWTON.

<sup>3</sup> Adonis. He was killed by a wild boar on Mount Lebanon, and was worshipped once a year by the Syrian women.

<sup>4</sup> The god of the Ammonites.

<sup>5</sup> The Egyptian ox-god.



## Early Poems

Nor all the Gods beside,  
Longer dare abide,  
Not Typhon huge ending in snaky twine :  
Our Babe, to show His Godhead true,  
Can in His swaddling bands control the damnèd  
crew.

### XXVI.

So, when the sun in bed,  
Curtained with cloudy red,  
Pillows his chin upon an orient wave,  
The flocking shadows pale  
Troop to the infernal jail,  
Each fettered ghost slips to his several grave ;  
And the yellow-skirted Fayses  
Fly after the night-steeds, leaving their moon-loved  
maze.

### XXVII.

But see the Virgin blest  
Hath laid her Babe to rest,  
Time is our tedious song should here have ending :  
Heaven's youngest teemèd star  
Hath fixed her polished car,  
Her sleeping Lord with handmaid lamp attending ;  
And all about the courtly stable  
Bright harnessed Angels sit in order serviceable.



## UPON THE CIRCUMCISION.

Ye flaming Pow'rs, and wingèd Warriors bright,  
That erst with music, and triumphant song,  
First heard by happy watchful shepherds' ear,  
So sweetly sung your joy the clouds along

## Odes

Through the soft silence of the list'ning night ;  
Now mourn, and if sad share with us to bear  
Your fiery essence can distil no tear,  
Burn in your sighs, and borrow  
Seas swept from our deep sorrow :  
He who with all heaven's heraldry whilere  
Entered the world, now bleeds to give us ease :  
Alas, how soon our sin  
Sore doth begin  
His infancy to seize !

O more exceeding love, or law more just !  
Just law indeed, but more exceeding love !  
For we by rightful doom remediless  
Were lost in death, till He that dwelt above  
High throned in secret bliss, for us frail dust  
Emptied His glory, ev'n to nakedness ;  
And that great covenant which we still transgress  
Entirely satisfied,  
And the full wrath beside  
Of vengeful justice bore for our excess,  
And seals obedience first, with wounding smart,  
This day, but O ere long,  
Huge pangs and strong  
Will pierce more near His heart.



### THE PASSION.

1629.

#### I.

EREWILE of music, and ethereal mirth,  
Wherewith the stage of air and earth did ring,  
And joyous news of heav'nly Infant's birth,  
My Muse with Angels did divide to sing ;  
But headlong joy is ever on the wing,  
In wintry solstice like the shortened light  
Soon swallowed up in dark and long out-living night.

# Early Poems

## II.

For now to sorrow must I tune my song,  
And set my harp to notes of saddest woe,  
Which on our dearest Lord did seize ere long,  
Dangers, and snares, and wrongs, and worse than so,  
Which He for us did freely undergo :

Most perfect Hero, tried in heaviest plight \*  
Of labours huge and hard, too hard for human wight :

## III.

He, Sov'reign Priest, stooping His regal head,  
That dropped with odorous oil down His fair eyes,  
Poor fleshly tabernacle enterèd,  
His starry front low-roofed beneath the skies :  
O what a mask was there, what a disguise !

Yet more ; the stroke of death He must abide,  
Then lies Him meekly down fast by His brethren's side

## IV.

These latest scenes confine my roving verse,  
To this horizon is my Phœbus bound ;  
His god-like acts, and His temptations fierce,  
And former sufferings other where are found ;  
Loud o'er the rest Cremona's trump<sup>1</sup> doth sound ;  
Me softer airs befit, and softer strings  
Of lute, or viol still, more apt for mournful things.

## V.

Befriend me, Night, best patroness of grief,  
Over the pole thy thickest mantle throw,  
And work my flattered fancy to belief  
That Heaven and Earth are coloured with my woe ;  
My sorrows are too dark for day to know :

The leaves should all be black whereon I write,  
And letters where my tears have washed a wannish  
white.

\* Hieronymus Vida's "Christiad," a fine Latin poem. Vida dwelt at Cremona.

# Odes

## VI.

See, see the chariot, and those rushing wheels,  
That whirled the Prophet up at Chebar flood ;<sup>1</sup>  
My spirit some transporting Cherub feels,  
To bear me where the tow'rs of Salem stood,  
Once glorious tow'rs, now sunk in guiltless blood :  
There doth my soul in holy vision sit  
In pensive trance, and anguish, and ecstatic fit.

## VII.

Mine eye hath found that sad sepulchral rock  
That was the casket of Heav'n's richest store,  
And here though grief my feeble hands up lock,  
Yet on the softened quarry would I score  
My plaining verse as lively as before ;  
For sure so well instructed are my tears,  
That they would fitly fall in ordered characters.

## VIII.

Or should I thence hurried on viewless wing,  
Take up a weeping on the mountains wild,  
The gentle neighbourhood of grove and spring  
Would soon unbosom all their echoes mild,  
And I (for grief is easily beguiled)  
Might think th' infection of my sorrows loud  
Had got a race of mourners on some pregnant cloud.

This subject the Author finding to be above the years he had, when he wrote it, and nothing satisfied with what was begun, left it unfinished.

---

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. i. 15.



# Early Poems

## ON TIME.<sup>1</sup>

FLY, envious Time, till thou run out thy race,  
Call on the lazy leaden-stepping hours,  
Whose speed is but the heavy plummet's pace ;  
And glut thyself with what thy womb devours,  
Which is no more than what is false and vain,  
And merely mortal dross ;  
So little is our loss,  
So little is thy gain.  
For when as each thing bad thou hast intombed,  
And last of all thy greedy self consumed,  
Then long Eternity shall greet our bliss  
With an individual kiss ;  
And Joy shall overtake us as a flood,  
When everything that is sincerely good  
And perfectly divine,  
With truth, and peace, and love, shall ever shine  
About the supreme throne  
Of Him, to whose happy-making sight alone  
When once our heav'nly-guided soul shall climb,  
Then all this earthly grossness quit,  
Attired with stars, we shall for ever sit,  
Triumphing over Death, and Chance, and thee,  
O Time.



## AT A SOLEMN MUSIC.

BLEST pair of Sirens, pledges of heav'n's joy,  
Sphere-born harmonious sisters, Voice and Verse,  
Wed your divine sounds, and mixed pow'r employ,  
Dead things with inbreathed sense able to pierce ;  
And to our high-raised phantasy present  
That undisturbèd song of pure concent,  
Aye sung before the sapphire-coloured throne  
To Him that sits thereon,

<sup>1</sup> In Milton's MS. written with his own hand—"On Time. To be set on a clock-case."—WARTON.

## Odes

With saintly shout, and solemn jubilee,  
Where the bright Seraphim in burning row  
Their loud uplifted angel-trumpets blow,  
And the cherubic host in thousand quires  
Touch their immortal harps of golden wires,  
With those just Spirits that wear victorious palms  
Hymns devout and holy psalms  
Singing everlastingly :  
That we on earth with undiscording voice  
May rightly answer that melodious noise ;  
As once we did, till disproportioned sin  
Jarred against nature's chime, and with harsh din  
Broke the fair music that all creatures made  
To their great Lord, whose love their motion swayed  
In perfect diapason, whilst they stood  
In first obedience, and their state of good.  
O may we soon again renew that song,  
And keep in tune with Heav'n, till God ere long  
To His celestial concert us unite,  
To live with Him, and sing in endless morn of light.



### SONG. ON MAY MORNING.

Now the bright morning star, day's harbinger,  
Comes dancing from the east, and leads with her  
The flow'ry May, who from her green lap throws  
The yellow cowslip, and the pale primrose.  
Hail, bounteous May, that dost inspire  
Mirth, and youth, and warm desire ;  
Woods and groves are of thy dressing,  
Hill and dale doth boast thy blessing.  
Thus we salute thee with our early song,  
And welcome thee, and wish thee long.

# Early Poems

## AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER.<sup>1</sup>

THIS rich marble doth inter  
The honoured wife of Winchester,  
A Viscount's daughter, an Earl's heir,  
Besides what her virtues fair  
Added to her noble birth,  
More than she could own from earth.  
Summers three times eight save one  
She had told ; alas ! too soon,  
After so short time of breath,  
To house with darkness, and with death.  
Yet had the number of her days  
Been as complete as was her praise,  
Nature and Fate had had no strife  
In giving limit to her life.  
Her high birth, and her graces sweet  
Quickly found a lover meet ;  
The virgin choir for her request  
The god that sits at marriage feast ;  
He at their invoking came,  
But with a scarce well-lighted flame ;  
And in his garland as he stood,  
Ye might discern a cypress bud.<sup>2</sup>  
Once had the early matrons run  
To greet her of a lovely son,  
And now with second hope she goes  
And calls Lucina to her throes ;  
But whether by mischance or blame  
Atropos<sup>3</sup> for Lucina came ;

<sup>1</sup> This lady was the wife of John, Marquis of Winchester, one of the noblest and most devoted of the adherents of Charles I. His house at Basing, in Hants, stood a two-years' siege by the rebels, and was finally levelled to the ground by them. Lord Winchester died in 1674. On his monument in Ingelsfield Church is an epitaph by Dryden. "It is remarkable," says Warton, "that both husband and wife should have severally received the honour of an epitaph from two such poets as Milton and Dryden."

<sup>2</sup> An emblem of death.

<sup>3</sup> The Fate who cuts the web of life.

## Epitaphs

And with remorseless cruelty  
Spoiled at once both fruit and tree :  
The hapless babe before his birth  
Had burial, yet not laid in earth,  
And the languished mother's womb  
Was not long a living tomb.

So have I seen some tender slip,  
Saved with care from winter's nip,  
The pride of her carnation train,  
Plucked up by some unheedy swain,  
Who only thought to crop the flow'r  
New shot up from vernal show'r ;  
But the fair blossom hangs the head  
Side-ways, as on a dying bed,  
And those pearls of dew she wears  
Prove to be presaging tears,  
Which the sad morn had let fall  
On her hastening funeral.

Gentle Lady, may thy grave  
Peace and quiet ever have ;  
After this thy travail sore  
Sweet rest seize thee evermore,  
That to give the world increase,  
Shortened hast thy own life's lease.  
Here, besides the sorrowing  
That thy noble house doth bring,  
Here be tears of perfect moan  
Wept for thee in Helicon,  
And some flowers, and some bays,  
For thy hearse, to strew the ways,  
Sent thee from the banks of Caine,  
Devoted to thy virtuous name ;  
Whilst thou, bright Saint, high sitt'st in  
glory

Next her, much like to thee in story,  
That fair Syrian shepherdess,<sup>1</sup>  
Who after years of barrenness,  
The highly favoured Joseph bore  
To him that served for her before, .

<sup>1</sup> Rachel, the wife of Jacob.



## Early Poems

And at her next birth much like thee  
Through pangs fled to felicity,  
Far within the bosom bright  
Of blazing Majesty and Light :  
There with thee, new welcome Saint,  
Like fortunes may her soul acquaint,  
With thee there clad in radiant sheen,  
No Marchioness, but now a Queen.



### AN EPITAPH ON THE ADMIRABLE DRAMATIC POET W. SHAKSPEARE.<sup>1</sup>

1630.

WHAT needs my Shakspeare for his honoured bones,  
The labour of an age in pillèd stones?  
Or that his hallowed reliques should be hid  
Under a starry-pointing pyramid?  
Dear son of Memory, great heir of Fame,  
What need'st thou such weak witness of thy name?  
Thou in our wonder and astonishment  
Hast built thyself a live-long monument.  
For whilst to the shame of slow-endeavouring art  
Thy easy numbers flow, and that each heart  
Hath from the leaves of thy unvalued book  
Those Delphic lines with deep impression took,  
Then thou our fancy of itself bereaving,  
Dost make us marble with too much conceiving;  
And so sepulchred in such pomp dost lie,  
That kings for such a tomb would wish to die.

<sup>1</sup> This Epitaph was prefixed to the folio edition of Shakspeare, 1632, but without Milton's name. It is the first of his poems which was published.

# Epitaphs

## ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER.

Who sickened in the time of his vacancy, being forbid to go to London,  
by reason of the Plague.

HERE lies old Hobson ;<sup>1</sup> Death hath broke his girt,  
And here, alas, hath laid him in the dirt ;  
Or else the ways being foul, twenty to one,  
He's here stuck in a slough, and overthrown.  
'Twas such a shifter, that if truth were known,  
Death was half glad when he had got him down ;  
For he had any time this ten years full,  
Dodged with him betwixt Cambridge and the Bull.  
And surely death could never have prevailed,  
Had not his weekly course of carriage failed ;  
But lately finding him so long at home,  
And thinking now his journey's end was come,  
And that he had ta'en up his latest inn,  
In the kind office of a chamberlin  
Showed him his room where he must lodge that night.  
Pulled off his boots, and took away the light :  
If any ask for him, it shall be said,  
Hobson has supped, and 's newly gone to bed.



## ANOTHER ON THE SAME.

HERE lieth one, who did most truly prove  
That he could never die while he could move ;  
So hung his destiny, never to rot  
While he might still jog on and keep his trot,  
Made of sphere-metal never to decay  
Until his revolution was at stay.  
Time numbers motion, yet (without a crime  
'Gainst old truth) motion numbered out his time :

<sup>1</sup> This carrier gave rise to the old proverb of "Hobson's choice : this or none," by always obliging the person who hired a horse of him to take the one standing next to the stable-door ; "so that every customer should have an equal chance of being well served, and every horse be used in its turn."—See *Spectator*, No. 509.

## Early Poems

And like an engine moved with wheel and weight,  
His principles being ceased, he ended straight.  
Rest that gives all men life, gave him his death,  
And too much breathing put him out of breath ;  
Nor were it contradiction to affirm  
Too long vacation hastened on his term.  
Merely to drive the time away he sickened,  
Fainted, and died, nor would with ale be quickened ;  
"Nay," quoth he, on his swooning bed out-stretched,  
"If I mayn't carry, sure I'll ne'er be fetched,  
But vow, though the cross doctors all stood hearers,  
For one carrier put down to make six bearers."  
Ease was his chief disease, and to judge right,  
He died for heaviness, that his cart went light :  
His leisure told him that his time was come,  
And lack of load made his life burdensome,  
That even to his last breath (there be that say't)  
As he were pressed to death, he cried "more weight ;"  
But had his doings lasted as they were,  
He had been an immortal carrier.  
Obedient to the moon he spent his date  
In course reciprocal, and had his fate  
Linked to the mutual flowing of the seas,  
Yet (strange to think) his wain was his increase :  
His letters are delivered all and gone,  
Only remains this superscription.



### L'ALLEGRO.<sup>1</sup>

HENCE, loathèd Melancholy,  
Of Cerberus and blackest Midnight born,  
In Stygian cave forlorn,  
'Mongst horrid shapes, and shrieks, and sights unholy !

<sup>1</sup> These two Poems—"I, Allegro" and "Il Penseroso"—are supposed to have been written in Milton's youth at Horton but were first published in 1648.

## L'Allegro

Find out some uncouth cell,  
Where brooding Darkness spreads his jealous  
wings  
And the night raven sings ;  
'There under ebon shades, and low-browed rocks,  
As ragged as thy locks,  
In dark Cimmerian<sup>1</sup> desert ever dwell.  
But come thou Goddess fair and free,  
In heaven y-clept Euphrosyne,  
And by men, heart-easing Mirth,  
Whom lovely Venus at a birth  
With two sister Graces more,  
To ivy-crowned Bacchus bore ;  
Or whether (as some sager sing)  
The frolic wind that breathes the spring,  
Zephyr with Aurora playing,  
As he met her once a Maying ;  
There on beds of violets blue,  
And fresh-blown roses washed in dew,  
Filled her with thee a daughter fair,  
So buxom, blithe, and debonair.  
Haste thee, Nymph, and bring with thee  
Jest, and youthful Jollity,  
Quips, and Cranks, and wanton Wiles,  
Nods, and Becks, and wreathèd Smiles,  
Such as hang on Hebe's cheek,  
And love to live in dimple sleek ;  
Sport that wrinkled Care derides,  
And Laughter holding both his sides.  
Come, and trip it as you go,  
On the light fantastic toe ;  
And in thy right hand lead with thee  
The mountain nymph, sweet Liberty ;  
And if I give thee honour due,  
Mirth, admit me of thy crew,  
To live with her, and live with thee,  
In unprovoked pleasures free.  
To hear the lark begin his flight,  
And singing startle the dull night,

<sup>1</sup> The Cimmerians were proverbial for dwelling in dark caves.

## Early Poems

From his watch-tower in the skies,  
Till the dappled dawn doth rise ;  
Then to come in spite of sorrow,  
And at my window bid good morrow,  
Through the sweet-briar, or the vine,  
Or the twisted eglantine :  
While the cock with lively din  
Scatters the rear of darkness thin,  
And to the stack, or the barn-door,  
Stoutly struts his dames before,  
Oft listening how the hounds and horn  
Cheerly rouse the slumb'ring morn,  
From the side of some hoar hill,  
Through the high wood echoing shrill :  
Some time walking, not unseen,  
By hedge-row elms, on hillocks green,  
Right against the eastern gate,  
Where the great sun begins his state,  
Robed in flames, and amber light,  
The clouds in thousand liveries dight ;  
While the ploughman near at hand  
Whistles o'er the furrowed land,  
And the milkmaid singeth blithe,  
And the mower whets his scythe,  
And every shepherd tells his tale  
Under the hawthorn in the dale.  
Straight mine eye hath caught new pleasures  
Whilst the landscape round it measures ;  
Russet lawns, and fallows gray,  
Where the nibbling flocks do stray,  
Mountains, on whose barren breast  
The lab'ring clouds do often rest ;  
Meadows trim with daisies pied,  
Shallow brooks, and rivers wide.  
Towers and battlements it sees  
Bosomed high in tufted trees,  
Where perhaps some Beauty lies,  
The Cynosure<sup>1</sup> of neighb'ring eyes.

<sup>1</sup>The Polestar—alluding to its magnetic attraction. The magnetic needle always points to it. "Your eyes are lodestars" is said by Shakspeare.

## L'Allegro

Hard by, a cottage-chimney smokes,  
From betwixt two agèd oaks,  
Where Corydon and Thyrsis met,  
Are at their savoury dinner set  
Of herbs, and other country messes,  
Which the neat-handed Phillis dresses ;  
And then in haste the bower she leaves,  
With Thestylis to bind the sheaves ;  
Or, if the earlier season lead,  
To the tanned haycock in the mead,  
Sometimes with secure delight  
The upland hamlets will invite,  
When the merry bells ring round,  
And the jocund rebecks<sup>1</sup> sound  
To many a youth, and many a maid,  
Dancing in the chequered shade ;  
And young and old come forth to play  
On a sunshine holiday,  
Till the live-long daylight fail ;  
Then to the spicy nut-brown ale,<sup>2</sup>  
With stories told of many a feat,  
How fairy Mab the junkets eat ;  
She was pinched and pulled, she said,  
And he by Friar's lanthorn<sup>3</sup> led,  
Tells how the drudging Goblin sweat,  
To earn his cream-bowl duly set,  
When in one night, ere glimpse of morn,  
His shadowy flail hath threshed the corn,  
That ten day-lab'ers could not end ;  
Then lies him down the lubber fiend,<sup>4</sup>  
And stretched out all the chimney's length,  
Basks at the fire his hairy strength,  
And crop-full out of doors he flings,  
Ere the first cock his matin rings.  
Thus done the tales, to bed they creep,  
By whispering winds soon lulled asleep.

<sup>1</sup> A rebeck was a fiddle with three strings.

<sup>2</sup> The gossip's bowl, called "Lamb's wool."

<sup>3</sup> Will-o'-the-wisp.

<sup>4</sup> Puck ; the Pixie, in Devonshire—the Kobold of Germany—supposed to do household work at night for the maids, who, in return, left him a bowl of cream.

## Early Poems

Towered cities please us then,  
And the busy hum of men,  
Where throngs of knights and barons bold  
In weeds of peace high triumphs hold,  
With store of ladies, whose bright eyes  
Rain influence, and judge the prize  
Of wit, or arms, while both contend  
To win her grace, whom all commend.  
There let Hymen oft appear  
In saffron robe, with taper clear,  
And pomp, and feast, and revelry,  
With mask, and antique pageantry,  
Such sights as youthful poets dream  
On summer eves by haunted stream  
Then to the well-trod stage anon,  
If Jonson's learnèd sock be on,  
Or sweetest Shakspeare, Fancy's child,  
Warble his native wood-notes wild.

And ever against eating cares,  
Lap me in soft Lydian airs,  
Married to immortal verse,  
Such as the meeting soul may pierce,  
In notes, with many a winding bout<sup>1</sup>  
Of linkèd sweetness long drawn out,  
With wanton heed and giddy cunning,  
The melting voice through mazes running,  
Untwisting all the chains that tie  
The hidden soul of harmony ;  
That Orpheus' self may heave his head  
From golden slumber on a bed  
Of heaped Elysian flowers, and hear  
Such strains as would have won the ear  
Of Pluto, to have quite set free  
His half regained Eurydice.

These delights if thou canst give,  
Mirth, with thee I mean to live.

<sup>1</sup> Turn.

## IL PENSEROSO.

HENCE, vain deluding joys,  
 The brood of folly without father bred,  
 How little you bestead,  
 Or fill the fixèd mind with all your toys !  
 Dwell in some idle brain,  
 And fancies fond with gaudy shapes possess,  
 As thick and numberless  
 As the gay motes that people the sunbeams,  
 Or likest hovering dreams  
 The fickle pensioners <sup>1</sup> of Morpheus' train.  
 But hail thou Goddess, sage and holy,  
 Hail divinest Melancholy,  
 Whose saintly visage is too bright  
 To hit the sense of human sight,  
 And therefore to our weaker view  
 O'erlaid with black, staid Wisdom's hue ;  
 Black, but such as in esteem  
 Prince Memnon's <sup>2</sup> sister might beseeem,  
 Or that starred Ethiop queen <sup>3</sup> that strove  
 To set her beauty's praise above  
 The Sea-Nymphs, and their pow'rs offended :  
 Yet thou art higher far descended ;  
 Thee bright-haired Vesta, <sup>4</sup> long of yore,  
 To solitary Saturn bore ;  
 His daughter she (in Saturn's reign,  
 Such mixture was not held a stain).  
 Oft in glimmering bow'rs and glades  
 He met her, and in secret shades

<sup>1</sup> Followers. The term was used first in this sense by a band of courtiers, who were enrolled by Queen Elizabeth under that title. They were young nobles of the highest fashion of the period.

<sup>2</sup> Memnon was king of Ethiopia, an ally of the Trojans. He was slain by Achilles.

<sup>3</sup> Cassiopeia, wife of Cepheus, king of Ethiopia. She boasted of being more beautiful than the Nereids, who, in anger, persuaded Neptune to send a sea-monster to devour the Ethiopians. Andromeda, her daughter, was exposed to it, but was saved by Perseus. Cassiopeia had a constellation named after her, *i.e.* Cassiopeia's chair. Hence Milton says, "*star'd Ethiop queen.*"

<sup>4</sup> The goddess of fire. "The meaning of Milton's allegory," says Warton, "is, that Melancholy is the daughter of Genius, which is typified by the 'bright-haired goddess of eternal fire.' Saturn, the father, is the god of saturnine dispositions, of pensive and gloomy minds."



## Early Poems

Of woody Ida's inmost grove,  
While yet there was no fear of Jove.  
Come, pensive Nun, devout and pure,  
Sober, steadfast, and demure,  
All in a robe of darkest grain,  
Flowing with majestic train,  
And sable stole<sup>1</sup> of cyprus lawn,  
Over thy decent shoulders drawn.  
Come, but keep thy wonted state,  
With even step, and musing gait,  
And looks commercing with the skies,  
Thy rapt soul sitting in thine eyes :  
There held in holy passion still,  
Forget thyself to marble, till  
With a sad, leaden, downward cast  
Thou fix them on the earth as fast :  
And join with thee calm Peace, and Quiet,  
Spare Fast, that oft with gods doth diet,  
And hears the Muses in a ring  
Aye round about Jove's altar sing :  
And add to these retired Leisure,  
That in trim gardens takes his pleasure ;  
But first, and chiefest, with thee bring  
Him that yon soars on golden wing,  
Guiding the fiery-wheelèd throne,  
The Cherub Contemplation ;  
And the mute Silence hist along,  
'Less Philomel will deign a song,  
In her sweetest, saddest plight,  
Smoothing the rugged brow of night,  
While Cynthia checks her dragon yoke,  
Gently o'er the accustomed oak ;  
Sweet bird, that shunn'st the noise of folly,  
Most musical, most melancholy !  
Thee, chauntress, oft the woods among  
I woo, to hear thy even-song ;  
And missing thee, I walk unseen  
On the dry smooth-shaven green,

<sup>1</sup> Stole, a veil which covered the head and shoulders, worn by Roman matrons.

## Il Penseroso

To behold the wandering moon,  
Riding near her highest noon,  
Like one that had been led astray  
Through the heav'n's wide pathless way :  
And oft, as if her head she bowed,  
Stooping through a fleecy cloud.  
Oft on a plat of rising ground,  
I hear the far-off curfew sound,  
Over some wide watered shore,  
Swinging slow with sullen roar;  
Or if the air will not permit,  
Some still removèd place will fit,  
Where glowing embers through the room  
Teach light to counterfeit a gloom,  
Far from all resort of mirth,  
Save the cricket on the hearth,  
Or the bellman's drowsy charm,  
'To bless the doors from nightly harm.  
Or let my lamp at midnight hour  
Be seen in some high lonely tower,  
Where I may oft out-watch the Bear,<sup>1</sup>  
With thrice-great Hermes,<sup>2</sup> or unsphere  
The spirit of Plato, to unfold  
What worlds, or what vast regions hold  
The immortal mind, that hath forsook  
Her mansion in this fleshly nook :  
And of those Demons<sup>3</sup> that are found  
In fire, air, flood, or under ground,  
Whose power hath a true consent  
With planet, or with element.  
Sometime let gorgeous tragedy  
In sceptred pall come sweeping by,  
Presenting Thebes, or Pelops' line,<sup>4</sup>  
Or the tale of Troy divine,

<sup>1</sup> Watch all night ; this constellation never sets to us.

<sup>2</sup> Trismegistus, *i.e.* "the thrice-grand." He was an Egyptian priest and astronomer, who instructed his countrymen in the sciences. The works, translated and published as his, are said to be apocryphal.

<sup>3</sup> Plato believed that the elements were peopled with spirits.

<sup>4</sup> The story of Thebes, of Oedipus and his sons, and the horrid tradition of Pelops, were the subjects of the great Greek tragedies.

## Early Poems

Or what (though rare) of later age  
Ennobled hath the buskined stage.  
But, O sad Virgin, that thy power  
Might raise Musæus <sup>1</sup> from his bower,  
Or bid the soul of Orpheus sing  
Such notes as warbled to the string,  
Drew iron tears down Pluto's cheek,  
And made Hell grant what love did seek.  
Or call up him <sup>2</sup> that left half told  
The story of Cambuscan bold,  
Of Camball, and of Algarsife,  
And who had Canace to wife,  
That owned the virtuous ring and glass,  
And of the wondrous horse of brass,  
On which the Tartar king did ride;  
And if aught else great bards beside <sup>3</sup>  
In sage and solemn tunes have sung,  
Of tourneys and of trophies hung,  
Of forests, and enchantments drear,  
Where more is meant than meets the ear.  
Thus Night oft see me in thy pale career,  
Till civil-suitèd Morn appear,  
Not tricked and frounced <sup>4</sup> as she was wont  
With the Attic boy <sup>5</sup> to hunt,  
But kercheffed in a comely cloud,  
While rocking winds are piping loud,  
Or ushered with a shower still,  
When the gust hath blown his fill,  
Ending on the rustling leaves,  
With minute drops from off the eaves.  
And when the sun begins to fling  
His flaring beams, me, Goddess, bring  
To archèd walks of twilight groves,  
And shadows brown that Sylvan loves

<sup>1</sup> Musæus and Orpheus are mentioned together in Plato's "Republic" as two of the genuine Greek poets.

<sup>2</sup> Chaucer. "The Squire's Tale" is alluded to.

<sup>3</sup> Alluding to Spenser's "Fairie Queen."

<sup>4</sup> "Frounced" meant an excessive or affected dressing of the hair. It is from the French *froncer*, to curl.—T. WARTON.

<sup>5</sup> Cephalus. Aurora, the goddess of the morning, fell in love with him. OVID, *Metam.* VII. 701.

## Il Penseroso

Of pine, or monumental oak,  
Where the rude axe with heavèd stroke  
Was never heard the Nymphs to daunt,  
Or fright them from their hallowed haunt.  
There in close covert by some brook,  
Where no profaner eye may look,  
Hide me from day's garish eye,  
While the bee with honied thigh,  
That at her flow'ry work doth sing,  
And the waters murmuring  
With such consort as they keep,  
Entice the dewy-feathered sleep ;  
And let some strange mysterious dream  
Wave at his wings in airy stream  
Of lively portraiture displayed,  
Softly on my eyelids laid.  
And as I wake, sweet music breathe  
Above, about, or underneath,  
Sent by some Spirit to mortals good,  
Or the unseen Genius of the wood.  
But let my due feet never fail  
To walk the studious cloister's pale,<sup>1</sup>  
And love the high embowèd roof,  
With antic pillars massy proof,  
And storied windows richly dight,  
Casting a dim religious light :  
There let the pealing organ blow,  
To the full voiced quire below,  
In service high, and anthems clear,  
As may with sweetness, through mine ear,  
Dissolve me into ecstasies,  
And bring all heav'n before mine eyes.  
And may at last my weary age  
Find out the peaceful hermitage,  
'The hairy gown\*and mossy cell,  
Where I may sit and rightly spell  
Of every star that heav'n doth show,  
And ev'ry herb that sips the dew ;

<sup>1</sup> Warton conjectures that the right reading is *cloister's pale*, i.e. enclosure.

# Arcades

Till old experience do attain  
To something like prophetic strain.  
These pleasures, Melancholy, give,  
And I with thee will choose to live.



## ARCADES.

Part of an entertainment presented to the Countess Dowager of Derby,<sup>1</sup> at Harefield, by some noble persons of her family, who appear on the scene in pastoral habit, moving towards the seat of state, with this song :—

### SONG I.

Look, nymphs, and shepherds look,  
What sudden blaze of majesty  
Is that which we from hence descry,  
Too divine to be mistook :  
    This, this is she  
To whom our views and wishes bend :  
Here our solemn search hath end.  
Fame, that her high worth to raise,  
Seemed erst so lavish and profuse,  
We may justly now accuse  
Of detraction from her praise ;  
    Less than half we find expressed,  
    Envy bid conceal the rest.  
Mark what radiant state she spreads,  
In circle round her shining throne,  
Shooting her beams like silver threads ;  
This, this is she alone,  
    Sitting like a Goddess bright,  
    In the centre of her light.

<sup>1</sup> Alice Spenser, daughter of Sir John Spenser, of Althorpe. Milton lived in the neighbourhood of Harefield, which was near Uxbridge. His father held his house near Colnebrook, and at Horton, under the Earl of Bedford. Lady Derby was a generous patroness of poets. Spenser was related to her family.

## Arcades

Might she the wise Latona be,  
Or the towerèd Cybele,  
Mother of a hundred Gods?  
Juno dares not give her odds ;  
Who had thought this clime had held  
A deity so unparalleled ?

As they come forward, the Genius of the Wood appears, and, turning toward them, speaks.

GEN. Stay, gentle Swains, for though in this disguise,  
I see bright honour sparkle through your eyes ;  
Of famous Arcady ye are, and sprung  
Of that renownèd flood, so often sung,  
Divine Alphéus, who by secret sluice  
Stole under seas to meet his Arethuse ;<sup>1</sup>  
And ye, the breathing roses of the wood,  
Fair silver-buskinèd Nymphs, as great and good,  
I know this quest of yours, and free intent  
Was all in honour and devotion meant  
To the great mistress of yon princely shrine,  
Whom with low reverence I adore as mine,  
And with all helpful service will comply  
To further this night's glad solemnity ;  
And lead ye where ye may more near behold  
What shallow-searching Fame has left untold  
Which I full oft amidst these shades alone  
Have sat to wonder at, and gaze upon :  
For know, by lot from Jove I am the Power  
Of this fair wood, and live in oaken bower,  
To nurse the saplings tall, and curl the grove  
With ringlets quaint, and wanton windings wove ;  
And all my plants I save from nightly ill  
Of noisome winds, and blasting vapours chill :  
And from the boughs brush off the evil dew,  
And heal the harms of thwarting thunder blue,  
Or what the cross dire-looking planet smites,  
Or hurtful worm with cankered venom bites.

<sup>1</sup> A river of Arcadia, which sinks into the earth, passes under the sea without mixing its waters with the salt waves, and rises near Syracuse, in Sicily, where it joins the Arethusa, and flows conjointly with that stream to the sea. See Shelley's exquisite poem, "Arethusa."

## Arcades

When evening gray doth rise, I fetch my round  
Over the mount, and all this hallowed ground ;  
And early, ere the odorous breath of morn  
Awakes the slumb'ring leaves, or tasselled horn  
Shakes the high thicket, haste I all about,  
Number my ranks, and visit every sprout  
With puissant words, and murmurs made to bless ;  
But else, in deep of night, when drowsiness  
Hath locked up mortal sense, then listen I  
To the celestial Sirens' harmony,  
That sit upon the nine infolded spheres,<sup>1</sup>  
And sing to those that hold the vital shears,  
And turn the adamantinc spindle round,<sup>2</sup>  
On which the fate of gods and men is wound.  
Such sweet compulsion doth in music lie,  
To lull the daughters of Necessity,  
And keep unsteady Nature to her law,  
And the low world in measured motion draw  
After the heav'nly tune, which none can hear  
Of human mould, with gross unpurgèd ear ;  
And yet such music worthiest were to blaze  
The peerless height of her immortal praise,  
Whose lustre leads us, and for her most fit,  
If my inferior hand or voice could hit  
Inimitable sounds : yet as we go,  
Whate'er the skill of lesser Gods can show,  
I will assay, her worth to celebrate,  
And so attend ye toward her glitt'ring state ;  
Where ye may all that are of noble stem  
Approach, and kiss her sacred vesture's hem.

<sup>1</sup> The Muses.

<sup>2</sup> This is Plato's system. Fate, or Necessity, holds a spindle of adamant ; and with her three daughters, — Lachesis, Clotho, and Atropos (the Fates), — who handle the vital web wound round about the spindle, she conducts or turns the heavenly bodies. Nine Muses, or Sirens, sit on the summit of the spheres, which, in their revolutions, produce the most ravishing musical harmony. To this harmony the three daughters of Necessity perpetually sing in corresponding tones. In the meantime, the adamantinc spindle, which is placed on the lap of Necessity, . . . is also revolved.

# Arcades

## SONG II.

O'ER the smooth enamelled green,  
Where no print of step hath been,  
    Follow me as I sing,  
    And touch the warbled string,  
Under the shady roof  
Of branching elm star-proof.  
    Follow me,  
I will bring you where she sits,  
Clad in splendour as befits  
    Her deity.  
Such a rural Queen  
All Arcadia hath not seen.

## SONG III.

NYMPHS and Shepherds dance no more  
By sandy Ladon's<sup>1</sup> liliated banks,  
On old Lycæus or Cyllene hoar  
    Trip no more in twilight ranks,  
Though Erymanth your loss deplore,  
    A better soil shall give ye thanks.  
From the stony Mænalus  
Bring your flocks, and live with us ;  
Here ye shall have greater grace,  
To serve the lady of this place ;  
Though Syrinx your Pan's mistress were,  
Yet Syrinx well might wait on her.  
    Such a rural Queen  
All Arcadia hath not seen.

<sup>1</sup> A beautiful river of Arcadia.





## COMUS, A MASK.

1634.

Presented at Ludlow Castle before John, Earl of Bridgewater, then  
President of Wales.

"Comus" was suggested to the Poet by the fact that the two sons and the daughter of the Earl of Bridgewater, on their return from a visit to some relations in Herefordshire, were benighted in Haywood Forest; and the Lady Alice was, for a short time, lost. The Mask was written for the Michaelmas festivities of 1634, and was acted by Lord Bridgewater's children. The music composed for it was by Henry Lawes, who performed in it the part of the Spirit, or Thyrsis. He was the son of Thomas Lawes, a Vicar-Choral of Salisbury Cathedral, and was at first a chorister himself. He became finally one of the Court musicians to Charles I. Masks and music fled before the stern gloom of the Commonwealth, and Lawes was compelled to gain his living by teaching the lute. His greatest friends during this period of difficulty and poverty were the Ladies Alice and Mary Egerton. He lived to the Restoration, and composed the Coronation Anthem for Charles II. "Comus" was first published by Lawes, without Milton's name, in 1637, with a dedication to Lord Brackley. Masks were the fashion of the age; and Milton was probably called on by Lord Bridgewater to produce one, because he had already written the "Arcades" for Lady Bridgewater's mother, Lady Derby, at Harefield, in Middlesex.

### THE PERSONS.

The attendant Spirit, afterwards in the  
habit of Thyrsis.  
Comus, with his crew.  
The Lady.

First Brother.  
Second Brother.  
Sabrina, the Nymph.

### THE CHIEF PERSONS WHO PRESENTED WERE—

The Lord Brackley.

Mr. Thomas Egerton, his brother.  
The Lady Alice Egerton.

The First Scene discovers a Wild Wood.

The attendant Spirit<sup>1</sup> descends or enters.

BEFORE the starry threshold of Jove's court  
My mansion is, where those immortal shapes  
Of bright aerial spirits live insphered  
In regions mild of calm and serene air,  
Above the smoke and stir of this dim spot,  
Which men call Earth, and with low-thoughted care  
Confined, and pestered<sup>2</sup> in this pinfold here,  
Strive to keep up a frail and feverish being,  
Unmindful of the crown that virtue gives,  
After this mortal change, to her true servants  
Amongst the enthroned Gods on sainted seats.

<sup>1</sup> The Spirit is called "Dæmon" in the Cambridge MS.—WARTON.

<sup>2</sup> Crowded; from *pesta*, a crowd.

## Comus

Yet some there be that by due steps aspire  
To lay their just hands on that golden key,  
That opes the palace of eternity ;  
To such my errand is ; and but for such,  
I would not soil these pure ambrosial weeds  
With the rank vapours of this sin-worn mould.

But to my task. Neptune, besides the sway  
Of every salt flood, and each ebbing stream,  
Took in by lot 'twixt high and nether Jove  
Imperial rule of all the sea-girt isles,  
'That like to rich and various gems inlay  
The unadornèd bosom of the deep ;  
Which he, to grace his tributary Gods,  
By course commits to sev'ral government,  
And gives them leave to wear their sapphire crowns,  
And wield their little tridents. But this Isle,  
'The greatest and the best of all the main,  
He quarters to his blue-haired deities ;  
And all this tract that fronts the falling sun  
A noble Peer of mickle trust and power  
Has in his charge, with tempered awe to guide  
An old and haughty nation proud in arms :<sup>1</sup>  
Where his fair offspring, nursed in princely lore,  
Are coming to attend their father's state,  
And new-intrusted sceptre. But their way  
Lies through the perplexèd paths of this drear wood,  
The nodding horror of whose shady brows  
Threats the forlorn and wand'ring passenger ;  
And here their tender age might suffer peril,  
But that by quick command from sov'ran Jove  
I was dispatched for their defence and guard ;  
And listen why ; for I will tell you now  
What never yet was heard in tale or song,  
From old or modern bard, in hall or bower.

Bacchus, that first from out the purple grape  
Crushed the sweet poison of misusèd wine,  
After the Tuscan mariners transformed,  
Coasting the Tyrrhene shore, as the winds listed,  
On Circe's island fell : who knows not Circe,

<sup>1</sup> The Welsh.

## Comus

The daughter of the sun, whose charmed cup  
Whoever tasted, lost his upright shape,  
And downward fell into a grovelling swine?  
'This Nymph that gazed upon his clust'ring locks,  
With ivy berries wreathed, and his blithe youth,  
Had by him, ere he parted thence, a son  
Much like his father, but his mother more,  
Whom therefore she brought up, and Comus<sup>1</sup> named:  
Who ripe, and frolic of his full grown age,  
Roving the Celtic and Iberian fields,  
At last betakes him to this ominous wood,  
And in thick shelter of black shades inbowered  
Excels his mother at her mighty art,  
Offering to ev'ry weary traveller  
His orient liquor in a crystal glass,  
'To quench the drouth of Phœbus; which as they  
taste,

(For most do taste through fond intemperate thirst)  
Soon as the potion works, their human count'nance,  
Th' express resemblance of the Gods, is changed  
Into some brutish form of wolf, or bear,  
Or ounce, or tiger, hog, or bearded goat,  
All other parts remaining as they were;  
And they, so perfect is their misery,  
Not once perceive their foul disfigurement,  
But boast themselves more comely than before,  
And all their friends and native home forget,  
To roll with pleasure in a sensual sty.  
Therefore, when any favoured of high Jove  
Chances to pass through this adventurous glade,  
Swift as the sparkle of a glancing star  
I shoot from heav'n, to give him safe convoy,  
As now I do. But first I must put off  
These my sky robes spun out of Iris' woof,  
And take the weeds and likeness of a swain,  
That to the service of this house belongs,  
Who with his soft pipe, and smooth-dittied song,  
Well knows to still the wild winds when they roar,

<sup>1</sup> Comus was the god of good cheer. He had appeared as a dramatic personage in one of Jonson's Masks before the Court, in 1619.

## Comus

And hush the waving woods ; nor of less faith,  
And in this office of his mountain watch,  
Likeliest, and nearest to the present aid  
Of this occasion. But I hear the tread  
Of hateful steps, I must be viewless now.

Comus enters with a charming-rod in one hand, his glass in the other ; with him a rout of monsters, headed like sundry sorts of wild beasts, but otherwise like men and women, their apparel glistening ; they come in making a riotous and unruly noise, with torches in their hands.

COMUS. The star that bids the shepherd fold  
Now the top of heaven doth hold ;  
And the gilded car of day  
His glowing axle doth allay  
In the steep Atlantic stream ;  
And the slope sun his upward beam  
Shoots against the dusky pole,  
Pacing toward the other goal  
Of his chamber in the east.  
Meanwhile welcome Joy, and Feast,  
Midnight Shout and Revelry,  
Tipsy Dance and Jollity.  
Braid your locks with rosy twine,  
Dropping odours, dropping wine.  
Rigour now is gone to bed,  
And Advice with scrupulous head,  
Strict Age, and sour Severity,  
With their grave saws in slumber lie.  
We that are of purer fire  
Imitate the starry quire,  
Who in their nightly watchful spheres  
Lead in swift round the months and years.  
The sounds and seas, with all their finny drove,  
Now to the moon in wavering morrice<sup>1</sup> move ;  
And on the tawny sands and shelves  
Trip the pert fairies and the dapper elves.  
By dimpled brook, and fountain brim,  
The wood-nymphs decked with daisies trim,

<sup>1</sup> The morrice or Moorish, dance, long a great favourite with our ancestors. It was introduced by John of Gaunt, it is said, in the reign of Edward III., on his return from Spain. See Douce's *Illustrations of Shakspeare*.

## Comus

Their merry wakes and pastimes keep.  
What hath night to do with sleep?  
Night hath better sweets to prove,  
Venus now wakes, and wakens Love.  
Come, let us our rites begin,  
'Tis only day-light that makes sin,  
Which these dun shades will ne'er report.  
Hail Goddess of nocturnal sport,  
Dark-veil'd Cotytto,<sup>1</sup> to whom the secret flame  
Of midnight torches burns ; mysterious dame,  
That ne'er art called, but when the dragon womb  
Of Stygian darkness spets her thickest gloom,  
And makes one blot of all the air ;  
Stay thy cloudy ebon chair,  
Wherein thou rid'st with Hecat, and befriend  
Us thy vowed priests, till utmost end  
Of all thy dues be done, and none left out ;  
Ere the babbling eastern scout,  
The nice morn, on the Indian steep  
From her cabined loophole peep,  
And to the tell-tale sun descry  
Our concealed solemnity.  
Come, knit hands, and beat the ground  
In a light fantastic round.

### THE MEASURE.

Break off, break off, I feel the different pace  
Of some chaste footing near about this ground.  
Run to your shrouds, within these brakes and trees ;  
Our number may affright : Some virgin sure  
(For so I can distinguish by mine art)  
Benighted in these woods. Now to my charms,  
And to my wily trains ; I shall ere long  
Be well-stocked with as fair a herd as grazed  
About my mother Circe. Thus I hurl  
My dazzling spells into the spongy air,

<sup>1</sup> The goddess of wantonness, worshipped by the ancient Greeks at night.

## Comus

Of power to cheat the eye with blear illusion,  
And give it false presentments, lest the place  
And my quaint habits breed astonishment,  
And put the damsel to suspicious flight,  
Which must not be, for that's against my course :  
I, under fair pretence of friendly ends,  
And well-placed words of glozing courtesy  
Baited with reasons not unplausible,  
Wind me into the easy-hearted man,  
And hug him into snares. When once her eye  
Hath met the virtue of this magic dust,  
I shall appear some harmless villager,  
Whom thrift keeps up about his country gear.  
But here she comes, I fairly <sup>1</sup> step aside,  
And hearken, if I may, her business here.

The Lady enters.

LADY. 'This way the noise was, if mine ear be true,  
My best guide now ; methought it was the sound  
Of riot and ill-managed merriment,  
Such as the jocund flute, or gamesome pipe  
Stirs up among the loose unletter'd hinds,  
When for their teeming flocks, and granges full,  
In wanton dance, they praise the bounteous Pan,  
And thank the gods amiss. I should be loath  
To meet the rudeness, and swilled insolence  
Of such late wassailers ; yet, O where else  
Shall I inform my unacquainted feet  
In the blind mazes of this tangled wood ?  
My Brothers, when they saw me wearied out  
With this long way, resolving here to lodge  
Under the spreading favour of these pines,  
Stepped, as they said, to the next thicket side  
To bring me berries, or such cooling fruit  
As the kind hospitable woods provide.  
They left me then, when the gray-hooded Even  
Like a sad votarist in palmer's weed,  
Rose from the hindmost wheels of Phœbus' wain.

<sup>1</sup> Softly.

## Comus

But where they are, and why they came not back,  
Is now the labour of my thoughts. 'Tis likeliest  
They had engaged their wandering steps too far ;  
And envious darkness, ere they could return,  
Had stole them from me : else, O thievish Night,  
Why shouldst thou, but for some felonious end,  
In thy dark lantern thus close up the stars,  
That nature hung in heaven, and filled their lamps  
With everlasting oil, to give due light  
To the misled and lonely traveller ?  
This is the place, as well as I may guess,  
Whence even now the tumult of loud mirth  
Was rife, and perfect in my listening ear,  
Yet nought but single darkness do I find.  
What might this be ? A thousand fantasies  
Begin to throng into my memory,  
Of calling shapes, and beck'ning shadows dire,  
And airy tongues, that syllable men's names  
On sands, and shores, and desert wildernesses.  
These thoughts may startle well, but not astound  
The virtuous mind, that ever walks attended  
By a strong-siding champion, Conscience.—  
O welcome pure-eyed Faith, white-handed Hope,  
'Thou hov'ring Angel, girt with golden wings,  
And thou, unblemished form of Chastity !  
I see ye visibly, and now believe  
That He, the Supreme Good, to whom all things  
    ill  
Are but as slavish officers of vengeance,  
Would send a glist'ring guardian, if need were,  
To keep my life and honour unassailed.  
Was I deceived, or did a sable cloud  
'Turn forth her silver lining on the night ?  
I did not err, there does a sable cloud  
Turn forth her silver lining on the night,  
And casts a gleam over this tufted grove :  
I cannot halloo to my Brothers, but  
Such noise as I can make to be heard farthest  
I'll venture, for my new enlivened spirits  
Prompt me ; and they perhaps are not far off.

# Comus

## SONG.

SWEET Echo, sweetest nymph, that livest unseen  
Within thy airy shell,  
By slow Meander's margent green,  
And in the violet-embroidered vale,  
Where the love-lorn nightingale  
Nightly to thee her sad song mourneth well ;  
Canst thou not tell me of a gentle pair  
That liketh thy Narcissus are ?  
O, if thou have  
Hid them in some flowery cave,  
Tell me but where,  
Sweet queen of parley, daughter of the sphere !  
So mayst thou be translated to the skies,  
And give resounding grace to all heav'n's harmonies.

Enter Comus.

COM. Can any mortal mixture of earth's mould  
Breathe such divine enchanting ravishment ?  
Sure something holy lodges in that breast,  
And with these raptures moves the vocal air  
To testify his hidden residence :  
How sweetly did they float upon the wings  
Of silence, through the empty-vaulted night,  
At every fall smoothing the raven down  
Of darkness till it smiled ! I have oft heard  
My mother Circe with the Sirens three,  
Amidst the flowery-kirtled Naiades,  
Culling their potent herbs, and baleful drugs,  
Who, as they sung, would take the prisoned soul,  
And lap it in Elysium ; Scylla wept,  
And chid her barking waves into attention,  
And fell Charybdis murmured soft applause :  
Yet they in pleasing slumber lulled the sense,  
And in sweet madness robbed it of itself ;  
But such a sacred, and home-felt delight,  
Such sober certainty of waking bliss  
I never heard till now. I'll speak to her,



## Comus

And she shall be my queen. Hail, foreign wonder !  
Whom certain these rough shades did never breed,  
Unless the goddess that in rural shrine  
Dwell'st here with Pan, or Silvan, by blest song  
Forbidding every bleak unkindly fog  
To touch the prosperous growth of this tall wood.

LAD. Nay, gentle Shepherd, ill is lost that praise  
That is addressed to unattending ears ;  
Not any boast of skill, but extreme shift  
How to regain my severed company,  
Compelled me to awake the courteous Echo  
To give me answer from her mossy couch.

COM. What chance, good Lady, hath bereft you  
thus ?

LAD. Dim darkness, and this leafy labyrinth.

COM. Could that divide you from near-ushering  
guides ?

LAD. They left me weary on a grassy turf.

COM. By falsehood, or discourtesy, or why ?

LAD. To seek i' th' valley some cool friendly spring.

COM. And left your fair side all unguarded, Lady ?

LAD. They were but twain, and purposed quick  
return.

COM. Perhaps forestalling night prevented them.

LAD. How easy my misfortune is to hit !

COM. Imports their loss, beside the present need ?

LAD. No less than if I should my Brothers lose.

COM. Were they of manly prime, or youthful bloom ?

LAD. As smooth as Hebe's their unrazored lips.

COM. Two such I saw, what time the laboured ox  
In his loose traces from the furrow came,  
And the swinked<sup>1</sup> hedger at his supper sat ;  
I saw them under a green mantling vine  
That crawls along the side of yon small hill,  
Plucking ripe clusters from the tender shoots ;  
Their port was more than human, as they stood :  
I took it for a faery vision  
Of some gay creatures of the element,  
That in the colours of the rainbow live,

<sup>1</sup> Wearied with toil.

## Comus

And play i' th' plighted clouds. I was awe-struck,  
And as I passed, I worshipped ; if those you seek,  
It were a journey like the path to heav'n,  
To help you find them.

LAD. Gentle Villager,  
What readiest way would bring me to that place ?

COM. Due west it rises from this shrubby point.

LAD. To find that out, good Shepherd, I suppose,  
In such a scant allowance of star-light,  
Would overtax the best land-pilot's art,  
Without the sure guess of well-practised feet.

COM. I know each lane, and every alley green,  
Dingle or bushy dell of this wild wood,  
And every bosky bourn from side to side,  
My daily walks and ancient neighbourhood ;  
And if your stray-attendants be yet lodged  
Or shroud within these limits, I shall know  
Ere morrow wake, or the low-roosted lark  
From her thatched pallet rouse ; if otherwise,  
I can conduct you, Lady, to a low  
But loyal cottage, where you may be safe  
Till further quest.

LAD. Shepherd, I take thy word,  
And trust thy honest offered courtesy,  
Which oft is sooner found in lowly sheds  
With smoky rafters, than in tapestry halls  
And courts of princes, where it first was named,  
And yet is most pretended : in a place  
Less warranted than this, or less secure,  
I cannot be, that I should fear to change it.  
Eye me, blest Providence, and square my trial  
To my proportioned strength. Shepherd, lead on.

Enter the two Brothers.

I BR. Unmuffle, ye faint stars, and thou, fair moon,  
That wont'st to love the traveller's benizon,  
Stoop thy pale visage through an amber cloud,  
And disinherit Chaos, that reigns here  
In double night of darkness and of shades ;  
Or if your influence be quite dammed up

## Comus

With black usurping mists, some gentle taper,  
Though a rush candle, from the wicker-hole  
Of some clay habitation, visit us  
With thy long-levelled rule of streaming light ;  
And thou shalt be our star of Arcady,  
Or Tyrian Cynosure.<sup>1</sup>

2 BR. Or if our eyes  
Be barred that happiness, might we but hear  
The folded flocks penned in their wattled cotes,  
Or sound of past'ral reed with oaten stops,  
Or whistle from the lodge, or village cock  
Count the night watches to his feathery dames,  
'Twould be some solace yet, some little cheering  
In this close dungeon of innumerable boughs.  
But O that hapless virgin, our lost Sister,  
Where may she wander now, whither betake her  
From the chill dew, amongst rude burs and thistles?  
Perhaps some cold bank is her bolster now,  
Or 'gainst the rugged bark of some broad elm  
Leans her unpillowed head, fraught with sad fears.  
What, if in wild amazement, and affright,  
Or, while we speak, within the direful grasp  
Of savage hunger, or of savage heat?

1 BR. Peace, Brother, be not over-exquisite  
To cast the fashion of uncertain evils ;  
For grant they be so, while they rest unknown,  
What need a man forestall his date of grief,  
And run to meet what he would most avoid ?  
Or if they be but false alarms of fear,  
How bitter is such self-delusion !  
I do not think my Sister so to seek,  
Or so unprincipled in virtue's book,  
And the sweet peace that goodness bosoms ever,  
As that the single want of light and noise  
(Not being in danger, as I trust she is not)  
Could stir the constant mood of her calm thoughts,

<sup>1</sup> Our Greater or Lesser Bear Star. Calisto, the daughter of Lycaon, king of Arcadia, was changed into the Greater Bear, called also Helice, and her son Arcas into the Lesser, called also Cynosura (see p. 56), by observing of which the Tyrians and Sidonians steered their course, as the Grecian mariners did by the other.—NEWTON.

## Comus

And put them into misbecoming plight.  
Virtue could see'to do what virtue would  
By her own radiant light, though sun and moon  
Were in the flat sea sunk. And Wisdom's self  
Oft seeks to sweet retirèd solitude,  
Where with her best nurse Contemplation  
She plumes her feathers, and lets grow her wings,  
That in the various bustle of resort  
Were all-to ruffled, and sometimes impaired.  
He that has light within his own clear breast,  
May sit i' th' centre, and enjoy bright day :  
But he that hides a dark soul, and foul thoughts,  
Benighted walks under the mid-day sun ;  
Himself is his own dungeon.

2 BR. 'Tis most true,  
That musing meditation most affects  
The pensive secrecy of desert cell,  
Far from the cheerful haunts of men and herds,  
And sits as safe as in a senate house ;  
For who would rob a hermit of his weeds,  
His few books, or his beads, or maple dish,  
Or do his gray hairs any violence ?  
But beauty, like the fair Hesperian tree  
Laden with blooming gold, had need the guard  
Of dragon watch with unenchanted eye,  
To save her blossoms, and defend her fruit  
From the rash hand of bold incontinence.  
You may as well spread out the unsunned heaps  
Of miser's treasure by an outlaw's den,  
And tell me it is safe, as bid me hope  
Danger will wink on Opportunity,  
And let a single helpless maiden pass  
Uninjured in this wild surrounding waste.  
Of night, or loneliness, it recks me not ;  
I fear the dread events that dog them both,  
Lest some ill-greeting touch attempt the person  
Of our unowned Sister.

1 BR. I do not, Brother,  
Infer, as if I thought my Sister's state  
Secure without all doubt or controversy ;

## Comus

Yet where an equal poise of hope and fear  
Does arbitrate th' event, my nature is  
That I incline to hope, rather than fear,  
And gladly banish squint suspicion.  
My Sister is not so defenceless left,  
As you imagine ; she has a hidden strength  
Which you remember not.

2 Br. What hidden strength,  
Unless the strength of Heav'n, if you mean that ?  
1 Br. I mean that too, but yet a hidden strength,  
Which, if Heav'n gave it, may be termed her own ;  
'Tis Chastity, my Brother, chastity :

She that has that, is clad in complete steel,  
And like a quivered Nymph with arrows keen  
May trace huge forests, and unharboured heaths,  
Infamous hills, and sandy perilous wilds,  
Where, through the sacred rays of chastity,  
No savage fierce, bandit, or mountaineer  
Will dare to soil her virgin purity :  
Yea, there where very desolation dwells,  
By grots, and caverns shagged with horrid shades,  
She may pass on with unblenched majesty,  
Be it not done in pride, or in presumption.  
Some say no evil thing that walks by night,  
In fog, or fire, by lake, or moorish fen,  
Blue meagre hag, or stubborn unlaid ghost,  
That breaks his magic chains at curfew time,  
No goblin, or swart faery of the mine,  
Hath hurtful power o'er true virginity.  
Do ye believe me yet, or shall I call  
Antiquity from the old schools of Greece  
To testify the arms of chastity ?  
Hence had the huntress Dian her dread bow,  
Fair silver-shafted queen, for ever chaste,  
Wherewith she tamed the brindled lioness  
And spotted mountain pard, but set at nought  
The frivolous bolt of Cupid ; gods and men  
Feared her stern frown, and she was queen o' th'  
wood.

What was that snaky-headed Gorgon shield,

## Comus

That wise Minerva wore, unconquered virgin,  
Wherewith she freezed her foes to congealed stone,  
But rigid looks of chaste austerity,  
And noble grace that dashed brute violence  
With sudden adoration and blank awe?  
So dear to heav'n is saintly chastity,  
That when a soul is found sincerely so,  
A thousand liveried angels lacky her,  
Driving far off each thing of sin and guilt,  
And in clear dream, and solemn vision,  
Tell her of things that no gross ear can hear,  
Till oft converse with heav'nly habitants  
Begin to cast a beam on th' outward shape,  
The unpolluted temple of the mind,  
And turns it by degrees to the soul's essence,  
Till all be made immortal: but when lust,  
By unchaste looks, loose gestures, and foul talk,  
But most by lewd and lavish act of sin,  
Lets in defilement to the inward parts,  
The soul grows clotted by contagion,  
Imbodies, and imbrutes, till she quite lose  
The divine property of her first being.  
Such are those thick and gloomy shadows damp  
Oft seen in charnel vaults, and sepulchres,  
Ling'ring and sitting by a new-made grave,  
As loath to leave the body that it loved,  
And linked itself by carnal sensuality  
'To a degenerate and degraded state.

2 BR. How charming is divine philosophy!  
Not harsh, and crabbed, as dull fools suppose,  
But musical, as is Apollo's lute,  
And a perpetual feast of nectared sweets,  
Where no crude surfeit reigns.

1 BR. List, list, I hear  
Some far-off halloo break the silent air.

2 BR. Methought so too: what should it be?

1 BR. For certain  
Either some one like us night-foundered here,  
Or else some neighbour woodman, or, at worst,  
Some roving robber calling to his fellows.

## Comus

2 BR. Heav'n keep my Sister! Again, again, and near;

Best draw, and stand upon our guard.

1 BR. I'll halloo;

If he be friendly, he comes well; if not,

Defence is a good cause, and Heav'n be for us.

*Enter the attendant Spirit, habited like a shepherd.*

That halloo I should know. What are you? speak;  
Come not too near, you fall on iron stakes else.

SPIR. What voice is that? my young Lord? speak again.

2 BR. O brother, 'tis my father's shepherd, sure.

1 BR. Thyrsis? Whose artful strains have oft delayed  
The huddling brook to hear his madrigal,<sup>1</sup>  
And sweetened every muskrose of the dale.

How camest thou here, good swain? hath any ram

Slipt from the fold, or young kid lost his dam,

Or straggling wether the pent flock forsook?

How could'st thou find this dark sequestered nook?

SPIR. O my loved master's heir, and his next  
.. joy,

I came not here on such a trivial toy

As a strayed ewe, or to pursue the stealth

Of pilfering wolf; not all the fleecy wealth

That doth enrich these downs is worth a thought

To this my errand, and the care it brought.

But, O my virgin lady, where is she?

How chance she is not in your company?

1 BR. To tell thee sadly, Shepherd, without blame,  
Or our neglect, we lost her as we came.

SPIR. Aye me unhappy! then my fears are true.

1 BR. What fears, good Thyrsis? Prithee briefly  
shew.

SPIR. I'll tell ye; 'tis not vain or fabulous,  
Though so esteemed by shallow ignorance,  
What the sage poets, taught by the heav'nly Muse,  
Storied of old, in high immortal verse,  
Of dire chimeras, and enchanted isles,

<sup>1</sup> A compliment to Lawes.

## Comus

And rifted rocks whose entrance leads to Hell;  
For such there be, but unbelief is blind.

Within the navel of this hideous wood,  
Immured in cypress shades a sorcerer dwells,  
Of Bacchus and of Circe born, great Comus,  
Deep skilled in all his mother's witcheries,  
And here to every thirsty wanderer  
By sly enticement gives his baneful cup,  
With many murmur mixed, whose pleasing poison  
The visage quite transforms of him that drinks,  
And the inglorious likeness of a beast  
Fixes instead, unmoulding reason's mintage  
Charactered in the face: this I have learnt  
Tending my flocks hard by i' th' hilly crofts,  
That brow this bottom-glade, whence, night by night,  
He and his monstrous rout are heard to howl,  
Like stabled wolves, or tigers at their prey,  
Doing abhorred rites to Hecate  
In their obscurèd haunts of inmost bowers.  
Yet have they many baits, and guileful spells,  
To inveigle and invite th' unwary sense  
Of them that pass unweeting by the way.  
This evening late, by then the chewing-flocks  
Had ta'en their supper on the savoury herb  
Of knot-grass dew-besprent, and were in fold,  
I sat me down to watch upon a bank  
With ivy canopied, and interwove  
With flaunting honey-suckle, and began,  
Wrapt in a pleasing fit of melancholy,  
To meditate my rural minstrelsy,  
Till fancy had her fill, but ere a close,  
The wonted roar was up amidst the woods,  
And filled the air with barbarous dissonance;  
At which I ceased, and listened them a while,  
Till an unusual stop of sudden silence  
Gave respite to the drowsy frightened steeds,  
That draw the litter of close-curtained Sleep.  
At last a soft and solemn-breathing sound  
Rose like a steam of rich distilled perfumes,  
And stole upon the air, that even Silence



## Comus

Was took ere she was ware, and wished she might  
Deny her nature, and be never more,  
Still to be so displaced. I was all ear,  
And took in strains that might create a soul  
Under the ribs of death : but O ere long  
Too well I did perceive it was the voice  
Of my most honoured Lady, your dear Sister.  
Amazed I stood, harrowed with grief and fear,  
And O poor hapless nightingale thought I,  
How sweet thou sing'st, how near the deadly snare.  
Then down the lawns I ran with headlong haste,  
Through paths and turnings often trod by day,  
Till guided by mine ear I found the place,  
Where that damned wizard, hid in sly disguise,  
(For so by certain signs I knew) had met  
Already, ere my best speed could prevent,  
The aidless innocent Lady his wished prey ;  
Who gently asked if he had seen such two,  
Supposing him some neighbour villager.  
Longer I durst not stay, but soon I guessed  
Ye were the two she meant ; with that I sprung  
Into swift flight, till I had found you here,  
But further know I not.

2 BR. O night and shades,  
How are ye joined with Hell in triple knot,  
Against the unarmed weakness of one virgin,  
Alone and helpless ! Is this the confidence  
You gave me, Brother ?

1 BR. Yes, and keep it still ;  
Lean on it safely ; not a period  
Shall be unsaid for me : against the threats  
Of malice or of sorcery, or that power  
Which erring men call Chance, this I hold firm  
Virtue may be assailed, but never hurt,  
Surprised by unjust force, but not enthralled ;  
Yea even that which mischief meant most harm  
Shall in the happy trial prove most glory :  
But evil on itself shall back recoil,  
And mix no more with goodness, when at last  
Gathered like scum, and settled to itself,

## Comus

It shall be in eternal restless change  
Self-fed, and self-consumèd. If this fail,  
The pillared firmament is rottenness,  
And earth's base built on stubble. But come, let's on !  
Against the opposing will and arm of heaven  
May never this just sword be lifted up ;  
But for that damned magician, let him be girt  
With all the grisly legions that troop  
Under the sooty flag of Acheron,  
Harpies and Hydras, or all the monstrous forms  
'Twixt Africa and Ind, I'll find him out,  
And force him to return his purchase back,  
Or drag him by the curls to a foul death,  
Cursed as his life.

SPIR. Alas ! good venturous youth,  
I love thy courage yet, and bold emprise ;  
But here thy sword can do thee little stead ;  
Far other arms and other weapons must  
Be those that quell the might of hellish charms :  
He with his bare wand can unthread thy joints,  
And crumble all thy sinews.

I BR. Why prithee, Shepherd,  
How dost thou then thyself approach so near,  
As to make this relation ?

SPIR. Care and utmost shifts  
How to secure the Lady from surprisal,  
Brought to my mind a certain shepherd lad,  
Of small regard to see to, yet well skilled  
In every virtuous plant and healing herb,  
That spreads her verdant leaf to th' morning ray :  
He loved me well, and oft would beg me sing,  
Which when I did, he on the tender grass  
Would sit, and hearken e'en to ecstasy,  
And in requital ope his leathern scrip,  
And show me simples of a thousand names,  
Telling their strange and vigorous faculties :  
Amongst the rest a small unsightly root,  
But of divine effect, he culled me out ;  
The leaf was darkish, and had prickles on it,  
But in another country, as he said,

## Comus

Bore a bright golden flow'r, but not in this soil :  
Unknown, and like esteemed, and the dull swain  
Treads on it daily with his clouted<sup>1</sup> shoon,  
And yet more medicinal is it than that moly  
That Hermes once to wise Ulysses gave ;  
He called it hæmony, and gave it me,  
And bade me keep it as of sovereign use  
'Gainst all enchantments, mildew, blast, or damp,  
Or ghastly furies' apparition.

I pursed it up, but little reck'ning made,  
Till now that this extremity compelled.  
But now I find it true ; for by this means  
I knew the foul enchanter though disguised,  
Entered the very lime-twigs of his spells,  
And yet came off : if you have this about you,  
(As I will give you when we go) you may  
Boldly assault the necromancer's hall ;  
Where if he be, with dauntless hardihood,  
And brandished blade rush on him, break his glass,  
And shed the luscious liquor on the ground.  
But seize his wand ; though he and his cursed crew  
Fierce sign of battle make, and menace high,  
Or like the sons of Vulcan vomit smoke,  
Yet will they soon retire, if he but shrink.

1 BR. Thyrsis, lead on apace, I'll follow thee,  
And some good Angel bear a shield before us.

The Scene changes to a stately palace, set out with all manner of deliciousness ; soft music, tables spread with all dainties. Comus appears with his rabble, and the Lady set in an enchanted chair, to whom he offers his glass, which she puts by, and goes about to rise.

COM Nay, Lady, sit ; if I but wave this wand,  
Your nerves are all chained up in alabaster,  
And you a statue, or, as Daphne was,  
Root-bound, that fled Apollo.

LAD. Fool, do not boast,  
Thou canst not touch the freedom of my mind  
With all thy charms, although this corporal rind  
Thou hast immanacled, while Heav'n sees good.

<sup>1</sup> Clouts were thin and narrow plates of iron, affixed with hobnails to the shoes of rustics.

## Comus

COM. Why are you vext, Lady? why do you frown?  
Here dwell no frowns, nor anger; from these gates  
Sorrow flies far. See, here be all the pleasures  
That fancy can beget on youthful thoughts,  
When the fresh blood grows lively, and returns  
Brisk as the April buds in primrose-season.  
And first behold this cordial julep here,  
That flames, and dances in his crystal bounds,  
With spirits of balm, and fragrant syrups mixed.  
Not that Nepenthes,<sup>1</sup> which the wife of Thone  
In Egypt gave to Jove-born Helena,  
Is of such power to stir up joy as this,  
To life so friendly, or so cool to thirst.  
Why should you be so cruel to yourself,  
And to those dainty limbs which Nature lent  
For gentle usage, and soft delicacy?  
But you invert the covenants of her trust,  
And harshly deal, like an ill borrower,  
With that which you received on other terms;  
Scorning the unexempt condition  
By which all mortal frailty must subsist,  
Refreshment after toil, ease after pain,  
That have been tired all day without repast,  
And timely rest have wanted; but, fair Virgin,  
This will restore all soon.

LAD. 'Twill not, false traitor,  
'Twill not restore the truth and honesty  
That thou hast banish'd from thy tongue with lies.  
Was this the Cottage, and the safe abode  
Thou toldst me of? What grim aspects are these,  
These ugly-headed monsters? Mercy guard me!  
Hence with thy brewed enchantments, foul deceiver!  
Hast thou betrayed my credulous innocence  
With visored falsehood and base forgery?  
And would'st thou seek again to trap me here  
With liquorish baits fit to ensnare a brute?  
Were it a draught for Juno when she banquets,  
I would not taste thy treasonous offer; none  
But such as are good men can give good things,

<sup>1</sup> See Pope's *Odyssey*, IV. 301. Probably opium.

## Comus

And that which is not good, is not delicious  
To a well-governed and wise appetite.

COM. O foolishness of men ! that lend their ears  
To those budge<sup>1</sup> doctors of the Stoic fur,  
And fetch their precepts from the Cynic tub,  
Praising the lean and sallow Abstinence.  
Wherefore did Nature pour her bounties forth,  
With such a full and unwithdrawing hand,  
Covering the earth with odours, fruits, and flocks,  
Thronging the seas with spawn innumerable,  
But all to please, and sate the curious taste ?  
And set to work millions of spinning worms,  
That in their green shops weave the smooth-haired silk  
To deck her sons ; and that no corner might  
Be vacant of her plenty, in her own loins  
She hatched<sup>2</sup> the all-worshipped ore, and precious gems,  
To store her children with : if all the world  
Should in a pet of temp'rance feed on pulse,  
Drink the clear stream, and nothing wear but frieze,  
Th' All-giver would be unthanked, would be unpraised,  
Not half his riches known, and yet despised ;  
And we should serve him as a grudging master,  
As a penurious niggard of his wealth ;  
And live like Nature's bastards, not her sons,  
Who would be quite surcharged with her own weight,  
And strangled with her waste fertility ;  
Th' earth cumbered, and the winged air darked with  
plumes,  
The herds would over-multitude their lords,  
The sea o'erfraught would swell, and th' unsought  
diamonds  
Would so emblaze the forehead of the deep,  
And so bestud with stars, that they below  
Would grow inured to light, and come at last  
To gaze upon the sun with shameless brows.  
List, Lady, be not coy, and be not cozened  
With that same vaunted name Virginity.  
Beauty is Nature's coin, must not be hoarded,

<sup>1</sup> Budge is lamb's fur, formerly an ornament of scholastic habits.

<sup>2</sup> Hoarded.

## Comus

But must be current, and the good thereof  
Consists in mutual and partaken bliss,  
Unsavoury in th' enjoyment of itself ;  
If you let slip time, like a neglected rose  
It withers on the stalk with languished head.  
Beauty is Nature's brag, and must be shown  
In courts, at feasts, and high solemnities,  
Where most may wonder at the workmanship ;  
It is for homely features to keep home,  
They had their name thence ; coarse complexions,  
And cheeks of sorry grain, will serve to ply  
The sampler, and to tease the huswife's wool.  
What need a vermeil-tinctured lip for that,  
Love-darting eyes, or tresses like the morn ?  
There was another meaning in these gifts,  
Think what, and be advised, you are but young yet.

LAD. I had not thought to have unlocked my lips  
In this unhallowed air, but that this juggler  
Would think to charm my judgment, as mine eyes,  
Obtruding false rules pranked in reason's garb.  
I hate when vice can bolt her arguments,  
And virtue has no tongue to check her pride.  
Impostor, do not charge most innocent Nature,  
As if she would her children should be riotous  
With her abundance ; she, good cateress,  
Means her provision only to the good,  
That live according to her sober laws,  
And holy dictate of spare temperance.  
If every just man, that now pines with want,  
Had but a moderate and be seeming share  
Of that which lewdly-pampered luxury  
Now heaps upon some few with vast excess,  
Nature's full blessings would be well dispensed  
In unsuperfluous even proportion,  
And she no whit incumbered with her store ;  
And then the giver would be better thanked,  
His praise due paid ; for swinish gluttony  
Ne'er looks to heav'n amidst his gorgeous feast,  
But with besotted base ingratitude  
Crams, and blasphemes his feeder. Shall I go on ?

## Comus

Or have I said enough? To him that dares  
Arm his profane tongue with contemptuous words  
Against the sun-clad power of Chastity,  
Fain would I something say,—yet to what end?  
Thou hast nor ear, nor soul to apprehend  
The sublime notion, and high mystery,  
That must be uttered to unfold the sage  
And serious doctrine of Virginity;  
And thou art worthy that thou shouldst not know  
More happiness than this thy present lot.  
Enjoy your dear wit, and gay rhetoric,  
That hath so well been taught her dazzling fence,  
Thou art not fit to hear thyself convinced;  
Yet should I try, the uncontroll'd worth  
Of this pure cause would kindle my rapt spirits  
To such a flame of sacred vehemence,  
That dumb things would be moved to sympathize,  
And the brute earth would lend her nerves, and  
shake,  
Till all thy magic structures reared so high,  
Were shattered into heaps o'er thy false head.

COM. She fables not, I feel that I do fear  
Her words set off by some superior power:  
And though not mortal, yet a cold shudd'ring dew  
Dips me all o'er, as when the wrath of Jove  
Speaks thunder, and the chains of Erebus,  
To some of Saturn's crew. I must dissemble,  
And try her yet more strongly. Come, no more,  
This is mere moral babble, and direct  
Against the canon-laws of our foundation;  
I must not suffer this, yet 'tis but the lees  
And settlings of a melancholy blood:  
But this will cure all straight; one sip of this  
Will bathe the drooping spirits in delight,  
Beyond the bliss of dreams. Be wise, and taste.—

The Brothers rush in with swords drawn, wrest his glass out of his hand, and break it against the ground; his rout make sign of resistance, but are all driven in. The attendant Spirit comes in.

SPIR. What, have you let the false enchanter 'scape?  
O ye mistook, ye should have snatched his wand,

## Comus

And bound him fast ; without his rod reversed,  
And backward mutters of dissevering power,  
We cannot free the Lady that sits here  
In stony fetters fixed, and motionless.  
Yet stay, be not disturbed : now I bethink me,  
Some other means I have which may be used,  
Which once of Melibœus old I learnt,  
The soothest shepherd that e'er piped on plains.

There is a gentle nymph not far from hence,  
That with moist curb sways the smooth Severn  
stream,

Sabrina is her name, a virgin pure ;  
Whilom she was the daughter of Locrine,  
That had the sceptre from his father Brute.  
She, guiltless damsel, flying the mad pursuit  
Of her enraged stepdame Guendolen,  
Commended her fair innocence to the flood,  
That stayed her flight with his cross-flowing course.  
The water nymphs that in the bottom played,  
Held up their pearlèd wrists, and took her in,  
Bearing her straight to aged Nereus' hall,  
Who pitcous of her woes, reared her lank head,  
And gave her to his daughters to imbathe  
In nectared lavers strowed with asphodel,  
And through the porch and inlet of each sense  
Dropped in ambrosial oils, till she revived,  
And underwent a quick immortal change,  
Made Goddess of the river. Still she retains  
Her maiden gentleness, and oft at eve  
Visits the herds along the twilight meadows,  
Helping all urchin blasts, and ill-luck signs  
That the shrewd meddling elf delights to make,  
Which she with precious vialèd liquors heals.  
For which the shepherds at their festivals  
Carol her goodness loud in rustic lays,  
And throw sweet garland wreaths into her stream  
Of pansies, pinks, and gaudy daffodils.  
And, as the old swain said, she can unlock  
The clasping charm, and thaw the numbing spell  
If she be right invoked in warbled song ;



## Comus

For maidenhood she loves, and will be swift  
To aid a virgin, such as was herself,  
In hard-besetting need ; this will I try,  
And add the power of some adjuring verse.

### SONG.

Sabrina fair,  
    Listen where thou art sitting  
Under the glassy, cool, translucent wave,  
    In twisted braids of lilies knitting  
The loose train of thy amber-dropping hair ;  
    Listen for dear honour's sake,  
Goddess of the silver lake,  
    Listen and save.  
Listen and appear to us  
In name of great Oceanus.  
By th' earth-shaking Neptune's mace,  
And Tethys'<sup>1</sup> grave majestic pace,  
By hoary Nereus' wrinkled look,  
And the Carpathian wizard's hook,<sup>2</sup>  
By scaly Triton's<sup>3</sup> winding shell,  
And old soothsaying Glaucus'<sup>4</sup> spell,  
By Leucothea's<sup>5</sup> lovely hands,  
And her son that rules the strands,<sup>6</sup>  
By Thetis'<sup>7</sup> tinsel-slippered feet,  
And the songs of Sirens sweet,  
By dead Parthenope's dear tomb,  
And fair Ligea's golden comb,<sup>8</sup>  
Wherewith she sits on diamond rocks,  
Sleeking her soft alluring locks ;

<sup>1</sup> The wife of Oceanus.

<sup>2</sup> Proteus, who had a cave in Carpathus, an island of the Mediterranean. He was a wizard, a prophet, and Neptune's shepherd, and therefore held a crook.

<sup>3</sup> Neptune's trumpeter.

<sup>4</sup> Glaucus, an excellent diver, was made a sea-god. He was a prophet, and is said to have taught Apollo to prophesy.

<sup>5</sup> Leucothea, *i.e.* the white goddess. She was Ino, who, flying from her mad husband, Athamas, cast herself and her child into the sea. Neptune, at the entreaty of Venus, changed both into sea-deities, and gave her the new name of Leucothea.

<sup>6</sup> Palaemon, the infant in her arms when she sprang into the sea.

<sup>7</sup> A sea-goddess, called by Homer *silver-footed*.

<sup>8</sup> Parthenope and Ligea were two of the Syrens.

## Comus

By all the nymphs that nightly dance  
Upon thy streams with wily glance,  
Rise, rise, and heave thy rosy head  
From thy coral-paven bed,  
And bridle in thy headlong wave,  
Till thou our summons answered have.  
Listen and save.

Sabrina rises, attended by water-nymphs, and sings.

By the rushy-fringed bank,  
Where grows the willow and the osier dank,  
My sliding chariot stays,  
Thick set with agate, and the azure sheen  
Of turkis blue, and emerald green,  
That in the channel strays ;  
Whilst from off the waters fleet,  
Thus I set my printless feet  
O'er the cowslip's velvet head,  
That bends not as I tread ;  
Gentle Swain, at thy request  
I am here.

SPR. Goddess dear,  
We implore thy pow'rful hand  
To undo the charmed band  
Of true virgin here distressed,  
Through the force, and through the wile  
Of unblest enchanter vile.

SABR. Shepherd, 'tis my office best  
To help insnared chastity :  
Brightest Lady, look on me ;  
Thus I sprinkle on thy breast  
Drops that from my fountain pure  
I have kept of precious cure,  
Thrice upon thy finger's tip,  
Thrice upon thy rubied lip ;  
Next this marble venom'd seat,  
Smeared with gums of glutinous heat,  
I touch with chaste palms moist and cold :  
Now the spell hath lost his hold ;

## Comus

And I must haste ere morning hour  
To wait in Amphitrite's bower.

*Sabrina descends, and the Lady rises out of her seat*

SPR. Virgin, daughter of Locrine,  
Sprung of old Anchises' line,<sup>1</sup>  
May thy brimmèd waves for this  
Their full tribute never miss  
From a thousand petty rills,  
That tumble down the snowy hills ;  
Summer drouth, or singèd air  
Never scorch thy tresses fair,  
Nor wet October's torrent flood  
Thy molten crystal fill with mud ;  
May thy billows roll ashore  
The beryl, and the golden ore ;  
May thy lofty head be crowned  
With many a tow'r and terrace round,  
And here and there thy banks upon  
With groves of myrrh and cinnamon.

Come, Lady, while Heav'n lends us grace,  
Let us fly this cursèd place,  
Lest the sorcerer us entice  
With some other new device.  
Not a waste, or needless sound,  
Till we come to holier ground ;  
I shall be your faithful guide  
Through this gloomy covert wide,  
And not many furlongs thence  
Is your Father's residence,  
Where this night are met in state  
Many a friend to gratulate  
His wished presence, and beside  
All the swains that there abide,  
With jigs, and rural dance resort ;  
We shall catch them at their sport,  
And our sudden coming there  
Will double all their mirth and cheer ;  
Come, let us haste, the stars grow high,  
But night sits monarch yet in the mid sky.

*Locrine was the fabled son of Brutus, the great-grandson of Eneas.*

# Comus

The Scene changes, presenting Ludlow town and the President's castle ; then come in country dancers, after them the attendant Spirit, with the two Brothers, and the Lady

## SONG.

SPIR. Back, Shepherds, back, enough your play  
Till next sunshine holiday ;  
Here be, without duck or nod,  
Other trippings to be trod  
Of lighter toes, and such court guise  
As Mercury did first devise,  
With the mincing Dryades,  
On the lawns, and on the leas.

This second Song presents them to their Father and Mother.

Noble Lord, and Lady bright,  
I have brought ye new delight,  
Here behold so goodly grown  
Three fair branches of your own ;  
Heav'n hath timely tried their youth,  
Their faith, their patience, and their truth,  
And sent them here through hard assays  
With a crown of deathless praise,  
To triumph in victorious dance  
O'er sensual folly, and intemperance.

The dances ended, the Spirit epiloguises.

SPIR. To the ocean now I fly,  
And those happy climes that lie  
Where day never shuts his eye,  
Up in the broad fields of the sky :  
There I suck the liquid air  
All amidst the gardens fair  
Of Hesperus, and his daughters three  
That sing about the golden tree :<sup>1</sup>  
Along the crispèd shades and bowers  
Revels the spruce and jocund Spring,

<sup>1</sup> The daughters of Hesperus, the brother of Atlas, had gardens, or orchards, which produced apples of gold.

## Comus

The Graces, and the rosy-bosom'd Hours,  
'Thither all their bounties bring ;  
There eternal Summer dwells,  
And west-winds, with musky wing,  
About the cedarn alleys fling  
Nard and cassia's balmy smells.  
Iris there with humid bow  
Waters the odorous banks, that blow  
Flowers of more mingled hue  
Than her purpled scarf can shew,  
And drenches with Elysian dew  
(List mortals, if your ears be true)  
Beds of hyacinth and roses,  
Where young Adonis oft reposes,  
Waxing well of his deep wound  
In slumber soft, and on the ground  
Sadly sits th' Assyrian queen ;<sup>1</sup>  
But far above in spangled sheen  
Celestial Cupid her famed son advanced,  
Holds his dear Psyche sweet intranced,  
After her wand'ring labours long,  
Till free consent the gods among  
Make her his eternal bride,  
And from her fair unspotted side  
Two blissful twins are to be born,  
Youth and Joy ; so Jove hath sworn.  
But now my task is smoothly done,  
I can fly, or I can run  
Quickly to the green earth's end,  
Where the bowed welkin slow doth bend,  
And from thence can soar as soon  
To the corners of the moon.

Mortals, that would follow me,  
Love Virtue, she alone is free,  
She can teach ye how to climb  
Higher than the sphery chime :  
Or, if Virtue feeble were,  
Heav'n itself would stoop to her.

<sup>1</sup> Venus ; so called because she was worshipped by the Assyrians.  
See OVID, *Metam.* IX. l. 36.

## LYCIDAS.

1637.

In this Monody the author bewails a learned friend,<sup>1</sup> unfortunately drowned in his passage from Chester on the Irish seas, 1637; and by occasion foretells the ruin of our corrupted clergy, then in their height.

YET once more, O ye laurels, and once more  
 Ye myrtles brown, with ivy never sere,  
 I come to pluck your berries harsh and crude,  
 And with forced fingers rude,  
 Shatter your leaves before the mellowing year.  
 Bitter constraint, and sad occasion dear,  
 Compels me to disturb your season due:  
 For Lycidas is dead, dead ere his prime,  
 Young Lycidas, and hath not left his peer.  
 Who would not sing for Lycidas? He knew  
 Himself to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.  
 He must not float upon his watery bier  
 Unwept, and welter to the parching wind,  
 Without the meed of some melodious tear.  
 Begin then, Sisters of the sacred well,  
 That from beneath the seat of Jove doth spring,  
 Begin, and somewhat loudly sweep the string.  
 Hence with denial vain, and coy excuse,  
 So may some gentle Muse  
 With lucky words favour my destined urn,  
 And as he passes turn,  
 And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.  
 For we were nursed upon the self-same hill,<sup>2</sup>  
 Fed the same flock by fountain, shade, and rill.  
 Together both, ere the high lawns appeared  
 Under the opening eyelids of the morn,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Edward King, the friend of Milton, whose early death is bewailed in this poem, was the son of Sir John King, Secretary for Ireland under Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I. On his voyage to Ireland, to visit his family, his ship struck on a rock on the English coast, and he perished in the sea. He was distinguished for his piety and talents, and was a fellow of Christ Church, Cambridge.

<sup>2</sup> King was at Cambridge with Milton.

<sup>3</sup> See marginal reading of "Neither let it see the dawning of the day," Job iii. 9.

# Lycidas

We drove afield, and both together heard  
What time the gray-fly winds her sultry horn,<sup>1</sup>  
Batt'ning our flocks with the fresh dews of night,  
Oft till the star that rose, at evening, bright,  
'Toward heav'n's descent had sloped his west'ring wheel.  
Meanwhile the rural ditties were not mute,  
'Tempered to the oaten flute,

Rough Satyrs danced, and Fauns with cloven heel  
From the glad sound would not be absent long,  
And old Damoetas<sup>2</sup> loved to hear our song.

But, O the heavy change, now thou art gone,  
Now thou art gone, and never must return !  
Thee, Shepherd, thee the woods, and desert caves  
With wild thyme and the gadding vine o'ergrown,  
And all their echoes mourn.

The willows, and the hazel copses green,  
Shall now no more be seen,  
Fanning their joyous leaves to thy soft lays.  
As killing as the canker to the rose,  
Or taint-worm to the weanling herds that graze,  
Or frost to flow'rs, that their gay wardrobe wear,  
When first the white-thorn blows ;  
Such, Lycidas, thy loss to shepherd's ear.

Where were ye, Nymphs, when the remorseless deep  
Closed o'er the head of your loved Lycidas ?  
For neither were ye playing on the steep,  
Where your old Bards, the famous Druids, lie,<sup>3</sup>  
Nor on the shaggy top of Mona high,<sup>4</sup>  
Nor yet where Deva<sup>5</sup> spreads her wizard stream :  
Ay me ! I fondly dream !  
Had ye been there, for what could that have done ?  
What could the Muse herself that Orpheus bore,<sup>6</sup>  
The Muse herself for her enchanting son,  
Whom universal nature did lament,

<sup>1</sup> The trumpet-fly. Its hum is loudest at noon.

<sup>2</sup> Probably their tutor, Dr. Chappell.

<sup>3</sup> The Druids' sepulchres were at Kerig-y-Druidion, in the mountains of Denbighshire.

<sup>4</sup> The Isle of Anglesea.

<sup>5</sup> The Dee, said by Spenser to be the haunt of magicians. These places were all near the Irish Sea, where Lycidas embarked for Ireland.

<sup>6</sup> Calliope was the mother of Orpheus.

# Lycidas

When by the rout that made the hideous roar,<sup>1</sup>  
His gory visage down the stream was sent,  
Down the swift Hebrus to the Lesbian shore?  
Alas! what boots it with incessant care  
To tend the homely slighted shepherd's trade,  
And strictly meditate the thankless Muse?  
Were it not better done as others use,  
To sport with Amaryllis in the shade,  
Or with the tangles of Neæra's hair?  
Fame is the spur that the clear spirit doth raise  
(That last infirmity of noble mind)  
To scorn delights, and live laborious days;  
But the fair guerdon when we hope to find,  
And think to burst out into sudden blaze,  
Comes the blind Fury with the abhorrèd shears,  
And slits the thin-spun life. "But not the praise,"  
Phœbus replied, and touched my trembling ears;  
"Fame is no plant that grows on mortal soil,  
Nor in the glist'ning foil  
Set off to the world, nor in broad rumour lies;  
But lives and spreads aloft by those pure eyes,  
And perfect witness of all-judging Jove;  
As he pronounces lastly on each deed,  
Of so much fame in heav'n expect thy meed."  
O fountain Arethuse, and thou honoured flood,  
Smooth-sliding Mincius,<sup>2</sup> crowned with vocal reeds,  
That strain I heard was of a higher mood:  
But now my oat proceeds,  
And listens to the herald of the sea  
That came in Neptune's plea;  
He asked the waves, and asked the felon winds,  
What hard mishap hath doomed this gentle swain?  
And questioned every gust of rugged wings  
That blows from off each beakèd promontory:  
They knew not of his story,  
And sage Hippotades their answer brings,<sup>3</sup>  
That not a blast was from his dungeon strayed,  
The air was calm, and on the level brine

<sup>1</sup> The Bacchanalians.

<sup>2</sup> Near Mantua.

<sup>3</sup> Eolus (the East Wind) was the son of Hippotades.



# Lycidas

Sleek Panope with all her sisters played.

It was that fatal and perfidious bark,  
Built in th' eclipse, and rigged with curses dark,  
That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

Next Camus,<sup>1</sup> reverend sire, went footing slow,  
His mantle hairy, and his bonnet sedge,  
Inwrought with figures dim, and on the edge  
Like to that sanguine flow'r inscribed with woe.<sup>2</sup>  
"Ah! Who hath reft" (quoth he) "my dearest  
pledge?"

Last came, and last did go,  
The pilot of the Galilean lake.<sup>3</sup>

Two massy keys he bore of metals twain,  
(The golden opes, the iron shuts amain)  
He shook his mitred locks, and stern bespake,  
"How well could I have spared for thee, young swain,<sup>4</sup>  
Enow of such as for their bellies' sake  
Creep, and intrude, and climb into the fold!  
Of other care they little reckoning make,  
Than how to scramble at the shearers' feast,  
And shove away the worthy bidden guest;  
Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to  
hold

A sheep-hook, or have learned aught else the least  
That to the faithful herdsman's art belongs!  
What recks it them? What need they? They are  
sped;

And when they list, their lean and flashy songs  
Grate on their scrannel<sup>5</sup> pipes of wretched straw;  
The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,  
But swoln with wind, and the rank mist they draw,  
Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread;  
Besides what the grim wolf with privy paw  
Daily devours apace, and nothing said;  
But that two-handed engine at the door  
Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more."

<sup>1</sup> The Cam.

<sup>2</sup> The hyacinth; supposed to bear the letters Ai-Ai, put on it by Apollo in memory of his grief for Hyacinthus. See note at p. 30.

<sup>3</sup> "The pilot of the Galilean lake" is St. Peter.

<sup>4</sup> King intended to take orders in the Church of England.

<sup>5</sup> "Thin, lean, meagre."—T. WARTON.

## Lycidas

Return, Alpheus, the dread voice is past,  
That shrunk thy streams ; return, Sicilian Muse,  
And call the vales, and bid them hither cast  
Their bells, and flow'rets of a thousand hues.  
Ye valleys low, where the mild whispers use  
Of shades, and wanton winds, and gushing brooks  
On whose fresh lap the swart-star sparely looks :  
Throw hither all your quaint enamelled eyes,  
That on the green turf suck the honied showers,  
And purple all the ground with vernal flowers.  
Bring the rathe primrose that forsaken dies,  
The tufted crow-toe, and pale jessamine,  
The white pink, and the pansy freaked with jet,  
The glowing violet,  
The musk-rose, and the well-attired woodbine,  
With cowslips wan that hang the pensive head,  
And every flower that sad embroidery wears.  
Bid amaranthus all his beauty shed,  
And daffodillies fill their cups with tears,  
To strow the laureate hearse where Lycid lies.  
For so to interpose a little ease,  
Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise.  
Ay me ! Whilst thee the shores, and sounding seas  
Wash far away, where'er thy bones are hurled,  
Whether beyond the stormy Hebrides,  
Where thou perhaps under the whelming tide,  
Visit'st the bottom of the monstrous world ;  
Or whether thou to our moist vows denied,  
Sleep'st by the fable of Bellerus old,<sup>1</sup>  
Where the great vision of the guarded mount<sup>2</sup>  
Looks toward Namancos<sup>3</sup> and Bayona's hold.<sup>3</sup>  
Look homeward, Angel, now, and melt with ruth.  
And, O ye dolphins, waft the hapless youth.  
Weep no more, woful Shepherds, weep no more,  
For Lycidas your sorrow is not dead,  
Sunk though he be beneath the watery floor.

<sup>1</sup> Bellerus, a Cornish giant.

<sup>2</sup> Mount St. Michael, near the Land's End, Cornwall, supposed to be guarded by St. Michael, the archangel.

<sup>3</sup> In an atlas of 1623, and in a map of Galicia, near Cape Finisterre, is marked a place called Namancos. In this map, also, is marked the castle of Bayona.

# Lycidas

So sinks the day-star in the ocean bed,  
And yet anon repairs his drooping head,  
And tricks his beams, and with new spangled ore  
Flames in the forehead of the morning sky;  
So Lycidas sunk low, but mounted high,  
Thro' the dear night of Him that walked the waves  
Where other groves, and other streams along,  
With nectar pure his oozy locks he laves,  
And hears the unexpressive nuptial song,  
In the blest kingdoms meek of joy and love.  
There entertain him all the saints above,  
In solemn troops, and sweet societies,  
That sing, and singing in their glory move,  
And wipe the tears for ever from his eyes.  
Now, Lycidas, the shepherds weep no more;  
Henceforth thou art the genius of the shore,  
In thy large recompense, and shalt be good  
To all that wander in that perilous flood.

Thus sang the uncouth swain to the oaks and rills,  
While the still morn went out with sandals gray,  
He touched the tender stops of various quills,  
With eager thought warbling his Doric lay:  
And now the sun had stretched out all the hills,  
And now was dropped into the western bay;  
At last he rose, and twitched his mantle blue:  
To-morrow to fresh woods and pastures new.



# Paradise Lost

## THE VERSE OF "PARADISE LOST."

The measure is English Heroic Verse without Rime, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin: Rime being no necessary Adjunct or true Ornament of Poem or good Verse, in longer Works especially, but the Invention of a barbarous Age, to set off wretched matter and lame Meeter, graced indeed since by the use of some famous modern Poets, carried away by Custom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint, to express many things, otherwise, and for the most part worse, then else they would have expressed them. Not without cause, therefore, some both Italian and Spanish Poets of pime note have rejected Rime both in longer and shorter Works, as have also, long since, our best English Tragedies, as a thing of itself, to all judicious eares, trivial and of no true musical delight; which consists only in apt Numbers, fit quantity of Syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoyded by the learned Ancients both in Poetry and all good Oratory. Thus neglect then of Rime, so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar readers, that it rather is to be esteem'd an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recover'd to Heroic Poem from the troublesome and modern bondage of Riming.

From Milton's own Edition, 1669.

## BOOK I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

This First Book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise, wherein he was placed. Then touches the prime cause of his fall, the serpent, or rather Satan in the serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of heaven with all his crew into the great deep. Which action passed over, the Poem hastes into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into hell, described here, not in the centre, for heaven and earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed, but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest called Chaos. Here Satan with his Angels, lying on the burning lake, thunderstruck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him: they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded; they rise; their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in heaven: for that Angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandæmonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep: the infernal Peers therein sit in council.

# Paradise Lost

OF Man's first disobedience and the fruit  
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world and all our woe,  
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man  
Restore us and regain the blissful seat,  
Sing heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire  
That shepherd,<sup>1</sup> who first taught the chosen seed,  
In the beginning how the heav'ns and earth  
Rose out of Chaos. Or if Sion hill  
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flowed  
Fast by the oracle of God, I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,  
That with no middle flight intends to soar  
Above th' Aonian mount,<sup>2</sup> while it pursues  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.

And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer  
Before all temples the upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me, for thou know'st ; thou from the first  
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread  
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,<sup>3</sup>  
And mad'st it pregnant : what in me is dark  
Illumine, what is low raise and support ;  
That to the height of this great argument  
I may assert eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to men.

Say first, for heav'n hides nothing from thy view,  
Nor the deep tract of hell ; say first, what cause  
Moved our grand Parents in that happy state,  
Favoured of heav'n so highly, to fall off  
From their Creator, and transgress His will,  
For one restraint, lords of the world besides ?  
Who first seduced them to that foul revolt ?  
Th' infernal serpent ! he it was, whose guile,  
Stirred up with envy and revenge, deceived  
The mother of mankind, what time his pride  
Had cast him out from heav'n, with all his host

<sup>1</sup> Moses.

<sup>2</sup> A mountain in Bœotia. In mythology, the Muses were said to dwell on it.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. i. 2.

# Paradise Lost

Of rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring  
To set himself in glory above his peers,  
He trusted to have equalled the Most High,<sup>1</sup> 40  
If he opposed ; and with ambitious aim  
Against the throne and monarchy of God  
Raised impious war in heav'n, and battle proud,  
With vain attempt. Him the almighty Power  
Hurled headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,  
With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
To bottomless perdition, there to dwell  
In adamant chains and penal fire,  
Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.  
Nine times the space that measures day and night 50  
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
Lay vanquished, rolling in the fiery gulf,  
Confounded though immortal : but his doom  
Reserved him to more wrath ; for now the thought  
Both of lost happiness and lasting pain  
Torments him ; round he throws his baleful eyes,  
That witnessed huge affliction and dismay,  
Mixed with obdurate pride and steadfast hate ;  
At once, ás far as angels' ken, he views 60  
The dismal situation waste and wild ;  
A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,  
As one great furnace, flamed ; yet from those flames  
No light, but rather darkness visible  
Served only to discover sights of woe,  
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace  
And rest can never dwell, hope never comes,<sup>2</sup>  
That comes to all ; but torture without end  
Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed  
With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed.  
Such place eternal justice had prepared 70  
For those rebellious ; here their prison ordained  
In utter darkness, and their portion set  
As far removed from God and light of heav'n,  
As from the centre thrice to th' utmost pole.

<sup>1</sup> Isa. xiv. 13-15.

<sup>2</sup> "Lasciate ogni speranza voi ch' intrate" was the inscription placed by Dante over the gates of his "Inferno."

## Paradise Lost

O how unlike the place from whence they fell !  
There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelmed  
With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
He soon discerns, and weltring by his side  
One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
Long after known in Palestine, and named 80  
Beëlzebub : <sup>1</sup> To whom th' Arch-enemy,  
(And thence in heav'n call'd Satan, <sup>2</sup>) with bold words  
Breaking the horrid silence, thus began :

" If thou beest he--But O how fall'n ! how changed  
From him, who in the happy realms of light,  
Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine  
Myriads, though bright ! If he, whom mutual league,  
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope  
And hazard in the glorious enterprise,  
Joined with me once, now misery hath joined 90  
In equal ruin : into what pit thou seest  
From what height fall'n, so much the stronger proved  
He with his thunder ; and till then who knew  
The force of those dire arms ? yet not for those,  
Nor what the potent Victor in His rage  
Can else inflict, do I repent, or change,  
Though changed in outward lustre, that fixed mind  
And high disdain from sense of injured merit,  
That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,  
And to the fierce contention brought along 100  
Innumerable force of Spirits armed,  
That durst dislike His reign ; and, me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power opposed  
In dubious battle on the plains of heav'n,  
And shook His throne. What though the field be  
lost ?

All is not lost ; th' unconquerable will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate  
And courage never to submit or yield,

<sup>1</sup> The god of flies, worshipped by the Philistines (2 Kings i. 2). The Jews considered Beelzebub the greatest of the devils. See their accusation of our Lord, St. Matt. xii. 24-27 ; where it appears that with them Beelzebub and "Satan" were anonymous names. Milton makes them two different fallen angels.

<sup>2</sup> Satan is a Hebrew word, signifying "enemy." The enemy both of God and man.

# Paradise Lost

And what is else not to be overcome ;  
That glory never shall His wrath or might  
Extort from me : to bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deify His power.  
Who from the terror of this arm so late  
Doubted His empire, that were low indeed,  
That were an ignominy and shame beneath  
'This downfall ; since by fate the strength of gods  
And this empyreal substance cannot fail ;  
Since through experience of this great event,  
(In arms not worse, in foresight much advanced,)  
We may with more successful hope resolve  
To wage by force or guile eternal war,  
Irreconcilable to our grand foe,  
Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy  
Sole reigning holds the tyranny of heav'n."

So spoke th' apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but racked with deep despair :  
And him thus answered soon his bold compeer :  
"O Prince, O chief of many thronèd Powers,  
That led th' imbattled Seraphim to war  
Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds  
Fearless, endangered heav'n's perpetual King,  
And put to proof His high supremacy ;  
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate,  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
That with sad overthrow and foul defeat  
Hath lost us heav'n, and all this mighty host  
In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
As far as gods and heavenly essences  
Can perish : for the mind and spirit remain  
Invincible, and vigour soon returns,  
Though all our glory extinct, and happy state  
Here swallowed up in endless misery.  
But what if He, our conqueror, whom I now  
Of force believe almighty, since no less  
Than such could have o'erpowered such force as ours,  
Has left us this our spirit and strength entire,  
Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
That we may so suffice His vengeful ire,



## Paradise Lost

Or do Him mightier service, as His thralls  
By right of war, whate'er His business be  
Here in the heart of hell to work in fire, 150  
Or do His errands in the gloomy deep :  
What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
Strength undiminished, or eternal being  
To undergo eternal punishment ? ”

Whereto with speedy words th' Arch-fiend replied :

“ Fall'n Cherub, to be weak is miserable,  
Doing or suffering : but of this be sure,  
To do ought good never will be our task,  
But ever to do ill our sole delight ;  
As being the contrary to His high will, 160  
Whom we resist. If then His providence  
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil ;  
Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
Shall grieve Him, if I fail not, and disturb  
His inmost counsels from their destined aim.  
But see ! the angry Victor hath recalled  
His ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170  
Back to the gates of heav'n : the sulphurous hail  
Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid  
The fiery surge, that from the precipice  
Of heav'n received us falling, and the thunder,  
Winged with red lightning and impetuous rage,  
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
To bellow through the vast and boundless deep ;  
Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn  
Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.  
Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild, 180  
The seat of desolation, void of light,  
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
Casts pale and dreadful ? Thither let us tend  
From off the tossing of these fiery waves ;  
There rest, if any rest can harbour there,  
And, reassembling our afflicted powers,  
Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
Our enemy ; our own loss how repair,

# Paradise Lost

How overcome this dire calamity,  
What reinforcement we may gain from hope, 190  
If not, what resolution from despair."

Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate,  
With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes  
That sparkling blazed ; his other parts besides  
Prone on the flood, extended long and large,  
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
As whom the fables name of monstrous size,  
Titanian, or Earth-born, that warred on Jove,<sup>1</sup>  
Briareus, or Typhon, whom the den  
By ancient Tarsus held, or that sea-beast 200  
Leviathan, which God of all His works  
Created hugest that swim th' ocean stream :  
Him haply slumb'ring on the Norway foam,  
The pilot of some small night-foundered skiff  
Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell,  
With fixèd anchor in his scaly rind,  
Moors by his side under the lee, while night  
Invests the sea, and wishèd morn delays :<sup>2</sup>  
So stretched out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay,  
Chained on the burning lake, nor ever thence 210  
Had risen or heaved his head, but that the will  
And high permission of all-ruling heaven  
Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
That with reiterated crimes he might  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others, and enraged might see  
How all his malice served but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy shown  
On man by him seduced ; but on himself  
Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance poured. 220  
Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
His mighty stature ; on each hand the flames  
Driven backward slope their pointing spires, and rolled  
In billows leave i' th' midst a horrid vale.

<sup>1</sup> The Titans were monstrous giants, said to have made war against the gods. Briareus had a hundred hands. Typhon was the same as Typhoeus, who was imprisoned by Jupiter in a cave near Tarsus, in Cilicia.

<sup>2</sup> The whale is evidently here intended.

## Paradise Lost

Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,  
That felt unusual weight, till on dry land  
He lights, if it were land that ever burned  
With solid, as the lake with liquid, fire ;  
And such appeared in hue, as when the force        230  
Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
Torn from Pelorus,<sup>1</sup> or the shattered side  
Of thund'ring *Ætna*, whose combustible  
And fueled entrails thence conceiving fire,  
Sublimed with mineral fury, aid the winds,  
And leave a singed bottom, all involved  
With stench and smoke : such resting found the sole  
Of unblest feet. Him followed his next mate,  
Both glorying to have 'scaped the Stygian flood,  
As gods, and by their own recovered strength,        240  
Not by the sufferance of supernal power

“Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,”  
Said then the lost Arch-angel, “this the seat  
That we must change for heav'n? this mournful gloom  
For that celestial light? be it so, since He,  
Who now is Sov'reign, can dispose and bid  
What shall be right : farthest from Him is best,  
Whom reason hath equalled, force hath made supreme  
Above His equals. Farewell happy fields,  
Where joy for ever dwells! hail horrors! hail        250  
Infernal world; and thou profoundest hell  
Receive thy new possessor; one who brings  
A mind not to be changed by place or time.  
The mind is its own place, and in itself  
Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n.<sup>2</sup>  
What matter where, if I be still the same,  
And what I should be, all but less than He  
Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built  
Here for His envy, will not drive us hence :        260  
Here we may reign secure, and in my choice

<sup>1</sup> Capo di Faro, in Sicily.

<sup>2</sup> “There's nothing either good or bad, but  
Thinking makes it so.”—SHAKESPEARE.

# Paradise Lost

To reign is worth ambition, though in hell :  
Better to reign in hell, than serve in heav'n.  
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
'Th' associates and copartners of our loss,  
Lie thus astonished on the oblivious pool,  
And call them not to share with us their part  
In this unhappy mansion ; or once more  
With rallied arms to try what may be yet  
Regained in heav'n, or what more lost in hell ?" 270

So Satan spake, and him Beëlzebub  
Thus answered : " Leader of those armies bright,  
Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foiled,  
If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge  
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft  
In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge  
Of battle when it raged, in all assaults  
'Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
New courage and revive, though now they lie  
Gro'ling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280  
As we erewhile, astounded and amazed,  
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth." <sup>1</sup>

He scarce had ceased, when the superior fiend  
Was moving toward the shore ; his ponderous shield  
Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round,  
Behind him cast ; the broad circumference  
Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb  
Through optic glass the Tuscan artist <sup>2</sup> views  
At evening, from the top of P'esele  
Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290  
Rivers or mountains in her spotted globe.  
His spear—to equal which the tallest pine,  
Hewn on Norwegian hills to be the mast  
Of some great Anmiral, were but a wand—  
He walked with to support uneasy steps  
Over the burning marle, not like those steps  
On heaven's azure ; and the torrid clime  
Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire.

<sup>1</sup> Height. High is the old pronunciation, and Milton's mode of spelling.

<sup>2</sup> Galileo. Milton became acquainted with the great astronomer when travelling in Italy. Optic-glass was the name given then and some time after to the telescope.

# Paradise Lost

Nathless he so endured, till on the beach  
 Of that inflamèd sea, he stood, and called 300  
 His legions, Angel forms, who lay entranced,  
 'Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks  
 In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades  
 High overarched embower ; or scattered sedge  
 Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion armed <sup>1</sup>  
 Hath vexed the Red-sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew  
 Busiris <sup>2</sup> and his Memphian chivalry,  
 While with perfidious hatred they pursued  
 The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld  
 From the safe shore their floating carcasses 310  
 And broken chariot wheels : so thick bestrown  
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,  
 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
 He called so loud, that all the hollow deep  
 Of hell resounded : " Princes, Potentates,  
 Warriors, the flow'r of heav'n, once yours, now lost,  
 If such astonishment as this can seize  
 Eternal spirits ; or have ye chosen this place  
 After the toil of battle to repose  
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 320  
 To slumber here, as in the vales of heav'n ?  
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
 To adore the Conqueror ? who now beholds  
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood  
 With scattered arms and ensigns, till anon  
 His swift pursuers from heav'n gates discern  
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down  
 Thus drooping, or with linkèd thunderbolts  
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.  
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n ! " 330

They heard, and were abashed, and up they sprung  
 Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch  
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight

<sup>1</sup> Orion, the constellation of an armed warrior. "Assurgens fluctu nimbosus Orion."—*VIR. ÆN.* I. 539.

<sup>2</sup> The Pharaoh of Exodus xiv.

# Paradise Lost

In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;  
Yet to their General's voice they soon obeyed,  
Innumerable. As when the potent rod  
Of Amram's Son, in Egypt's evil day,  
Waved round the coast up called a pitchy cloud 340  
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,  
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung  
Like night, and darkened all the land of Nile :<sup>1</sup>  
So numberless were those bad angels seen  
Hovering on wing under the cope of hell,  
'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires ;  
Till, at a signal given, th' uplifted spear  
Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
Their course, in even balance down they light  
On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain ; 350  
A multitude like which the populous north  
Poured never from her frozen loins, to pass  
Rhene or the Danaw,<sup>2</sup> when her barbarous sons<sup>3</sup>  
Came like a deluge on the south, and spread  
Beneath Gibraltar to the Libyan sands.  
Forthwith from every squadron and each band  
The heads and leaders thither haste, where stood  
Their great Commander ; God-like shapes and forms  
Excelling human, Princely Dignities,  
And Powers, that erst in heaven sat on thrones ; 360  
Though of their names in heavenly records now  
Be no memorial, blotted out and razed  
By their rebellion from the books of life.<sup>4</sup>  
Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve  
Got them new names ; till wand'ring o'er the earth,  
Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,

<sup>1</sup> Exodus x. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "To pass Rhene or the Danaw." He might have said consistently with his verse, the Rhine or Danube, but he chose the more uncommon names. Rhene, of the Latin, and Danaw, of the German, both which words are used, too, in Spenser.—NEWTON.

<sup>3</sup> "When her barbarous sons," etc. Spenser, describing the same people, has the same simile, *Faerie Queen*, B. II. cant. 1st. 15—

"And overflowed all countries far away,  
Like Noye's great flood, with their importune sway."

They were the Goths, and Huns, and Vandals, who overran all the southern provinces of Europe.

<sup>4</sup> Psalm ix. 5, 6 ; Rev. iii. 5.

# Paradise Lost

By falsities and lies the greatest part  
Of mankind they corrupted to forsake  
God their creator, and the invisible  
Glory of Him that made them to transform 370  
Oft to the image of a brute, adorned  
With gay religions full of pomp and gold,  
And Devils to adore for Deities :<sup>1</sup>  
Then were they known to men by various names,  
And various idols through the heathen world.

Say, Muse, their names then known, who first, who last,  
Roused from the slumber on that fiery couch  
At their great Emperor's call, as next in worth,  
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof. 380  
The chief were those, who, from the pit of hell  
Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
Their seats long after next the seat of God,  
Their altars by His altar, gods adored  
Among the nations round, and durst abide  
Jehovah thund'ring out of Sion, throned  
Between the Cherubim ; yea, often placed  
Within His sanctuary itself their shrines,  
Abominations ;<sup>2</sup> and with cursèd things  
His holy rites and solemn feasts profaned, 390  
And with their darkness durst affront His light.  
First Moloch, horrid King,<sup>3</sup> besmeared with blood  
Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears,  
Though for the noise of drums and timbrels loud  
Their children's cries unheard, that past through fire  
To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite  
Worshipped in Rabbah and her wat'ry plain,  
In Argob, and in Basan, to the stream  
Of utmost Arnon. Nor content with such  
Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400  
Of Solomon he led by fraud to build  
His temple right against the temple of God,  
On that opprobrious hill,<sup>4</sup> and made his grove  
The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence

<sup>1</sup> Levit. xvii. 7 ; Psalm cvi. 37.

<sup>2</sup> The word *Moloch* means *king*.

<sup>3</sup> Ezek. viii. 15, 16.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Kings xi. 7.

# Paradise Lost

And black Gehenna called,<sup>1</sup> the type of hell.<sup>2</sup>  
Next Chemos,<sup>3</sup> th' obscene dread of Moab's sons,  
From Aroer to Nebo, and the wild  
Of southmost Abarim ; in Hesebon  
And Heronaim, Seon's realm, beyond  
The flow'ry dale of Sibma clad with vines, 410  
And Eleale, to th' Asphaltic pool :  
Peor his other name, when he enticed  
Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,  
To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged  
Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
Of Moloch homicide,—lust hard by hate :—  
Till good Josiah<sup>4</sup> drove them thence to hell.  
With these came they, who, from the bord'ring flood  
Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts 420  
Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names  
Of Baalim and Ashtaroth,<sup>5</sup> those male,  
These feminine : for spirits when they please  
Can either sex assume, or both ; so soft  
And uncompounded is their essence pure ;  
Nor tied or manacled with joint or limb,  
Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
Like cumbrous flesh ; but in what shape they choose  
Dilated or condensed, bright or obscure,  
Can execute their aery purposes, 430  
And works of love or enmity fulfil.  
For those the race of Israel oft forsook  
Their living Strength, and unfrequented left  
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
To bestial gods ; for which their heads as low  
Bowed down in battle, sunk before the spear  
Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians called  
Astarte, queen of heaven, with crescent horns ;

<sup>1</sup> It was called *Tophet* from *toph*, a drum, the noise of drums being employed to drown the cries of the poor babes offered to the idol.

<sup>2</sup> So used by our Lord.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Kings xi. 7.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Kings xxiii.

<sup>5</sup> Frequently named together in Scripture. They were the sun, Baal ; the moon, Astaroth ; and the stars ; *im* being the plural termination of the name Baal.



## Paradise Lost

To whose bright image nightly by the moon 440  
 Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs,  
 In Sion also not unsung, where stood  
 Her temple on the offensive mountain, built  
 By that uxorious king, whose heart though large,  
 Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell  
 To idols foul. Thammuz<sup>1</sup> came next behind,  
 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured  
 The Syrian damsels to lament his fate  
 In amorous ditties all a summer's day,  
 While smooth Adonis from his native rock 450  
 Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood  
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the love-tale  
 Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
 Ezekiel saw,<sup>2</sup> when by the vision led  
 His eyes surveyed the dark idolatries  
 Of alienated Judah. Next came one  
 Who mourned in earnest, when the captive ark  
 Maimed his brute image, head and hands lopt off  
 In his own temple, on the grunsel<sup>3</sup> edge, 460  
 Where he fell flat, and shamed his worshippers:  
 Dagon his name; <sup>4</sup> sea monster, upward man  
 And downward fish: yet had his temple high  
 Reared in Azotus, dreaded through the coast  
 Of Palestine, in Gath, and Ascalon,  
 And Accaron, and Gaza's frontier bounds.  
 Him followed Rimmon,<sup>5</sup> whose delightful seat  
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks  
 Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.

<sup>1</sup> Adonis. See Maundrell's *Travels*, p. 34. "We had the fortune to see what may be supposed to be the occasion of that opinion which Lucian relates concerning this river (the Adonis; called by the Turks, Ibrahim Bassa), viz. that this stream, at certain seasons of the year, especially about the feast of Adonis, is of a bloody colour; which the Heathens looked upon as proceeding from a kind of sympathy in the river for the death of Adonis. Something like this we saw, actually came to pass; for the water was stained to a surprising redness, and, as we observed in travelling, had discoloured the sea a great way into a reddish hue, occasioned, doubtless, by a sort of minium, or red earth, washed into the river by the violence of the rain, and not by any stain from Adonis' blood."

<sup>2</sup> Ezek. viii. 12.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Sam. v. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Threshold, *grunsel*.

<sup>5</sup> A Syrian god.

## Paradise Lost

He also against the house of God was bold : 470  
 A leper once he lost,<sup>1</sup> and gained a king,  
 Ahaz his sottish conqueror, whom he drew  
 God's altar to disparage,<sup>2</sup> and displace  
 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn  
 His odious off'rings, and adore the gods  
 Whom he had vanquished. After these appeared  
 A crew, who under names of old renown,  
 Osiris, Isis, Orus,<sup>3</sup> and their train,  
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abused  
 Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek 480  
 Their wand'ring Gods disguised in brutish forms,<sup>4</sup>  
 Rather than human. Nor did Israel 'scape  
 Th' infection, when their borrowed gold composed  
 The calf in Oreb ;<sup>5</sup> and the rebel king  
 Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan,  
 Lik'ning his Maker to the grazèd ox,<sup>6</sup>  
 Jehovah, who in one night, when He passed  
 From Egypt marching, equalled with one stroke  
 Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.  
 Belial<sup>7</sup> came last, than whom a spirit more lewd 490  
 Fell not from heaven, or more gross to love  
 Vice for itself : to him no temple stood  
 Or altar smoked ; yet who more oft than he  
 In temples and at altars, when the priest  
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who filled  
 With lust and violence the house of God ?  
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,  
 And injury, and outrage : and when night 500  
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.  
 Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night  
 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door  
 Exposed a matron to avoid worse rape.

<sup>1</sup> Naaman. See 2 Kings v. 17.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Kings xvi. 10 ; 2 Chron. xxviii. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Orus was the son of Osiris (the sun) and Isis (the moon).

<sup>4</sup> The sacred calf, the ram, etc.

<sup>5</sup> Ex. xxxii.

<sup>7</sup> The god of luxury.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Kings xii. 28.

# Paradise Lost

These were the prime in order and in might ;  
The rest were long to tell, though far renowned,  
Th' Ionian gods, of Javan's issue,<sup>1</sup> held  
Gods, yet confessed later than heav'n and earth,  
Their boasted parents. Titan, heav'n's first-born, 510  
With his enormous brood and birthright seized  
By younger Saturn, he from mightier Jove,  
His own and Rhea's son, like measure found ;  
So Jove usurping reigned : these first in Crete  
And Ida known :<sup>2</sup> thence on the snowy top  
Of cold Olympus ruled the middle air,  
Their highest heaven ; or on the Delphian cliff<sup>3</sup>  
Or in Dodona,<sup>4</sup> and through all the bounds  
Of Doric land ; or who with Saturn old  
Fled over Adria to th' Hesperian fields, 520  
And o'er the Celtic roamed the utmost isles.<sup>5</sup>

All these and more came flocking ; but with looks  
Down-cast and damp, yet such wherein appeared  
Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their  
chief

Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost  
In loss itself ; which on his count'nance cast  
Like doubtful hue : but he, his wonted pride  
Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
Semblance of worth not substance, gently raised  
Their fainting courage, and dispelled their fears. 530  
Then straight commands, that at the warlike sound  
Of trumpets loud and clarions be upreared  
His mighty standard : that proud honour claimed  
Azazel<sup>6</sup> as his right, a cherub tall ;  
Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurled  
Th' imperial ensign, which, full high advanced,

<sup>1</sup> Javan, the fourth son of Japhet, was supposed to have settled Ionia, in the south-west part of Asia Minor.

<sup>2</sup> Jupiter was said to have been born on Mount Ida, in the island of Crete (now Candia). He and the other Greek gods then passed to Greece, and Jupiter reigned on Mount Olympus, in Thessaly.

<sup>3</sup> Mount Parnassus, where the city of Delphi, famous for its Oracle, was situated.

<sup>4</sup> A city and wood sacred to Jupiter ; famous also for its Oracle.

<sup>5</sup> France, the abode of the Celts. "Utmost isles," Great Britain, etc., etc.; *Ultima Thule*.

<sup>6</sup> This name is used for some demon or devil by several ancient authors, Jewish and Christian.—NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

Shone like a meteor, streaming to the wind,  
With gems and golden lustre rich emblazed,  
Seraphic arms and trophies ; all the while  
Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds : 540  
At which the universal host up sent  
A shout that tore hell's concave, and beyond  
Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.  
All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
Ten thousand banners rise into the air  
With orient colours waving : with them rose  
A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms  
Appeared, and serried shields in thick array  
Of depth immeasurable : anon they move  
In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood <sup>1</sup> 550  
Of flutes and soft recorders ; <sup>2</sup> such as raised  
To highth of noblest temper heroes old  
Arming to battle ; and instead of rage  
Deliberate valour breathed, firm, and unmoved  
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat ;  
Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage  
With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase  
Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain,  
From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,  
Breathing united force, with fixèd thought, 560  
Moved on in silence to soft pipes, that charmed  
Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil ; and now  
Advanced in view they stand, a horrid front  
Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise  
Of warriors old with ordered spear and shield,  
Awaiting what command their mighty chief  
Had to impose. He through the armèd files  
Darts his experienced eye, and soon traverse  
The whole battalion views ; their order due,  
Their visages and stature as of gods ; 570  
Their number last he sums. And now his heart  
Distends with pride, and hard'ning in his strength  
Glories ; for never, since created man,

<sup>1</sup> The ancients had three different styles of music : the Lydian, soft and languishing ; the Phrygian, gay and animated ; the Dorian, solemn and majestic.

<sup>2</sup> A species of flute or flageolet.

## Paradise Lost

Met such embodied force, as named with these  
Could merit more than that small infantry<sup>1</sup>  
Warred on by cranes ; though all the giant brood  
Of Phlegra<sup>2</sup> with th' heroic race were joined  
That fought at Thebes<sup>3</sup> and Ilium,<sup>4</sup> on each side  
Mixed with auxiliar Gods ; and what resounds  
In fable or romance of Uther's son,<sup>5</sup> 580  
Begirt with British and Armoric knights ;  
And all who since, baptized or infidel,  
Jousted in Aspramont or Montalban,<sup>6</sup>  
Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond,  
Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore,  
When Charlemain with all his peerage fell  
By Fontarabia. Thus far these beyond  
Compare of mortal prowess, yet observed  
Their dread commander : he, above the rest 590  
In shape and gesture proudly eminent,  
Stood like a tow'r ; his form had yet not lost  
All her original brightness, nor appeared  
Less than Arch-angel ruined, and th' excess  
Of glory obscured : as when the sun new-risen  
Looks through the horizontal misty air,  
Shorn of his beams ; or from behind the moon,  
In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes monarchs :<sup>7</sup> darkened so, yet shone 600  
Above them all th' Arch-angel : but his face  
Deep scars of thunder had intrenched, and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride  
Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion to behold

<sup>1</sup> The Pigmies. See *Basilides Athenai*, IX. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Phlegra, a city of Macedonia, where the Titans, or giants, dwelt who made war against the gods.

<sup>3</sup> The subject of Statius's *Thebaid*.

<sup>4</sup> Troy, the siege of which is the subject of Homer's *Iliad*. The gods took different sides in this war.

<sup>5</sup> Arthur. Armoric knights were knights of Armorica, or Brittany.

<sup>6</sup> Romantic names of places mentioned in Ariosto's poem, "Orlando Furioso," and in the old romances.

<sup>7</sup> Alluding to the superstition that an eclipse or comet foretold the disturbance of nations.

## Paradise Lost

The fellows of his crime, the followers rather,  
Far other once beheld in bliss, condemned  
For ever now to have their lot in pain,  
Millions of spirits for his fault amerced<sup>1</sup>  
Of heav'n, and from eternal splendours flung 610  
For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood,  
Their glory withered : as when heaven's fire  
Hath scathed the forest oaks or mountain pines,  
With singèd top their stately growth, though bare,  
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepared  
To speak ; whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
From wing to wing, and half inclose him round  
With all his peers : attention held them mute.  
Thrice he assayed, and thrice in spite of scorn,  
Tears, such as angels weep, burst forth ; at last 620  
Words interwove with sighs found out their way :  
"O myriads of immortal spirits ! O Powers  
Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife  
Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change  
Hateful to utter : but what power of mind,  
Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have feared,  
How such united force of gods, how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse ? 630  
For who can yet believe, though after loss,  
That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied heav'n,<sup>2</sup> shall fail to reascend  
Self-raised, and repossess their native seat ?  
For me, be witness all the host of heav'n,  
If counsels different or danger shunned  
By me have lost our hopes : but He, who reigns  
Monarch in heav'n, till then as one secure  
Sat on His throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent, or custom, and His regal state 640  
Put forth at full, but still His strength concealed,  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth His might we know, and know our own,

<sup>1</sup> Deprived of by forfeiture. See Quarles's *Divine Poems*, p. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xii. 4.

# Paradise Lost

So as not either to provoke, or dread  
New war, provoked ; our better part remains  
To work in close design, by fraud or guile,  
What force effected not ; that He no less  
At length from us may find, who overcomes  
By force, hath overcome but half his foe.  
Space may produce new worlds, whereof so rife 650  
There went a fame in heav'n, that He ere long  
Intended to create, and therein plant  
A generation, whom His choice regard  
Should favour equal to the sons of heaven.  
Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps  
Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere ;  
For this infernal pit shall never hold  
Celestial spirits in bondage, nor th' Abyss  
Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
Full counsel must mature : peace is despaired ; 660  
For who can think submission ? war then, war  
Open or understood, must be resolved."

He spake : and to confirm his words outflow  
Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
Of mighty Cherubim ; the sudden blaze  
Far round illumined hell : highly they raged  
Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms  
Clashed on their sounding shields the din of war,  
Hurling defiance toward the vault of heav'n.

'There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top 670  
Belched fire and rolling smoke ; the rest entire  
Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign  
That in his womb was hid metallic ore,  
The work of sulphur. Thither, winged with speed,  
A numerous brigade hastened ; as when bands  
Of pioneers, with spade and pickaxe armed,  
Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
Or cast a rampart. Mammon<sup>1</sup> led them on,  
Mammon, the least erected spirit that fell  
From heav'n ; for ev'n in heav'n his looks and thoughts  
Were always downward bent, admiring more [680

<sup>1</sup> The word Mammon is Syriac for riches (Matt. vi. 24) ; personified also by Spenser.

# Paradise Lost

The riches of heav'n's pavement, trodden gold,  
Than aught divine or holy else enjoyed  
In vision beatific. By him first  
Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
Ransacked the centre, and with impious hands  
Rifled the bowels of their mother earth  
For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew  
Opened into the hill a spacious wound,  
And digged out ribs of gold. Let none admire <sup>1</sup> 690  
That riches grow in hell ; that soil may best  
Deserve the precious bane. And here let those  
Who boast in mortal things, and wond'ring tell  
Of Babel and the works of Memphian kings,  
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame  
And strength and art are easily outdone  
By spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
What in an age they with incessant toil  
And hands innumerable scarce perform.  
Nigh on the plain in many cells prepared, 700  
That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
Sluiced from the lake, a second multitude  
With wond'rous art founded the massy ore,  
Severing each kind, and scummed the bullion dross.  
A third as soon had formed within the ground  
A various mould, and from the boiling cells  
By strange conveyance filled each hollow nook :  
As in an organ from one blast of wind  
To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.  
Anon out of the earth a fabric huge 710  
Rose like an exhalation, with the sound  
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,  
Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid  
With golden architrave ; nor did there want  
Cornice or frieze with bossy sculptures graven ;  
The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,  
Nor great Alcairo, <sup>2</sup> such magnificence  
Equalled in all their glories, to inshrine  
Belus or Serapis their Gods, or seat 720

<sup>1</sup> Admire=wonder.

<sup>2</sup> Cairo.



# Paradise Lost

Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove  
In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile  
Stood fixt her stately highth, and straight the doors,  
Op'ning their brazen folds, discover, wide  
Within, her ample spaces o'er the smooth  
And level pavement : from the archèd roof,  
Pendent by subtle magic, many a row  
Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, fed  
With Naphtha and Asphaltus, yielded light  
As from a sky. The hasty multitude 730  
Admiring entered, and the work some praise,  
And some, the architect : his hand was known  
In heav'n by many a towered structure high,  
Where sceptred angels held their residence,  
And sat as princes, whom the supreme King  
Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,  
Each in his hierarchy, the orders bright.  
Nor was his name unheard or unadored  
In ancient Greece ; and in Ausonian land  
Men called him Mulciber ;<sup>1</sup> and how he fell 740  
From heav'n they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
Sheer o'er the crystal battlements ; from morn  
To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
A summer's day ; and with the setting sun  
Dropt from the zenith like a falling star,  
On Lemnos th' Ægean isle ; thus they relate,  
Erring ; for he with this rebellious rout  
Fell long before ; nor aught availed him now  
To have built in heav'n high towers ; nor did he 'scape  
By all his engines, but was headlong sent 750  
With his industrious crew to build in hell.

Meanwhile the wingèd heralds by command  
Of sov'ran power, with awful ceremony  
And trumpets sound, throughout the host proclaim  
A solemn council forthwith to be held  
At Pandæmonium, the high capital  
Of Satan and his peers : their summons called  
From every band and squared regiment  
By place or choice the worthiest ; they anon

<sup>1</sup> Vulcan. See Homer, *Iliad*, 1-590.

## Paradise Lost

With hundreds and with thousands trooping came 760  
 Attended : all access was thronged, the gates  
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall,  
 Though like a covered field, where champions bold  
 Wont ride in armed, and at the Soldan's chair  
 Defied the best of Panim chivalry  
 To mortal combat or career with lance,  
 Thick swarmed, both on the ground and in the air,  
 Brushed with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees  
 In spring time, when the sun with Taurus rides,  
 Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 770  
 In clusters ; they among fresh dews and flowers  
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothèd plank,  
 The suburb of their straw-built citadel,  
 New rubbed with balm, expatiate, and confer  
 Their state affairs. So thick the aery crowd  
 Swarmed and were straitened ; till, the signal giv'n,  
 Behold a wonder ! they, but now who seemed  
 In bigness to surpass earth's giant sons,  
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng numberless, like that Pygmean race 780  
 Beyond the Indian mount, or Fairy Elves,  
 Whose midnight revels, by a forest side,  
 Or fountain, some belated peasant sees,  
 Or dreams he sees, while over head the moon  
 Sits arbitress,<sup>1</sup> and nearer to the earth  
 Wheels her pale course ; they, on their mirth and dance  
 Intent, with jocund music charm his ear ;  
 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
 Thus incorporeal spirits to smallest forms  
 Reduced their shapes immense, and were at large, 790  
 Though without number still, amidst the hall  
 Of that infernal court. But far within,  
 And in their own dimensions like themselves,  
 The great Seraphic lords and Cherubim  
 In close recess and secret conclave sat,  
 A thousand Demi-gods on golden seats,  
 Frequent and full. After short silence then  
 And summons read, the great consult began.

<sup>1</sup> Spectatress.—HOR. *Ep.* V. 49.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven; some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior, to themselves, about this time to be created: their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to hell gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between hell and heaven: with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far I  
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous east with richest hand  
Show'rs on her kings Barbaric pearl and gold,<sup>1</sup>  
Satan exalted sat, by merit raised  
To that bad eminence; and, from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue  
Vain war with heav'n, and by success untaught  
His proud imaginations thus displayed: 10  
“Powers and Dominions, Deities of heav'n,<sup>2</sup>  
For since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigour, though oppressed and fall'n,  
I give not heav'n for lost: from this descent  
Celestial virtues rising will appear  
More glorious and more dread, than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.  
Me though just right and the fixed laws of heav'n  
Did first create your leader, next free choice,  
With what besides, in council or in fight, 20  
Hath been achieved of merit; yet this loss,  
Thus far at least recovered, hath much more

<sup>1</sup> It was the Eastern custom for the princes of the blood royal and the emirs to sprinkle gold dust and seed pearl on the head of the monarch at his coronation. See *Vie de Tamerlane* (translated by M. Petit de la Croix), B. II. c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Colos. i. 16.

## Paradise Lost

Established in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw  
Envy from each inferior ; but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim,  
Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
Of endless pain? Where there is then no good 30  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From faction ; for none sure will claim in hell  
Precedence, none, whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more. With this advantage then  
To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
More than can be in heav'n, we now return  
To claim our just inheritance of old,  
Surer to prosper than prosperity  
Could have assured us ; and by what best way, 40  
Whether of open war or covert guile,  
We now debate ; who can advise, may speak."

He ceased ; and next him Moloch, sceptred king,  
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest spirit  
That fought in heav'n, now fiercer by despair :  
His trust was with th' Eternal to be deemed  
Equal in strength, and rather than be less  
Cared not to be at all ; with that care lost  
Went all his fear : of God, or hell, or worse,  
He recked not ; and these words thereafter spake : 50

" My sentence is for open war : of wiles,  
More unexpert, I boast not : them let those  
Contrive who need, or when they need, not now :  
For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
Millions that stand in arms and longing wait  
The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here  
Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place  
Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,  
The prison of His tyranny who reigns  
By our delay? No, let us rather choose, 60  
Armed with hell flames and fury, all at once  
O'er heav'n's high towers to force resistless way,

# Paradise Lost

Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
Against the torturer ; when to meet the noise  
Of His almighty engine He shall hear  
Infernal thunder, and for lightning see  
Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
Among His angels ; and His throne itself  
Mixt with Tartarean sulphur and strange fire,  
His own invented torments. But perhaps 70  
The way seems difficult and steep to scale  
With upright wing against a higher foe.  
Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,  
That in our proper motion we ascend  
Up to our native seat : descent and fall  
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,  
When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear  
Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,  
With what compulsion and laborious flight 80  
We sunk thus low ? th' ascent is easy then ;  
Th' event is feared ; should we again provoke  
Our stronger, some worse way His wrath may find  
To our destruction : if there be in hell  
Fear to be worse destroyed. What can be worse  
Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemned  
In this abhorrèd deep to utter woe ;  
Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
Must exercise us without hope of end,  
The vassals of His anger, when the scourge 90  
Inexorably, and the torturing hour  
Calls us to penance ? more destroyed than thus  
We should be quite abolished and expire.  
What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense  
His utmost ire ? which, to the highth enraged,  
Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
To nothing this essential ; happier far,  
Than miserable to have eternal being.  
Or if our substance be indeed divine,  
And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100  
On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel  
Our power sufficient to disturb His heav'n,

# Paradise Lost

And with perpetual inroads to alarm,  
Though inaccessible, His fatal throne :<sup>1</sup>  
Which, if not victory, is yet revenge."

He ended frowning, and his look denounced  
Desperate revenge and battle dangerous  
To less than gods. On the other side up rose  
Belial, in act more graceful and humane ;  
A fairer person lost not heav'n ; he seemed 110  
For dignity composed and high exploit :  
But all was false and hollow ; though his tongue  
Dropped manna, and could make the worse appear  
The better reason, to perplex and dash  
Maturest counsels ; for his thoughts were low ;  
To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds  
Timorous and slothful : yet he pleased the ear,  
And with persuasive accent thus began :

"I should be much for open war, O Peers,  
As not behind in hate, if what was urged 120  
Main reason to persuade immediate war,  
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
Ominous conjecture on the whole success ;  
When he, who most excels in fact of arms,  
In what he counsels and in what excels  
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
And utter dissolution, as the scope  
Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
First, what revenge ? the towers of heav'n are filled  
With armèd watch, that render all access 130  
Impregnable ; oft on the bordering deep  
Encamp their legions, or with obscure wing  
Scout far and wide into the realm of night,  
Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way  
By force, and at our heels all hell should rise,  
With blackest insurrection to confound  
Heav'n's purest light, yet our great Enemy  
All incorruptible would on His throne  
Sit unpolluted ; and th' ethereal mould  
Incapable of stain would soon expel 140  
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,

<sup>1</sup> Upheld by fate.—NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope  
Is flat despair: we must exasperate  
The Almighty Victor to spend all His rage,  
And that must end us, that must be our cure,  
To be no more: sad cure! for who would lose,  
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
Those thoughts that wander through eternity,  
To perish rather, swallowed up and lost  
In the wide womb of uncreated night, 150  
Devoid of sense and motion? and who knows,  
Let this be good, whether our angry God  
Can give it, or will ever? how He can,  
Is doubtful; that He never will, is sure.  
Will He, so wise, let loose at once His ire,  
Belike through impotence or unaware,  
To give His enemies their wish, and end  
Them in His anger, whom His anger saves  
To punish endless? Wherefore cease we then?  
Say they who counsel war;—We are decreed, 160  
Reserved, and destined to eternal woe;  
Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
What can we suffer worse?—Is this then worst,  
Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms?  
What, when we fled amain, pursued and struck  
With heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought  
The deep to shelter us? this hell then seemed  
A refuge from those wounds. Or when we lay  
Chained on the burning lake? that sure was worse.  
What if the breath that kindled those grim fires<sup>1</sup> 170  
Awaked should blow them into sevenfold rage,  
And plunge us in the flames? or from above  
Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
His red right hand to plague us? What, if all  
Her stores were opened, and this firmament  
Of hell should spout her cataracts of fire,  
Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall  
One day upon our heads; while we, perhaps  
Designing or exhorting glorious war,  
Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurled 180

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xxx. 33.

# Paradise Lost

Each on his rock transfixed, the sport and prey  
Of racking whirlwinds ; or for ever sunk  
Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains ;  
There to converse with everlasting groans,  
Unrespited, unpitied, unreprieved,  
Ages of hopeless end ? this would be worse.  
War therefore, open or concealed, alike  
My voice dissuades ; for what can force or guile  
With Him, or who deceive His mind, whose eye  
Views all things at one view ? He from heav'n's highth  
All these our motions vain sees and derides ; [190  
Not more almighty to resist our might,  
Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heav'n,  
Thus trampled, thus expelled, to suffer here  
Chains and these torments ? Better these than worse  
By my advice ; since fate inevitable  
Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,  
The Victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200  
That so ordains : this was at first resolved,  
If we were wise, against so great a foe  
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
I laugh, when those, who at the spear are bold  
And venturous, if that fail them, shrink and fear  
What yet they know must follow, to endure  
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
The sentence of their conqueror : this is now  
Our doom ; which if we can sustain and bear,  
Our supreme Foe in time may much remit 210  
His anger, and perhaps thus far removed  
Not mind us not offending, satisfied  
With what is punished : whence these raging fires  
Will slacken, if His breath stir not their flames.  
Our purer essence then will overcome  
Their noxious vapour, or enured not feel ;  
Or changed at length, and to the place conformed  
In temper and in nature, will receive  
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ;  
This horror will grow mild, this darkness light : 220



## Paradise Lost

Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,  
If we procure not to ourselves more woe."

Thus Belial with words clothed in reason's garb  
Counselled ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,  
Not peace : and after him thus Mammon spake :

"Either to disenthroned the King of heav'n  
We war, if war be best, or to regain 230  
Our own right lost : Him to unthroned we then  
May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife .  
The former, vain to hope, argues as vain  
The latter : for what place can be for us  
Within heav'n's bound, unless heav'n's Lord supreme  
We overpower? suppose He should relent  
And publish grace to all, on promise made  
Of new subjection ; with what eyes could we 240  
Stand in His presence humble, and receive  
Strict laws imposed, to celebrate His throne  
With warbled hymns, and to His Godhead sing  
Forced hallelujahs ; while He lordly sits  
Our envied Sovereign, and His altar breathes  
Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers,  
Our servile offerings? This must be our task  
In heav'n, this our delight ; how wearisome  
Eternity so spent in worship paid  
To whom we hate? Let us not then pursue  
By force impossible, by leave obtained 250  
Unacceptable, though in heav'n, our state  
Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek  
Our own good from ourselves, and from our own  
Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,  
Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
Hard liberty before the easy yoke  
Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,  
We can create ; and in what place so e'er 260

## Paradise Lost

Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain  
Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
Of darkness do we dread? how oft amidst  
Thick clouds and dark doth heav'n's all-ruling Sire  
Choose to reside, His glory unobscured,  
And with the majesty of darkness round  
Covers His throne; <sup>1</sup> from whence deep thunders roar,  
Must'ring their rage, and heav'n resembles hell?  
As He our darkness, cannot we His light  
Imitate when we please? this desert soil 270  
Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;  
Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
Magnificence; and what can heav'n show more?  
Our torments also may in length of time  
Become our elements, these piercing fires  
As soft as now severe, our temper changed  
Into their temper; which must needs remove  
The sensible of pain. All things invite  
To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
Of order, how in safety best we may 280  
Compose our present evils, with regard  
Of what we are and were, dismissing quite  
All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise."

He scarce had finished, when such murmur filled  
Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain  
The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long  
Had roused the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
Sea-faring men o'erwatched, whose bark by chance  
Or pinnacle anchors in a craggy bay  
After the tempest: such applause was heard 290  
As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleased,  
Advising peace: for such another field  
They dreaded worse than hell: so much the fear  
Of thunder and the sword of Michael  
Wrought still within them; and no less desire  
To found this nether empire, which might rise,  
By policy and long process of time,  
In emulation opposite to heav'n.  
Which when Beëlzebub perceived, than whom,

<sup>1</sup> Psalmi xviii. 11-23, xcvi. 2

# Paradise Lost

Satan except, none higher sat, with grave  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seemed  
A pillar of state : deep on his front engraven  
Deliberation sat and public care ;  
And princely counsel in his face yet shone,  
Majestic though in ruin : sage he stood,  
With Atlantean<sup>1</sup> shoulders fit to bear  
The weight of mightiest monarchies ; his look  
Drew audience and attention still as night  
Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake :  
    "Thrones and imperial Powers, offspring of heav'n, 310  
Ethereal Virtues ; or these titles now  
Must we renounce, and changing style be called  
Princes of hell ? for so the popular vote  
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here  
A growing empire. Doubtless ; while we dream,  
And know not that the King of heav'n hath doomed  
This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat  
Beyond His potent arm, to live exempt  
From heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new league  
Banded against His throne, but to remain 320  
In strictest bondage, though thus far removed,  
Under the inevitable curb, reserved  
His captive multitude : for He, be sure,  
In highth or depth, still first and last will reign  
Sole King, and of His kingdom lose no part  
By our revolt, but over hell extend  
His empire, and with iron sceptre rule<sup>2</sup>  
Us here, as with His golden those in heav'n.  
What sit we then projecting peace and war ?  
War hath determined us, and foiled with loss 330  
Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none  
Vouchsafed or sought ; for what peace will be giv'n  
To us enslaved, but custody severe,  
And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
Inflicted ? and what peace can we return,  
But to our power hostility and hate,  
Untamed reluctance, and revenge, though slow,

<sup>1</sup> Atlas was fabled to have held the heavens on his shoulders.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm ii. 9.

## Paradise Lost

Yet ever plotting how the Conqueror least  
May reap His conquest, and may least rejoice  
In doing what we most in suffering feel? 340  
Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
With dangerous expedition to invade  
Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault, or siege,  
Or ambush from the deep. What if we find  
Some easier enterprise? There is a place,  
(If ancient and prophetic fame in heav'n  
Err not,) another world, the happy seat  
Of some new race called Man, about this time  
To be created like to us, though less  
In power and excellence, but favoured more 350  
Of Him who rules above; so was His will  
Pronounced among the gods, and by an oath,  
That shook heav'n's whole circumference, confirmed.  
Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
What creatures there inhabit, of what mould  
Or substance, how endued, and what their power,  
And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
By force or subtilty. Though heav'n be shut,  
And heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure  
In His own strength, this place may lie exposed, 360  
The utmost border of His kingdom, left  
To their defence who hold it: here perhaps  
Some advantageous act may be achieved  
By sudden onset, either with hell fire  
'To waste His whole creation, or possess  
All as our own, and drive as we were driven  
The puny habitants; or if not drive,  
Seduce them to our party, that their God  
May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
Abolish His own works. This would surpass 370  
Common revenge, and interrupt His joy  
In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
In His disturbance; when His darling sons,  
Hurled headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
'Their frail original, and faded bliss,  
Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth  
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here

## Paradise Lost

Hatching vain empires."—Thus Beëlzebub  
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devised  
By Satan, and in part proposed ; for whence, . 380  
But from the author of all ill, could spring  
So deep a malice, to confound the race  
Of mankind in one root, and earth with hell  
To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
The great Creator? but their spite still serves  
His glory to augment. The bold design  
Pleased highly those infernal states, and joy  
Sparkled in all their eyes ; with full assent  
They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews :

“Well have ye judged, well ended long debate, 390  
Synod of Gods, and, like to what ye are,  
Great things resolved ; which from the lowest deep  
Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,  
Nearer our ancient seat ; perhaps in view  
Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring  
arms

And opportune excursion we may chance  
Re-enter heav'n : or else in some mild zone  
Dwell, not unvisited of heav'n's fair light,  
Secure, and at the bright'ning orient beam  
Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious air 400  
To heal the scar of these corrosive fires  
Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send  
In search of this new world? whom shall we find  
Sufficient? who shall tempt with wand'ring feet  
The dark unbottomed infinite abyss,  
And through the palpable obscure find out  
His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight,  
Upborne with indefatigable wings,  
Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive<sup>1</sup>  
The happy isle?<sup>2</sup> What strength, what art can then  
Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe [410  
Through the strict senteries and stations thick  
Of angels watching round? Here he had need  
All circumspection, and we now no less

<sup>1</sup> An old English idiom. See Shakspeare's *Henry VI.* Part iii. Act v.

<sup>2</sup> The earth surrounded by air.

## Paradise Lost

Choice in our suffrage ; for on whom we send  
The weight of all, and our last hope relies."

This said, he sat ; and expectation held  
His look suspense, awaiting who appeared  
To second, or oppose, or undertake  
The perilous attempt : but all sat mute, 420  
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts ; and each  
In others' count'nance read his own dismay  
Astonished ; none among the choice and prime  
Of those heav'n-warring champions could be found  
So hardy, as to proffer or accept  
Alone the dreadful voyage ; till at last  
Satan, whom now transcendent glory raised  
Above his fellows, with monarchical pride,  
Conscious of highest worth, unmoved thus spake :

"O Progeny of heav'n, empyreal Thrones, 430  
With reason hath deep silence and demur  
Seized us, though undismayed : long is the way  
And hard, that out of hell leads up to light ;  
Our prison strong ; this huge convex of fire,  
Outrageous to devour, immures us round  
Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant  
Barred over us prohibit all egress.  
These passed, if any pass, the void profound  
Of unessential<sup>1</sup> night receives him next  
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440  
Threatens him, plunged in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he 'scape into whatever world,  
Or unknown region, what remains him less  
Than unknown dangers and as hard escape ?  
But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,  
And this imperial sov'reignty, adorned  
With splendour, armed with power, if aught proposed  
And judged of public moment, in the shape  
Of difficulty or danger, could deter  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450  
These royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard as of honour, due alike

<sup>1</sup> Void of being.

## Paradise Lost

To him who reigns, and so much to him due  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest  
High honoured sits? Go, therefore, mighty Powers,  
Terror of heav'n though fallen! Intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render hell  
More tolerable; if there be cure or charm 460  
To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill mansion. Intermit no watch  
Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek  
Deliverance for us all. This enterprise  
None shall partake with me." Thus saying rose  
The monarch, and prevented all reply;  
Prudent, lest from his resolution raised  
Others among the chief might offer now,  
Certain to be refused, what erst they feared; 470  
And so refused might in opinion stand  
His rivals, winning cheap the high repute,  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more the adventure, than his voice  
Forbidding; and at once with him they rose:  
Their rising all at once was as the sound  
Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
With awful reverence prone; and as a God  
Extol him equal to the Highest in heav'n:  
Nor failed they to express how much they praised, 480  
That for the general safety he despised  
His own; for neither do the spirits damned  
Lose all their virtue, lest bad men should boast  
Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,  
Or close ambition varnished o'er with zeal.  
Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief;  
As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds  
Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread  
Heav'n's cheerful face, the louring element 490  
Scowls o'er the darkened landscape snow, or shower:  
If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,

# Paradise Lost

The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.  
O shame to men ! devil with devil damned  
Firm concord holds, men only disagree  
Of creatures rational, though under hope  
Of heav'nly grace ; and God proclaiming peace,  
Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife 500  
Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
Wasting the earth, each other to destroy :  
As if, which might induce us to accord,  
Man had not hellish foes enow besides,  
That day and night for his destruction wait.

The Stygian council thus dissolved ; and forth  
In order came the grand infernal peers ;  
Midst came their mighty paramount, and seemed  
Alone th' antagonist of heav'n, nor less  
Than hell's dread emperor, with pomp supreme 510  
And god-like imitated state : him round  
A globe of fiery Seraphim inclosed  
With bright emblazonry and horrent<sup>1</sup> arms.  
Then of their session ended they did cry  
With trumpets regal sound the great result :  
Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
Put to their mouths the sounding alchymy,<sup>2</sup>  
By herald's voice explained : the hollow abyss  
Heard far and wide, and all the host of hell  
With deafning shout returned them loud acclaim. 520

Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat  
raised  
By false presumptuous hope, the rangèd Powers  
Disband, and wand'ring each his several way  
Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
Leads him perplexed, where he may likeliest find  
Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
The irksome hours, till his great chief return.  
Part, on the plain or in the air sublime,  
Upon the wing or in swift race contend,  
As at the Olympian games, or Pythian fields : 530

<sup>1</sup> Bristling.

<sup>2</sup> Gold or silver trumpets. Herald's alchymy would be " or and argent."



## Paradise Lost

Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal  
With rapid wheels, or fronted brigades form.  
As when to warn proud cities war appears  
Waged in the troubled sky,<sup>1</sup> and armies rush  
To battle in the clouds, before each van  
Prick forth the aery knights, and couch their spears  
Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms  
From either end of heav'n the welkin burns.  
Others with vast Typhœan rage more fell  
Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540  
In whirlwind : hell scarce holds the wild uproar.  
As when Alcides from Œchalia crowned  
With conquest felt th' envenomed robe, and tore  
Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,  
And Lichas from the top of Œta threw  
Into th' Euboic sea. Others more mild,  
Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
With notes angelical to many a harp  
Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall  
By doom of battle ; and complain that fate 550  
Free virtue should enthrall to force or chance.  
Their song was partial ; but the harmony,  
—What could it less when spirits immortal sing?—  
Suspended hell, and took with ravishment  
The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet,  
For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,  
Others apart sat on a hill retired,  
In thoughts more elevate, and reasoned high  
Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate,  
Fixed fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute ; 560  
And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.  
Of good and evil much they argued then,  
Of happiness and final misery,  
Passion and apathy, and glory and shame,  
Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy :  
Yet with a pleasing sorcery could charm  
Pain for a while or anguish, and excite

<sup>1</sup> These appearances in the clouds have been frequently recorded. On the Mont d'Or, the night before the battle in which Philip von Arteveldt was killed, an armed host was seen contending in the sky.

# Paradise Lost

Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdurèd breast  
With stubborn patience as with triple steel.  
Another part in squadrons and gross bands, 570  
On bold adventure to discover wide  
That dismal world, if any clime perhaps  
Might yield them easier habitation, bend  
Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge  
Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;  
Abhorrèd Styx,<sup>1</sup> the flood of deadly hate ;  
Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep ;  
Cocytus, named of lamentation loud  
Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580  
Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
Far off from these a slow and silent stream,  
Lethe the river of oblivion, rolls  
Her wat'ry labyrinth, whereof who drinks,  
Forthwith his former state and being forgets,  
Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
Lies, dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms  
Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land  
Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590  
Of ancient pile ; all else deep snow and ice ;  
A gulf profound as that Serbonian <sup>2</sup> bog  
Betwixt Damiata and mount Casius old,  
Where armies whole have sunk : the parching air  
Burns frore,<sup>3</sup> and cold performs th' effect of fire.  
Thither by harpy-footed Furies haled  
At certain revolutions all the damned  
Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change  
Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
From beds of raging fire to starve in ice 600  
Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
Immovable, infixed, and frozen round,

<sup>1</sup> The names and qualities of these rivers are all taken from the Greek mythology.

<sup>2</sup> Serbonis was a huge bog in Egypt, sometimes so covered with sand as to be indistinguishable from the land. It was 200 furlongs long, and 1,000 round. Damiatta was a city on one of the eastern mouths of the Nile.

<sup>3</sup> Frostily. See Ecclus. xlii. 20, 21.

## Paradise Lost

Periods of time ; thence hurried back to fire.  
They ferry over this Lethæan sound  
Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,  
And wish and struggle, as they pass to reach  
The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
All in one moment, and so near the brink :  
But fate withstands,<sup>1</sup> and to oppose th' attempt 610  
Medusa, with Gorgonian terror guards  
The ford, and of itself the water flies  
All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
The lip of Tan'alus. Thus roving on  
In confused march forlorn, th' adventurous bands,  
With shudd'ring horror pale, and eyes aghast,  
Viewed first their lamentable lot, and found  
No rest : through many a dark and dreary vale  
They passed, and many a region dolorous,  
O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620  
Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of  
death,

A universe of death, which God by curse  
Created evil, for evil only good,  
Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,  
Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,  
Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
Than fables yet have feigned, or fear conceived,  
Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimæras dire.

Meanwhile the adversary of God and man,  
Satan, with thoughts inflamed of highest design, 630  
Puts on swift wings and toward the gates of hell  
Explores his solitary flight ; sometimes  
He scours the right-hand coast, sometimes the left ;  
Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars  
Up to the fiery concave towering high.  
As when far off at sea a fleet descried  
Hangs in the clouds, by equinoctial winds  
Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles  
Of Ternate and Tidore,<sup>2</sup> whence merchants bring

<sup>1</sup> Forgetfulness could never be permitted to the lost spirits.

<sup>2</sup> Two of the Molucca islands.

## Paradise Lost

Their spicy drugs : they on the trading flood 640  
Through the wide Æthiopian to the Cape  
Ply, stemming nightly toward the pole : so seemed  
Far off the flying fiend. At last appear  
Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof ;  
And thrice threefold the gates ; three folds were brass,  
Three iron, three of adamantine rock,  
Impenetrable, impaled with circling fire,  
Yet unconsumed. Before the gates there sat  
On either side a formidable shape ;<sup>1</sup>  
The one seemed woman to the waist, and fair, 650  
But ended foul in many a scaly fold,  
Voluminous and vast, a serpent armed  
With mortal sting : about her middle round  
A cry of hell hounds never ceasing barked  
With wide Cerbercan<sup>2</sup> mouths full loud, and rung  
A hideous peal : yet, when they list, would creep,  
If aught disturbed their noise, into her womb,  
And kennel there ; yet there still barked and howled  
Within unseen. Far less abhorred than these  
Vexed Scylla bathing in the sea that parts 660  
Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore :<sup>3</sup>  
Nor uglier follow the Night-hag, when called  
In secret riding through the air she comes,  
Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon  
Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,  
—If shape it might be called that shape had none  
Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb,  
Or substance might be called that shadow seemed,  
For each seemed either,—black it stood as night, 670  
Fierce as ten furies, terrible as hell,  
And shook a dreadful-dart ; what seemed his head  
The likeness of a kingly crown had on.  
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat

<sup>1</sup> Here begins the famous allegory of Milton, which is a sort of paraphrase of St. James i. 15 : "Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin ; and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death."

<sup>2</sup> Like those of Cerberus, the dog with three heads, supposed to keep the gate of hell.

<sup>3</sup> Trinacria was the ancient name for Sicily. Scylla and Charybdis were the whirlpools between it and Italy.

## Paradise Lost

The monster moving onward came as fast,  
With horrid strides ; hell trembled as he strode.  
The undaunted fiend what this might be admired ;  
Admired, not feared ; GOD and His SON except,  
Created thing naught valued he, nor shunned ;  
And with disdainful look thus first began : 680

“ Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,  
That dar’st, though grim and terrible, advance  
Thy miscreated front athwart my way  
To yonder gates ? through them I mean to pass,  
That be assured, without leave asked of thee.  
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,  
Hell-born, not to contend with spirits of heav’n.”

To whom the goblin full of wrath replied :  
“ Art thou that traitor angel, art thou he  
Who first broke peace in heav’n and faith, till then 690  
Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms  
Drew after him the third part of heav’n’s sons  
Conjured<sup>1</sup> against the Highest ; for which both thou  
And they, outcast from GOD, are here condemned  
To waste eternal days in woe and pain ?  
And reckon’st thou thyself with spirits of heav’n,  
Hell-doomed, and breath’st defiance here and scorn,  
Where I reign king, and, to enrage thee more,  
Thy king and lord ? Back to thy punishment,  
False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings, 700  
Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
Thy lingering, or with one stroke of this dart  
Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.”

So spake the grisly terror, and in shape,  
So speaking and so threat’ning, grew tenfold  
More dreadful and deform : on the other side,  
Incensed with indignation Satan stood  
Unterrified, and like a comet burned,  
That fires the length of Ophiucus<sup>2</sup> huge  
In th’ arctic sky, and from his horrid hair 710  
Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head

<sup>1</sup> Conspired.

<sup>2</sup> Serpentarius, a northern constellation. Its length would be about forty degrees. Comets were supposed to threaten “ pestilence and war.”

# Paradise Lost

Levelled his deadly aim ; their fatal hands  
No second stroke intend, and such a frown  
Each cast at the other, as when two black clouds,  
With heav'n's artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the Caspian ;<sup>1</sup> then stand front to front  
Hov'ring a space, till winds the signal blow  
To join their dark encounter in mid air :  
So frowned the mighty combatants, that hell  
Grew darker at their frown, so matched they stood ; 720  
For never but once more<sup>2</sup> was either like  
To meet so great a foe : and now great deeds  
Had been achieved, whereof all hell had rung,  
Had not the snaky sorceress that sat  
Fast by hell gate, and kept the fatal key,  
Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rushed between.

"O father, what intends thy hand," she cried,  
"Against thy only son ? What fury, O son,  
Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart  
Against thy father's head ? and know'st for whom ? 730  
For Him who sits above, and laughs the while  
At thee ordained His drudge, to execute  
Whate'er His wrath, which He calls justice, bids ;  
His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both."

She spake, and at her words the hellish pest  
Forbore ; then these to her Satan returned :

"So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
Thou interposest, that my sudden hand  
Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
What it intends ; till first I know of thee, 740  
What thing thou art, thus double-formed, and why,  
In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
Me father, and that phantasm call'st my son :  
I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
Sight more detestable than him and thee."

To whom thus the portress of hell gate replied :  
"Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
Now in thine eye so foul, once deemed so fair

<sup>1</sup> The Caspian is a remarkably tempestuous sea.

<sup>2</sup> Jesus Christ is here intimated, who was to destroy death, and him that has the power of death (Heb. ii. 14).

## Paradise Lost

In heav'n? when at th' assembly, and in sight  
 Of all the seraphim with thee combined 750  
 In bold conspiracy against heav'n's King,  
 All on a sudden miserable pain  
 Surprised thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum  
 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
 Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,  
 Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright,  
 Then shining heav'nly fair, a goddess armed,  
 Out of thy head I sprung :<sup>1</sup> amazement seized  
 All the host of heav'n ; back they recoiled afraid  
 At first, and called me 'Sin,' and for a sign 760  
 Portentous held me : but familiar grown,  
 I pleased, and with attractive graces won  
 The most averse ; thee chiefly, who full oft  
 Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,  
 Becam'st enamoured ; and such joy thou took'st  
 With me in secret, that my womb conceived  
 A growing burthen. Meanwhile war arose,  
 And fields were fought in heaven ; wherein remained  
 (For what could else?) to our Almighty Foe  
 Clear victory, to our part loss and rout 770  
 Through all the empyrean : down they fell,  
 Driv'n headlong from the pitch of heav'n, down  
 Into this deep, and in the general fall  
 I also ; at which time this powerful key  
 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep  
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
 Without my opening. Pensive here I sat  
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb,  
 Pregnant by thee and now excessive grown,  
 Prodigious motion felt in rueful throes. 780  
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way,  
 Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain  
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
 Transformed : but he my inbred enemy

<sup>1</sup> The allegory here follows the Greek fable of the birth of Minerva—*Wisdom*—said to have sprung from the head of Jupiter ; as *Sin* is here figured to have sprung from the head of Satan.

# Paradise Lost

Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,  
Made to destroy:<sup>1</sup> I fled, and cried out 'Death';  
Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sighed  
From all her caves, and back resounded 'Death.'  
I fled; but he pursued, though more, it seems, 790  
Inflamed with lust than rage, and, swifter far,  
Me overtook his mother all dismayed,  
And in embraces forcible and foul  
Ingend'ring with me, of that rape begot  
These yelling monsters that with ceaseless cry  
Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceived  
And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
To me; for when they list into the womb  
That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw  
My bowels, their repast; then bursting forth 800  
Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,  
That rest or intermission none I find.  
Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
Grim Death, my son and foe, who sets them on,  
And me his parent would full soon devour  
For want of other prey, but that he knows  
His end with mine involved; and knows that I  
Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,  
Whenever that shall be; so Fate pronounced.  
But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun 810  
His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope  
To be invulnerable in those bright arms,  
Though tempered heavenly; for that mortal dint,  
Save He who reigns above, none can resist."  
She finished, and the subtle fiend his lore  
Soon learned, now milder, and thus answered smooth:  
"Dear daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,  
And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge  
Of dalliance had with thee in heaven, and joys  
Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change  
Befall'n us, unforeseen, unthought of, know [820  
I come no enemy, but to set free  
From out this dark and dismal house of pain,  
Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly host

<sup>1</sup> St. James i. 15.



## Paradise Lost

Of spirits that, in our just pretences armed,  
Fell with us from on high : from them I go  
This uncouth errand sole, and one for all  
Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread  
Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense  
To search with wandering quest a place foretold 830  
Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
Created, vast and round, a place of bliss  
In the purlieus of heaven, and therein placed  
A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
Perhaps our vacant room, though more removed,  
Lest heav'n surcharged with potent multitude  
Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or aught  
Than this more secret, now designed, I haste  
To know, and, this once known, shall soon return,  
And bring ye to the place where thou and Death 840  
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
Wing silently the buxom air, imbalmed  
With odours ; there ye shall be fed and filled  
Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey."

He ceased, for both seemed highly pleased, and  
Death

Grinned horrible a ghastly smile, to hear  
His famine should be filled, and blest his maw  
Destined to that good hour : no less rejoiced  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire :

"The key of this infernal pit by due, 850  
And by command of heav'n's all-powerful King,  
I keep, by Him forbidden to unlock  
These adamantine gates ; against all force  
Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatched by living might.  
But what owe I to His commands above,  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,  
To sit in hateful office, here confined,  
Inhabitant of heav'n and heav'nly-born, 860  
Here, in perpetual agony and pain,  
With terrors and with clamours compassed round  
Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed ?

## Paradise Lost

Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey ~  
But thee? whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end." 879

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;  
And, towards the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,  
Which but herself not all the Stygian powers  
Could once have moved ; then in the keyhole turns  
Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy iron or solid rock with ease  
Unfastens : on a sudden open fly  
With impetuous recoil and jarring sound 880  
The infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of Erebus. She opened, but to shut  
Exceeded her power ; the gates wide open stood,  
That with extended wings a bannered host,  
Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through  
With horse and chariots ranked in loose array ;  
So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth  
Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.  
Before their eyes in sudden view appear 890  
The secrets of the hoary deep, a dark  
Illimitable ocean, without bound,  
Without dimension, where length, breadth, and highth,  
And time and place, are lost ; where eldest Night  
And Chaos, ancestors of Nature,<sup>1</sup> hold  
Eternal anarchy amidst the noise  
Of endless wars, and by confusion stand :  
For Hot, Cold, Moist, and Dry, four champions fierce,  
Strive here for mast'ry, and to battle bring  
Their embryon atoms ; they around the flag 900  
Of each his faction, in their several clans,

<sup>1</sup> All the ancients believed that Night (or darkness) existed from the beginning, and that Chaos (or confusion) was the origin of all things.

# Paradise Lost

Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way  
Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek  
What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
Confine with heav'n; or if some other place,  
From your dominion won, th' ethereal King  
Possesses lately, thither to arrive  
I travel this profound; direct my course; 980  
Directed, no mean recompense it brings  
To your behoof, if I that region lost,  
All usurpation thence expelled, reduce  
To her original darkness and your sway,  
Which is my present journey, and once more  
Erect the standard there of ancient Night;  
Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge."

Thus Satan; and him thus the Anarch old,  
With falt'ring speech and visage incomposed,  
Answered: "I know thee, stranger, who thou art, 990  
That mighty leading angel, who of late  
Made head against heav'n's King, though over-  
thrown.

I saw and heard; for such a numerous host  
Fled not in silence through the frightened deep,  
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded; and heav'n gates  
Poured out by millions her victorious bands  
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
Keep residence; if all I can will serve,  
That little which is left so to defend, 1000  
Encroached on still through your intestine broils  
Weak'ning the sceptre of old Night: first hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath;  
Now lately heaven and earth, another world,  
Hung o'er my realm, linked in a golden chain  
To that side heav'n from whence your legions fell:  
If that way be your walk, you have not far;  
So much the nearer danger: go, and speed;  
Havock, and spoil, and ruin are my gain."

He ceased; and Satan stayed not to reply, 1010  
But glad that now his sea should find a shore,

## Paradise Lost

With fresh alacrity and force renewed  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse, and through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round  
Environed, wins his way ; harder beset  
And more endangered, than when Argo<sup>1</sup> passed  
Through Bosphorus betwixt the justling rocks ;  
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunned  
Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steered. 1020  
So he with difficulty and labour hard  
Moved on, with difficulty and labour he ;  
But he once past, soon after, when man fell,  
Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
Following his track, such was the will of Heav'n,  
Paved after him a broad and beaten way  
Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf  
Tamely endured a bridge of wond'rous length,  
From hell continued, reaching th' utmost orb  
Of this frail world ; by which the spirits perverse 1030  
With easy intercourse pass to and fro  
To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
God and good Angels guard by special grace.  
But now at last the sacred influence  
Of light appears, and from the walls of heav'n  
Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night  
A glimmering dawn : here Nature first begins  
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire  
As from her outmost works, a broken foe,  
With tumult less and with less hostile din, 1040  
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease  
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light,  
And like a weather-beaten vessel holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn ;  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off th' empyreal heav'n, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermined square or round,  
With opal towers and battlements adorned

<sup>1</sup> The ship in which Jason and his companions sailed to fetch the golden fleece from Colchis, in the Black Sea.

## Paradise Lost

Of living sapphire, once his native seat ; 1050  
And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,  
This pendent world,<sup>1</sup> in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude, close by the moon.  
Thither, full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accursed, and in a cursèd hour, he hies.

<sup>1</sup> See *Measure for Measure*, Act iii. Sc. 1.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

God sitting on His throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created, shows him to the Son, who sat at His right hand, foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears His own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares His purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to His Father for the manifestation of His gracious purpose towards Man; but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine justice; Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore with all his progeny devoted to death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers Himself a ransom for Man; the Father accepts Him, ordains His incarnation, pronounces His exaltation above all names in heaven and earth; commands all the Angels to adore Him; they obey, and, hymning to their harps in full choir, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wandering he first finds a place, since called the Limbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither, thence comes to the gate of heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it; his passage thence to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uriel the regent of that orb; but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and Man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates.

HAIL, holy Light ! offspring of heav'n first-born,  
Or of the Eternal co-eternal beam,  
May I express thee unblamed ? since GOD is light,<sup>1</sup>  
And never but in unapproachèd light  
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee,  
Bright effluence of bright essence increate !  
Or hear'st thou rather, pure ethereal stream,  
Whose fountain who shall tell ?<sup>2</sup> before the sun,  
Before the heavens thou wert, and at the voice  
Of GOD, as with a mantle, didst invest 10  
'The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
Won from the void and formless infinite.  
Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,  
Escaped the Stygian pool, though long detained  
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight  
Through utter and through middle darkness borne,  
With other notes than to th' Orphean lyre,<sup>3</sup>  
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night,

<sup>1</sup> 1 St. John i. 5; 1 Tim. vi. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Job xxxviii. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Orpheus wrote a hymn to Night, addressing her as "Mother of gods and men."

# Paradise Lost

Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down  
The dark descent, and up to reascend, 20  
Though hard and rare : thee I revisit safe,  
And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp ; but thou  
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain  
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;  
So thick a drop serene <sup>1</sup> hath quenched their orbs,  
Or dim suffusion veiled. Yet not the more  
Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt  
Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,  
Smit with the love of sacred song ; but chief  
Thee Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath, 30  
That wash thy hallowed feet, and warbling flow,  
Nightly I visit ; nor sometimes forget  
Those other two equalled with me in fate,  
So were I equalled with them in renown !  
Blind Thamyris <sup>2</sup> and blind Mæonides,<sup>3</sup>  
And Tiresias <sup>4</sup> and Phineus,<sup>5</sup> prophets old.  
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move  
Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird  
Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid  
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year 40  
Seasons return, but not to me returns  
Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom or summer's rose,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ;  
But cloud instead, and ever-during dark  
Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men  
Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair  
Presented with a universal blank  
Of nature's works, to me expunged and rased,  
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out. 50  
So much the rather thou, celestial Light,  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
Of things invisible to mortal sight.

<sup>1</sup> Milton's blindness was caused by *gutta serena*.

<sup>2</sup> A Thracian who invented the Doric measures.

<sup>3</sup> Homer.

<sup>4</sup> A blind Theban prophet.—Newron.

<sup>5</sup> King of Arcadia.

## Paradise Lost

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
From the pure empyrean where He sits  
High throned above all highth, bent down His eye,  
His own works, and their works, at once to view.  
About Him all the Sanctities of heaven 60  
Stood thick as stars, and from His sight received  
Beatitude past utterance ; on His right  
The radiant image of His glory sat,  
His only Son : on earth He first beheld  
Our two first parents, yet the only two  
Of mankind, in the happy garden placed,  
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
Uninterrupted joy, unrivalled love,  
In blissful solitude : He then surveyed  
Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there 70  
Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night  
In the dun air sublime, and ready now  
To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet,  
On the bare outside of this world, that seemed  
Firm land imbosomed without firmament,  
Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.  
Him GOD beholding from His prospect high,  
Wherein past, present, future, He beholds,  
Thus to His only Son foreseeing spake :  
“ Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage 80  
Transports our adversary, whom no bounds  
Prescribed, no bars of hell, nor all the chains  
Heaped on him there, nor yet the main abyss  
Wide interrupt, can hold ; so bent he seems  
On desperate revenge, that shall redound  
Upon his own rebellious head. And now,  
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way  
Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,  
Directly towards the new-created world,  
And Man there placed, with purpose to assay 90  
If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,  
By some false guile pervert ; and shall pervert :  
For man will hearken to his glozing lies,  
And easily transgress the sole command,  
Sole pledge of his obedience : so will fall



## Paradise Lost

He and his faithless progeny. Whose fault?  
Whose but his own? Ingrate! he had of me  
All he could have: I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
Such I created all th' ethereal Powers 100  
And Spirits, both them who stood and them who  
failed:

Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not free, what proof could they have given sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,  
Where only, what they needs must do, appeared,  
Not what they would? what praise could they receive?  
What pleasure I from such obedience paid,  
When will and reason, reason also is choice,  
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoiled,  
Made passive both, had served necessity, 110  
Not me? They therefore, as to right belonged,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse  
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate;  
As if predestination over-ruled  
Their will, disposed by absolute decree  
Or high foreknowledge: they themselves decreed  
Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.  
So without least impulse or shadow of fate, 120  
Or aught by me immutably foreseen,  
They trespass, authors to themselves in all,  
Both what they judge and what they choose; for so  
I formed them free, and free they must remain,  
Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change  
Their nature, and revoke the high decree,  
Unchangeable, eternal, which ordained  
Their freedom; they themselves ordained their fall.  
The first sort by their own suggestion fell,  
Self-tempted, self-depraved: Man falls deceived 130  
By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,  
The other none: in mercy and justice both,  
Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel;  
But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine."

# Paradise Lost

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance filled  
All heav'n, and in the blessed spirits elect  
Sense of new joy ineffable diffused.  
Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
Most glorious, in Him all His Father shone  
Substantially expressed,<sup>1</sup> and in His face 140  
Divine compassion visibly appeared,  
Love without end, and without measure grace ;  
Which uttering, thus He to His Father spake :  
    "O Father, gracious was that word which closed  
Thy sov'reign sentence, that man should find grace ;  
For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol  
Thy praises with th' innumerable sound  
Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
Encompassed shall resound thee ever blest.  
For should Man finally be lost, should Man, 150  
Thy creature late so loved, thy youngest son,  
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though joined  
With his own folly ? that be from thee far,  
That far be from thee, Father, who art judge  
Of all things made, and judgest only right.  
Or shall the adversary thus obtain  
His end, and frustrate thine ? shall he fulfil  
His malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,  
Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,  
Yet with revenge accomplished, and to hell 160  
Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thyself  
Abolish thy creation, and unmake,  
For him, what for thy glory thou hast made ?  
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both  
Be questioned and blasphemed without defence."  
    To whom the great Creator thus replied :  
    "O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,  
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone 170  
My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,  
All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all  
As my eternal purpose hath decreed :  
Man shall not quite be lost, but saved who will,

<sup>1</sup> Heb. i. 3.

# Paradise Lost

Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
Freely vouchsafed : once more I will renew  
His lapsèd powers, though forfeit and enthralled  
By sin to foul exorbitant desires :  
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
On even ground against his mortal foe,  
By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
His fall'n condition is, and to me owe  
All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.  
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace  
Elect above the rest ; so is my will :  
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warned  
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
Th' incensèd Deity, while offered grace  
Invites ; for I will clear their senses dark,  
What may suffice, and soften stony hearts <sup>1</sup>  
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190  
To prayer, repentance, and obedience due  
Though but endeavoured with sincere intent,  
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
And I will place within them as a guide  
My umpire Conscience, whom if they will hear,  
Light after light well used they shall attain,  
And to the end persisting safe arrive.  
This my long sufferance and my day of grace  
They who neglect and scorn shall never taste ;  
But hard be hardened, blind be blinded more, 200  
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall ;  
And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
But yet all is not done : Man disobeying,  
Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins  
Against the high supremacy of heav'n,  
Affecting Godhead, and so losing all,  
To expiate his treason hath naught left,  
But to destruction sacred and devote,  
He with his whole posterity must die ;  
Die he or justice must ; unless for him 210  
Some other able, or as willing, pay  
The rigid satisfaction, death for death.

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. xxxvi. 26.

## Paradise Lost

Say, heav'nly Powers, where shall we find such love?  
Which of you will be mortal to redeem  
Man's mortal crime, and just the unjust to save?<sup>1</sup>  
Dwells in all heaven charity so dear?"

He asked, but all the heav'nly choir stood mute,  
And silence was in heav'n : on Man's behalf  
Patron or intercessor none appeared,  
Much less that durst upon his own head draw      220  
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
And now without redemption all mankind  
Must have been lost, adjudged to death and hell  
By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,  
His dearest mediation thus renewed :

"Father, thy word is passed ; man shall find grace ;  
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
To visit all thy creatures, and to all      230  
Comes unprevented, unimplored, unsought ?  
Happy for Man, so coming ; he her aid  
Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost ;  
Atonement for himself or offering meet,  
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring.  
Behold me then, me for him, life for life,  
I offer ; on me let thine anger fall ;  
Account me Man ; I for his sake will leave  
Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee  
Freely put off, and for him lastly die      240  
Well pleased ; on me let Death wreak all his rage ;  
Under his gloomy power I shall not long  
Lie vanquished ; thou hast given me to possess  
Life in myself for ever, by thee I live,<sup>2</sup>  
Though now to Death I yield, and am his due  
All that of me can die ; yet that debt paid,  
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave  
His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul  
For ever with corruption there to dwell :<sup>3</sup>  
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue      250  
My vanquisher, spoiled of his vaunted spoil ;

<sup>1</sup> 1 Peter iii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> John v. 26.

<sup>3</sup> Psalm xvi. 10.

## Paradise Lost

Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop  
Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarmed.  
I through the ample air in triumph high  
Shall lead hell captive<sup>1</sup> maugre hell, and show  
The powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight  
Pleased, out of heaven shalt look down and smile,  
While by thee raised I ruin all my foes,  
Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave :<sup>2</sup>  
Then with the multitude of my redeemed 260  
Shall enter heaven long absent, and return,  
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
Of anger shall remain, but peace assured  
And reconciliation : wrath shall be no more  
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire."

His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
Silent yet spake, and breathed immortal love  
To mortal men, above which only shone  
Filial obedience : as a sacrifice  
Glad to be offered, He attends the will 270  
Of His great Father. Admiration seized  
All heav'n, what this might mean and whither tend,  
Wond'ring ; but soon th' Almighty thus replied :

" O thou in heav'n and earth the only peace  
Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou  
My sole complacency ! well thou know'st how dear  
To me are all my works, nor man the least,  
Though last created, that for him I spare  
Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
By losing thee awhile, the whole race lost. 280  
Thou, therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,  
Their nature also to thy nature join ;  
And be thyself man among men on earth,  
Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed  
By wondrous birth : be thou in Adam's room  
The head of all mankind, thou Adam's son.  
As in him perish all men, so in thee,  
As from a second root, shall be restored,<sup>3</sup>  
As many as are restored, without thee none.

<sup>1</sup> Psalm lxxviii. 18 ; Col. ii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 22.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 26.

## Paradise Lost

His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit      290  
Imputed shall absolve them who renounce  
Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
Shall satisfy for Man, be judged and die ;  
And dying rise, and rising with Him raise  
His brethren, ransomed with His own dear life.  
So heav'nly love shall outdo hellish hate,  
Giving to death, and dying to redeem ;  
So dearly to redeem what hellish hate      300  
So easily destroyed, and still destroys  
In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume  
Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.  
Because thou hast, though throned in highest bliss  
Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
God-like fruition, quitted all to save  
A world from utter loss, and hast been found  
By merit more than birthright Son of God,  
Found worthiest to be so by being good,      310  
Far more than great or high ; because in thee  
Love hath abounded more than glory abounds ;  
Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt  
With thee thy manhood also to this throne ;  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
Anointed universal King ; all power  
I give thee, reign for ever, and assume  
Thy merits ; under thee, as head supreme,  
Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce :  
All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide<sup>1</sup>      [320  
In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell.  
When thou, attended gloriously from heav'n,  
Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
The summoning archangels to proclaim  
Thy dread tribunal : forthwith from all winds  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
Of all past ages, to the general doom

<sup>1</sup> Phil. ii. 10.

# Paradise Lost

Shall hasten, such a peal shall rouse their sleep.  
 Then, all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge 330  
 Bad men and angels ; they arraigned shall sink  
 Beneath thy sentence ; hell, her numbers full,  
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile  
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
 New heav'n and earth,<sup>1</sup> wherein the just shall dwell,  
 And after all their tribulations long  
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth :  
 Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,<sup>2</sup>  
 For regal sceptre then no more shall need, 340  
 God shall be all in all.<sup>3</sup> But all ye gods  
 Adore Him, who to compass all this dies,  
 Adore the Son, and honour Him as me."

No sooner had th' Almighty ceased, but all  
 The multitude of angels with a shout,  
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
 As from blest voices, uttering joy, heav'n rung  
 With jubilee, and loud hosannas filled  
 The eternal regions. Lowly reverent  
 Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground  
 With solemn adoration down they cast <sup>4</sup> 350  
 Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold,  
 Immortal amarant,<sup>5</sup> a flow'r which once  
 In Paradise fast by the Tree of Life  
 Began to bloom, but soon for man's offence  
 To heav'n removed, where first it grew, there grows,  
 And flow'rs aloft shading the fount of life,  
 And where the river of bliss through midst of heav'n  
 Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream ;  
 With these that never fade the spirits elect 360  
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams ;  
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off ; the bright  
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,  
 Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.

<sup>1</sup> 2 Peter iii. 12, 13.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. i. 6.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 24.

<sup>4</sup> Rev. iv. 10.

<sup>5</sup> A flower of a purple velvet colour. It was supposed not to die when gathered, but to recover its lustre when sprinkled with water. The name is Greek for "unfading."

## Paradise Lost

Then, crowned again, their golden harps they took,  
Harps ever tuned, that glittering by their side  
Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet  
Of charming symphony they introduce  
Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;  
No voice exempt, no voice but well could join 370  
Melodious part, such concord is in heav'n.

Thee, Father, first they sung, Omnipotent,  
Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
Eternal King ; thee, Author of all being,  
Fountain of light, thyself invisible  
Amidst the glorious brightness where 'Thou sitt'st  
Throned inaccessible, but when thou shadest  
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,  
Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear ; 380  
Yet dazzle heav'n, that brightest Seraphim  
Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.  
Thee next they sang of all creation first,  
Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud  
Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,  
Whom else no creature can behold : on thee  
Impressed th' effulgence of His glory abides ;  
Transfused on thee His ample Spirit rests.  
He heav'n of heavens and all the powers therein 390  
By thee created, and by thee threw down  
Th' aspiring Dominations. 'Thou that day  
Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,  
Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook  
Heav'n's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks  
Thou drov'st of warring angels disarrayed.  
Back from pursuit thy powers with loud acclaim  
Thee only extolled, Son of thy Father's might,  
To execute fierce vengeance on His foes.  
Not so on Man ; him, thro' their malice fall'n, 400  
Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom  
So strictly ; but much more to pity incline.  
No sooner did thy dear and only Son  
Perceive thee purposed not to doom frail man



## Paradise Lost

So strictly, but much more to pity inclined,  
He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife  
Of mercy and justice in thy face discerned,  
Regardless of the bliss wherein He sat  
Second to thee, offered Himself to die  
For man's offence. O unexampled love, 410  
Love nowhere to be found less than Divine!  
Hail, Son of God, Saviour of men, thy name  
Shall be the copious matter of my song  
Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise  
Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.

Thus they in heav'n, above the starry sphere,  
Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.  
Meanwhile, upon the firm opacous globe  
Of this round world, whose first convex divides 420  
The luminous inferior orbs, inclosed  
From Chaos and th' inroad of Darkness old,  
Satan alighted walks: a globe far off  
It seemed, now seems a boundless continent,  
Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of night  
Stainless exposed, and ever-threat'ning storms  
Of Chaos blust'ring round, inclement sky;  
Save on that side which from the wall of heav'n,  
Though distant far, some small reflection gains  
Of glimmering air, less vexed with tempest loud:  
Here walked the fiend at large in spacious field. 430  
As when a vulture on Imaüs<sup>1</sup> bred,  
Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,  
Dislodging from a region scarce of prey,  
To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids  
On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs  
Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams;  
But in his way lights on the barren plains  
Of Sericana,<sup>2</sup> where Chineses drive  
With sails and wind their cany waggons light:  
So on this windy sea of land the fiend 440  
Walked up and down alone, bent on his prey;

<sup>1</sup> A mountain in Asia. Its name signifies snowy. It is the eastern boundary of Western Tartary.

<sup>2</sup> Serica lies between China on the east and Imaüs on the west.—  
FROM NEWTON.

# Paradise Lost

Alone, for other creature in this place<sup>1</sup>  
 Living or lifeless to be found was none,  
 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth  
 Up hither like aërial vapours flew  
 Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
 With vanity had filled the works of men :  
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
 Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,  
 Or happiness in this or th<sup>r</sup> other life ; 450  
 All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
 Of painful superstition and blind zeal,  
 Naught seeking but the praise of men, here find  
 Fit retribution, empty as their deeds :  
 All the unaccomplished works of nature's hand,  
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixed,  
 Dissolved on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
 Till final dissolution, wander here,  
 Not in the neighb'ring moon, as some have dreamed ;<sup>2</sup>  
 Those argent fields more likely habitants, 460  
 Translated saints, or middle spirits hold  
 Betwixt th<sup>r</sup> angelical and human kind.  
 Hither of ill-joined sons and daughters born<sup>3</sup>  
 First from the ancient world those giants came,  
 With many a vain exploit, though then renowned .  
 The builders next of Babel on the plain  
 Of Sennaar, and still with vain design  
 New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build.  
 Others came single : he who to be deemed  
 A god leaped fondly into Etna flames, 470  
 Empedocles,<sup>4</sup> and he who to enjoy  
 Plato's Elysium leaped into the sea,  
 Cleombrotus,<sup>5</sup> and many more too long,  
 Embryoes and idiots, eremites and friars,  
 White, black, and grey,<sup>6</sup> with all their trumpery.

<sup>1</sup> Limbo.

<sup>2</sup> Ariosto, in the "Orlando Furioso."

<sup>3</sup> The sons of God "ill-joined" with the daughters of "men." See Gen. vi. 4. Subject of Moore's "Loves of the Angels," and Byron's "Heaven and Earth."

<sup>4</sup> A Pythagorean philosopher. His attempt at disappearing in an extraordinary manner from the earth was defeated by the volcano throwing back his iron pattens.

<sup>5</sup> An Epirot.

<sup>6</sup> Carmelites, Dominicans, and Franciscans.

## Paradise Lost

Here pilgrims roam, that strayed so far to seek  
In Golgotha Him dead, who lives in heav'n ;  
And they who, to be sure of paradise,  
Dying put on the weeds of Dominic,  
Or in Franciscan think to pass disguised ;<sup>1</sup> 480  
They pass the planets seven, and pass the fixed,  
And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs  
The trepidation talked,<sup>2</sup> and that first moved :  
And now Saint Peter at heav'n's wicket seems  
To wait them with his keys, and now at foot  
Of heav'n's ascent they lift their feet, when, lo !  
A violent cross wind from either coast  
Blows them transverse ten thousand leagues awry  
Into the devious air : then might ye see  
Cows, hoods, and habits with their wearers tost 490  
And fluttered into rags ; then reliques, beads,  
Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,  
The sport of winds : all these upwhirled aloft  
Fly o'er the back side of the world far off,  
Into a Lumbo large and broad, since called  
The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown  
Long after, now unpeopled, and untrod.  
All this dark globe the fiend found as he passed,  
And long he wandered, till at last a gleam  
Of dawning light turned thitherward in haste 500  
His travelled steps ; far distant he descries,  
Ascending by degrees magnificent  
Up to the wall of heav'n, a structure high,  
At top whereof, but far more rich, appeared  
The work as of a kingly palace gate,  
With frontispiece of diamond and gold  
Embellished ; thick with sparkling orient gem  
The portal shone, inimitable on earth  
By model or by shading pencil drawn.  
The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw<sup>3</sup> 510  
Angels ascending and descending, bands

<sup>1</sup> In the dark ages, a ridiculous superstition prevailed that a dying sinner who put on the habit of a religious order was sure of salvation. It was frequently done.

<sup>2</sup> Milton speaks here according to Ptolemy's astronomy. — *From*  
NEWTON.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. xxviii. 12, 13.

## Paradise Lost

Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled  
To Padan-Aram in the field of Luz,  
Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
And waking cried, *This is the gate of heav'n.*  
Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There always, but drawn up to heav'n sometimes  
Viewless, and underneath a bright sea flowed  
Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
Who after came from earth sailing arrived, 520  
Wafted by angels, or flew o'er the lake,  
Wrapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.  
The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
The fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss :  
Direct against which opened from beneath,  
Just o'er the blissful seat of paradise,  
A passage down to the earth, a passage wide,  
Wider by far than that of after-times  
Over mount Sion, and, though that were large, 530  
Over the Promised Land to God so dear,  
By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,  
On high behest His angels to and fro  
Passed frequent, and His eye with choice regard,  
From Pancas, the fount of Jordan's flood,  
To Beërsaba, where the Holy Land  
Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore :  
So wide the op'ning seemed, where bounds were set  
To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.  
Satan from hence now on the lower stair, 540  
That scaled by steps of gold to heaven gate,  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
Of all this world at once. As when a scout,  
Through dark and desert ways with peril gone  
All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some foreign land  
First-seen, or some renowned metropolis,  
With glistening spires and pinnacles adorned, 550  
Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams :

# Paradise Lost

Such wonder seized, though after heaven seen,  
The Spirit malign ; but much more envy seized  
At sight of all this world beheld so fair,  
Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood  
So high above the circling canopy  
Of night's extended shade, from eastern point  
Of Libra to the fleecy star,<sup>1</sup> that bears  
Andromeda far off Atlantic seas  
Beyond th' horizon : then from pole to pole 560  
He views in breadth, and without longer pause  
Down right into the world's first regions throws  
His flight precipitant, and winds with ease  
Through the pure marble air his oblique way  
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone  
Stars distant, but nigh hand seemed other worlds ;  
Or other worlds they seemed, or happy isles,  
Like those Hesperian gardens<sup>2</sup> famed of old,  
Fortunate fields, and groves, and flow'ry vales,  
'Thrice happy isles ; but who dwelt happy there 570  
He stayed not to enquire. Above them all  
The golden sun, in splendour likest heaven,  
Allured his eye : thither his course he bends  
Through the calm firmament ; but up or down,  
By centre or eccentric, hard to tell,  
Or longitude, where the great luminary,  
Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,  
That from his lordly eye keep distance due,  
Dispenses light from far ; they as they move  
Their starry dance in numbers that compute 580  
Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering  
lamp  
Turn swift their various motions, or are turned  
By his magnetic beam, that gently warms  
'The universe, and to each inward part  
With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep ;  
So wondrously was set his station bright.

<sup>1</sup> Aries, *i.e.* from one half of the ecliptic to the other, from east to west. The constellation Andromeda is immediately above or over Aries.  
—NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> The Cape Verde Islands ; the "Fortunate Islands."

# Paradise Lost

There lands the fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb  
Through his glazed optic tube yet never saw, 590  
The place he found beyond expression bright,  
Compared with aught on earth, metal or stones ;  
Not all parts like, but all alike informed  
With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire ;  
If metal, part seemed gold, part silver clear ;  
If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,  
Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone  
In Aaron's breast-plate,<sup>1</sup> and a stone<sup>2</sup> besides  
Imagined rather oft than elsewhere seen,  
That stone, or like to that which here below 600  
Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
In vain, though by their powerful art they bind  
Volatile Hermes,<sup>3</sup> and call up unbound  
In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,  
Drained through a limbeck to his native form.  
What wonder then if fields and regions here  
Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run  
Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch  
Th' arch-chemic sun so far from us remote 610  
Produces, with terrestrial humour mixed,  
Here in the dark so many precious things  
Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?  
Here matter new to gaze the devil met  
Undazzled, far and wide his eye commands,  
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
But all sun-shine ; as when his beams at noon  
Culminate from th' Equator, as they now  
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
Shadow from body opaque can fall ; and the air,  
Nowhere so clear, sharpened his visual ray 620  
To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
Saw within ken a glorious angel stand,

<sup>1</sup> Exod. xxviii. 15-21.

<sup>2</sup> The philosopher's stone, supposed to have the power (if found) of turning the baser metals into gold.

<sup>3</sup> Quick-silver, called Hermes by the alchemists. The names of heathen gods were applied to the materials of the alchemist's laboratory. Proteus was a sea-god capable of transforming himself into various shapes.

# Paradise Lost

The same whom John saw also in the sun :<sup>1</sup>  
His back was turned, but not his brightness hid ;  
Of beaming sunny rays, a golden tiar  
Circled his head, nor less his locks behind  
Illustrious on his shoulders fledge with wings  
Lay waving round ; on some great charge employed  
He seemed, or fixed in cogitation deep.  
Glad was the spirit impure, as now in hope 630  
To find who might direct his wand'ring flight  
To paradise, the happy seat of man,  
His journey's end, and our beginning woe.  
But first he casts to change his proper shape,  
Which else might work him danger or delay :  
And now a stripling Cherub he appears,  
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
Youth smiled celestial, and to every limb  
Suitable grace diffused, so well he feigned ;  
Under a coronet his flowing hair 640  
In curls on either cheek played ; wings he wore  
Of many a coloured plume sprinkled with gold ;  
His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
Before his decent steps a silver wand.  
He drew not nigh unheard ; the angel bright,  
E'er he drew nigh, his radiant visage turned,  
Admonished by his ear, and straight was known  
The archangel Uriel,<sup>2</sup> one of the sev'n  
Who in God's presence nearest to His throne  
Stand ready at command, and are His eyes 650  
That run through all the heav'ns, or down to the  
earth  
Bear His swift errands, over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accosts :  
" Uriel, for thou of those sev'n spirits that stand  
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,  
The first art wont His great authentic will  
Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,  
Where all His sons thy embassy attend ;

<sup>1</sup> Rev. xix. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Uriel is derived from two Hebrew words, signifying *God is my light*. — NEWTON. See mention made of him in Apocrypha, 2 Esdras, iv.-v.

## Paradise Lost

And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
Like honour to obtain, and as His eye 660  
To visit oft this new creation round ;  
Unspeakable desire to see, and know  
All these His wondrous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these His works so wondrous He ordained,  
Hath brought me from the choirs of Cherubim  
Alone thus wand'ring. Brightest Seraph, tell  
In which of all these shining orbs hath Man  
His fixèd seat, or fixèd seat hath none,  
But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ; 670  
That I may find him, and, with secret gaze  
Or open admiration, him behold,  
On whom the great Creator hath bestowed  
Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces poured ;  
That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
The universal Maker we may praise ;  
Who justly hath driven out His rebel foes  
To deepest hell, and to repair that loss  
Created this new happy race of men  
To serve Him better : wise are all His ways." 680  
So spake the false dissembler unperceived ;  
For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By His permissive will, through heav'n and earth :  
And oft, though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity  
Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
Where no ill seems ; which now for once beguiled  
Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 690  
The sharpest-sighted spirit of all in heav'n :  
Who to the fraudulent impostor foul  
In his uprightness answer thus returned :  
" Fair angel, thy desire which tends to know  
The works of God, thereby to glorify  
The great Work-master, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither



## Paradise Lost

From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps, 700  
Contented with report, hear only in heaven :  
For wonderful indeed are all His works,  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance always with delight :  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?  
I saw, when at His Word the formless mass,  
This world's material mould, came to a heap :  
Confusion heard His voice, and wild uproar 710  
Stood ruled ; stood vast infinitude confined ;  
Till at His second bidding darkness fled,  
Light shone, and order from disorder sprung.  
Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire,  
And this ethereal quintessence of heav'n  
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That rolled orbicular, and turned to stars  
Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
Each had his place appointed, each his course, 720  
The rest in circuit walls this universe.  
Look downward on that globe, whose hither side,  
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;  
That place is Earth, the seat of Man ; that light  
His day, which else as the other hemisphere  
Night would invade, but there the neighbouring moon,  
So call that opposite fair star, her aid  
Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
Still ending, still renewing, through mid heav'n,  
With borrowed light her countenance triform 730  
Hence fills and empties to enlighten the earth,  
And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
That spot to which I point is Paradise,  
Adam's abode, those lofty shades his bow'r :  
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires."  
Thus said, he turned ; and Satan, bowing low,  
As to superior spirits is wont in heaven,  
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,

## Paradise Lost

Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,  
Down from th' ecliptic, sped with hoped success ; 740  
Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel,  
Nor stayed, till on Niphates' top<sup>1</sup> he lights.

<sup>1</sup> A mountain bordering on Mesopotamia, near which the earthly Paradise is supposed to have been placed.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK IV.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the Tree of Life, as the highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the Tree of Knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to founl his temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them awhile to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel descending on a sunbeam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good angel down to Paradise, discovered afterwards by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of nightwatch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance; but, hindered by a sign from heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O FOR that warning voice, which he,<sup>1</sup> who saw  
The Apocalypse, heard cry in heaven aloud,  
Then when the Dragon,<sup>2</sup> put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be revenged on men,  
“Woe to the inhabitants on earth !” that now,  
While time was. our first parents had been warned  
The coming of their secret foe, and ’scaped,  
Haply so ’scaped his mortal snare ; for now  
Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,  
The tempter ere th’ accuser of mankind,  
To wreak on innocent frail man his loss  
Of that first battle, and his flight to hell :  
Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth  
Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,  
And like a devilish engine back recoils

<sup>1</sup> St. John; Rev. xii. 10: "And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, . . . ." and at verse 12: "Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you. . . ."

2 Devil.

# Paradise Lost

Upon himself; horror and doubt distract  
His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir  
The hell within him, for within him hell 20  
He brings, and round about him, nor from hell  
One step, no more than from himself, can fly  
By change of place : now conscience wakes despair  
That slumbered, wakes the bitter memory  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his grieved look he fixes sad ;  
Sometimes towards heav'n and the full-blazing sun,  
Which now sat high in his meridian tow'r : 30  
Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began :  
    "O thou that, with surpassing glory crowned,<sup>1</sup>  
Look'st from thy sole dominion like the god  
Of this new world, at whose sight all the stars  
Hide their diminished heads, to thee I call,  
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,  
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams,  
That bring to my remembrance from what state  
I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere ;  
Till pride and worse ambition threw me down, 40  
Warring in heav'n against heav'n's matchless King.  
Ah, wherefore ! He deserved no such return  
From me, whom He created what I was  
In that bright eminence, and with His good  
Upbraided none ; nor was His service hard.  
What could be less than to afford Him praise,  
The easiest recompense, and pay Him thanks,  
How due ! yet all His good proved ill in me,  
And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high,  
I sdeined<sup>2</sup> subjection, and thought one step higher 50  
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit  
The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
So burthensome, still paying, still to owe ;  
Forgetful what from Him I still received,

<sup>1</sup> Milton originally designed to write a tragedy on the Fall, and this grand speech was intended to begin it. This is asserted by Porson on the authority of Milton's nephew, Edward Phillips.

<sup>2</sup> Disdained.

## Paradise Lost

And understood not that a grateful mind  
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
Indebted and discharged ; what burden then ?  
O had His powerful destiny ordained  
Me some inferior angel, I had stood  
Then happy ; no unbounded hope had raised 60  
Ambition ! Yet why not ? some other power  
As great might have aspired, and me, though mean,  
Drawn to his part ; but other powers as great  
Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within  
Or from without, to all temptations armed.  
Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand ?  
Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what to accuse  
But heav'n's free love dealt equally to all ?  
Be then His love accursed, since love or hate,  
To me alike, it deals eternal woe : 70  
Nay, cursed be thou ; since against His thy will  
Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
Me miserable ! which way shall I fly  
Infinite wrath, and infinite despair ?  
Which way I fly is hell ; myself am hell ;  
And in the lowest deep a lower deep  
Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide ;  
To which the hell I suffer seems a heav'n.  
O then at last relent : is there no place  
Left for repentance, none for pardon left ? 80  
None left but by submission ; and that word  
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame  
Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduced  
With other promises and other vaunts  
Than to submit, boasting I could subdue  
Th' Omnipotent. Ay me ! they little know  
How dearly I abide that boast so vain,  
Under what torments inwardly I groan ;  
While they adore me on the throne of hell,  
With diadem and sceptre high advanced, 90  
The lower still I fall, only supreme  
In misery ; such joy ambition finds.  
But say I could repent, and could obtain  
By act of grace my former state ; how soon

## Paradise Lost

Would highth recall high thoughts, how soon unsay  
What feigned submission swore : ease would recant .  
Vows made in pain, as violent and void.

For never can true reconcilment grow  
Where wounds of deadly hate have pierced so deep ;  
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse 100

And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear  
Short intermission bought with double smart.

This knows my Punisher ; therefore as far  
From granting He, as I from begging peace :  
All hope excluded thus, behold instead

Of us out-cast, exiled, his new delight,  
Mankind created, and for him this world.  
So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,

Farewell remorse : all good to me is lost ;  
Evil, be thou my good ; by thee at least 110  
Divided empire with heav'n's King I hold,

By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;  
As Man ere long and this new world shall know."

Thus while he spake, each passion dimmed his face  
Thrice changed with pale ire, envy, and despair,  
Which marred his borrowed visage, and betrayed  
Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld :

For heav'nly minds from such distempers foul  
Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,  
Each perturbation smoothed with outward calm, 120  
Artificer of fraud ; and was the first

That practised falsehood under saintly show,  
Deep malice to conceal, couched with revenge :  
Yet not enough had practised to deceive

Uriel once warned ; whose eye pursued him down  
The way he went, and on th' Assyrian mount  
Saw him disfigured, more than could befall  
Spirit of happy sort : his gestures fierce

He marked, and mad demeanour, then alone,  
As he supposed, all unobserved, unseen. 130

So on he fares, and to the border comes  
Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,  
Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
As with a rural mound, the champaign head

## Paradise Lost

Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides  
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,  
 Access denied; and over head up grew  
 Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,  
 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
 A sylvan scene, and, as the ranks ascend 140  
 Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
 The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung;  
 Which to our general sire gave prospect large  
 Into his nether empire neighbouring round:  
 And higher than that wall a circling row  
 Of goodliest trees loaden with fairest fruit,  
 Blossoms and fruits at once of golden huc  
 Appeared, with gay enamelled colours mixed:  
 On which the sun more glad impressed his beams, 150  
 Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,  
 When God hath show'ed the earth; so lovely seemed  
 That landscape: and of pure now purer air  
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales,  
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
 Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
 Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past 160  
 Mozambic, off at sea north-east winds blow  
 Sabeian odours from the spicy shore<sup>1</sup>  
 Of Araby the Blest, with such delay

<sup>1</sup> The perfumes from the shores of India and its islands can be perceived far out at sea, when the wind blows off the land—

"The spicy breezes  
Blow soft from Ceylon's isle,"

says Bishop Heber in his fine Missionary Hymn; and every one who has lived in the East will remember how oppressive *on shore* the scent-laden air, heavy with perfume, is. How constantly it recalls to one's mind Byron's exquisite lines in the "Bride of Abydos"—

"The light wings of Zephyr, oppressed with perfume,  
Wax faint o'er the gardens of Gul in her bloom:"

but coming on the briny sea breezes this fragrance is delightful to the mariner. It is in spring, when the wind blows off the shore, that the air thus becomes the harbinger of a near haven.

Milton is said to have taken his description from *Diodorus Siculus*,  
B. III. 40.

## Paradise Lost

Well pleased they slack their course, and many a league  
Cheered with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles :  
So entertained those odorous sweets the fiend  
Who came their bane, though with them better pleased  
Than Asmodeus<sup>1</sup> with the fishy fume,  
That drove him, though enamoured, from the spouse  
Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent 170  
From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to th' ascent of that steep savage hill  
Satan had journeyed on, pensive and slow ;  
But further way found none, so thick entwined,  
As one continued brake, the undergrowth  
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplexed  
All path of man or beast that past that way.  
One gate there only was, and that looked east  
On the other side : which when th' arch-felon saw,  
Due entrance he disdained, and in contempt 180  
At one slight bound high overleaped all bound  
Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within  
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve  
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,  
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold :  
Or as a thief bent to unhoard the cash  
Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
Cross-barred and bolted fast, fear no assault, 190  
In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles :  
So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold ;  
So since into His church lewd hirelings climb.  
Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,  
The middle tree and highest<sup>2</sup> there that grew,  
Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life  
Thereby regained, but sat devising death  
To them who lived ; nor on the virtue thought  
Of that life-giving plant, but only used

<sup>1</sup> An evil spirit, who, loving Sarah, the daughter of Raguel, would not suffer any of the young men who espoused her to live. He was exorcised by the fumes arising from the heart and liver of a fish, which Tobit, by the instruction of an angel, burnt on the evening of his wedding. See Apocrypha, Tobit, viii.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. ii. 9.



# Paradise Lost

For prospect, what well used had been the pledge 200  
Of immortality. So little knows  
Any, but GOD alone, to value right  
The good before him, but perverts best things  
To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.  
Beneath him with new wonder now he views,  
To all delight of human sense exposed,  
In narrow room Nature's whole wealth, yea more,  
A heav'n on earth : for blissful Paradise  
Of GOD the garden was, by Him in the east  
Of Eden planted ; Eden stretched her line 210  
From Auran<sup>1</sup> eastwards to the royal tow'rs  
Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,  
Or where the sons of Eden long before  
Dwelt in Telassar.<sup>2</sup> In this pleasant soil  
His far more pleasant garden God ordained ;  
Out of the fertile ground He caused to grow  
All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste ;  
And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,  
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
Of vegetable gold ; and next to Life 220  
Our death, the Tree of Knowledge, grew fast by,  
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.  
Southward through Eden went a river large,  
Nor changed his course, but through the shaggy hill  
Passed underneath ingulfed ; for God had thrown  
That mountain as His garden mould, high raised  
Upon the rapid current, which, through veins  
Of porous earth with kindly thirst up drawn,  
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
Watered the garden ; thence united fell 230  
Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,  
Which from his darksome passage now appears ;  
And now divided into four main streams,  
Runs diverse, wand'ring many a famous realm  
And country, whereof here needs no account ;  
But rather to tell how, if art could tell,

<sup>1</sup> Haran.

<sup>2</sup> Isaiah xxxvii. 12. A province of the children of Eden, placed by Ptolemy in Babylonia.—*From* NEWTON.

# Paradise Lost

How from that sapphire fount the crispèd brooks,  
Rolling on orient pearl and sands of gold,  
With mazy error under pendent shades  
Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240  
Flow'rs worthy of Paradise, which not nice art  
In beds and curious knots, but nature boon  
Poured forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain,  
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
The open field, and where the unpierced shade  
Imbrowned the noontide bow'rs. Thus was this place  
A happy rural seat of various view :  
Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,  
Others whose fruit, burnished with golden rind,  
Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true, 250  
If true, here only, and of delicious taste.  
Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks  
Grazing the tender herb, were interposed,  
Or palmy hillock, or the flow'ry lap  
Of some irriguous valley spread her store,  
Flow'rs of all hue, and without thorn the rose :  
Another side, umbrageous grots and caves  
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps 260  
Luxuriant : meanwhile murmuring waters fall  
Down the slope hills, dispersed, or in a lake,  
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crowned  
Her crystal mirror holds, unite their streams.  
The birds their choir apply ; airs, vernal airs,  
Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune  
The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,<sup>1</sup>  
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,  
Led on th' eternal Spring. Not that fair field  
Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flow'rs,  
Herself a fairer flow'r, by gloomy Dis<sup>2</sup> 270

<sup>1</sup> Pan was a symbol of Nature. The Graces symbolised Spring, Summer, and Autumn. The Hours, the time requisite for the production and perfection of things.—RICHARDSON.

<sup>2</sup> Pluto. All the loveliest dreams of mythology, and the places remarkable for natural beauty—the plains of Enna, in Sicily ; the laurel-grove of Daphne, by the river Orontes ; the Castalian Spring, haunted by the Muses ; the Greek Isle, where Bacchus was nursed ; the Happy Valley, where the Princes of Abyssinia were nursed—are here named to exalt the wondrous beauty of the earthly Paradise by comparison.



## Paradise Lost

Was gathered, which cost Ceres all that pain  
 To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet grove  
 Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspired  
 Castalian spring, might with this paradise  
 Of Eden strive ; nor that Nyseian isle  
 Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,  
 Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Libyan Jove,  
 Hid Amalthea and her florid son  
 Young Bacchus from his stepdame Rhea's eye ;  
 Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard, 280  
 Mount Amara,<sup>1</sup> though this by some supposed  
 True paradise, under the Ethiop line  
 By Nilus' head, enclosed with shining rock,  
 A whole day's journey high, but wide remote  
 From this Assyrian garden, where the fiend  
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind  
 Of living creatures, new to sight and strange.

Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad  
 In naked majesty, seemed lords of all, 290  
 And worthy seemed : for in their looks divine  
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,  
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,  
 Severe, but in true filial freedom placed,  
 Whence true authority in men ; though both  
 Not equal, as their sex not equal, seemed ;  
 For contemplation he and valour formed,  
 For softness she and sweet attractive grace ;  
 He for God only, she for God in him.<sup>2</sup>  
 His fair large front and eye sublime declared 300  
 Absolute rule ; and hyacinthine locks  
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders broad :  
 She as a veil down to the slender waist  
 Her unadornèd golden tresses wore  
 Dishevelled, but in wanton ringlets waved,  
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied

<sup>1</sup> High hills in Ethiopia, under the equator ; within their circuit lay the guarded valley where the royal children of Abyssinia dwelt.—MASSEY. Our readers will be reminded of *Rasselas*.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 7-9.

## Paradise Lost

Subjection, but required with gentle sway,  
And by her yielded, by him best received,  
Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,  
And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay. 310  
Nor those mysterious parts were then concealed ;  
Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
Of nature's works, honour dishonourable,  
Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind  
With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,  
And banished from man's life his happiest life,  
Simplicity and spotless innocence !  
So passed they naked on, nor shunned the sight  
Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill : 320  
So hand in hand they passed, the loveliest pair  
That ever since in love's embraces met :  
Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.

Under a tuft of shade, that on a green  
Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain side  
They sat them down ; and after no more toil  
Of their sweet gard'ning labour than sufficed  
To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease 330  
More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite  
More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell,  
Nectarine fruits, which the compliant boughs  
Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline  
On the soft downy bank damasked with flow'rs :  
The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind,  
Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream ;  
Nor gentle purpose nor endearing smiles  
Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems  
Fair couple linked in happy nuptial league,  
Alone as they. About them frisking played 340  
All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase  
In wood or wilderness, forest or den ;  
Sporting the lion ramped, and in his paw  
Dandled the kid ; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
Gambolled before them ; th' unwieldy elephant  
To make them mirth used all his might, and wreathed  
His lithe proboscis ; close the serpent sly

## Paradise Lost

Insinuating wove with Gordian twine  
His braided train, and of his fatal guile  
Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass 350  
Couched, and now filled with pasture gazing sat,  
Or bedward ruminating : for the sun  
Declined was hasting now with prone career  
To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale  
Of heav'n the stars that usher evening rose :  
When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,  
Scarce thus at length failed speech recovered sad :  
    " O hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold ?  
Into our room of bliss thus high advanced  
Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360  
Not spirits, yet to heav'nly spirits bright  
Little inferior ; whom my thoughts pursue  
With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
In them divine resemblance, and such grace  
The hand that formed them on their shape hath poured !  
Ah, gentle pair, ye little think how nigh  
Your change approaches, when all these delights  
Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe ;  
More woe, the more your taste is now of joy ;  
Happy, but for so happy ill secured 370  
Long to continue ; and this high seat your heav'n  
Ill fenced for heav'n to keep out such a foe  
As now is entered : yet no purposed foe  
To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
Though I unpitied. League with you I seek,  
And mutual amity, so straight, so close,  
That I with you must dwell, or you with me  
Henceforth : my dwelling haply may not please,  
Like this fair Paradise, your sense ; yet such  
Accept, your Maker's work ; He gave it me, 380  
Which I as freely give : hell shall unfold<sup>1</sup>  
To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
And send forth all her kings : there will be room,  
Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
Your numerous offspring ; if no better place,  
Thank Him who puts me loth to this revenge

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xiv. 9.

## Paradise Lost

On you, who wrong me not, for Him who wronged.  
And should I at your harmless innocence  
Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,  
Honour and empire with revenge enlarged, 390  
By conquering this new world, compels me now  
To do what else, though damned, I should abhor."

So spake the fiend, and with necessity,  
The tyrant's plea, excused his devilish deeds.  
Then from his lofty stand on that high tree  
Down he alights among the sportful herd  
Of those fourfooted kinds, himself now one,  
Now other, as their shape served best his end  
Nearer to view his prey, and unespied  
To mark what of their state he more might learn 400  
By word or action marked : about them round  
A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;  
Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied  
In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,  
Strait couches close, then rising, changes oft  
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
Whence rushing he might surest seize them both  
Griped in each paw : when Adam, first of men, ·  
To first of women Eve, thus moving speech,  
Turned him all ear to hear new utterance flow : 410

"Sole partner and sole part of all these joys,  
Dearer thyself than all, needs must the Power  
That made us, and for us this ample world,  
Be infinitely good, and of His good  
As liberal and free as infinite ;  
That raised us from the dust, and placed us here  
In all this happiness, who at His hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
Aught whereof He hath need, He who requires  
From us no other service than to keep 420  
This one, this easy charge, of all the trees  
In Paradise that bear delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that only Tree  
Of Knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life ;  
So near grows death to life ; whate'er death is,  
Some dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou know'st

## Paradise Lost

God hath pronounced it death to taste that tree,  
The only sign of our obedience left  
Among so many signs of power and rule  
Conferred upon us, and dominion given 430  
Over all other creatures that possess  
Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard  
One easy prohibition, who enjoy  
Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
Unlimited of manifold delights :  
But let us ever praise Him and extol  
His bounty, following our delightful task  
To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers ;  
Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet."

To whom thus Eve replied : " O thou, for whom 440  
And from whom I was formed, flesh of thy flesh,  
And without whom am to no end, my guide  
And head, what thou hast said is just and right,  
For we to Him indeed all praises owe,  
And daily thanks ; I chiefly, who enjoy  
So far the happier lot, enjoying thee  
Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou  
Like consort to thyself canst no where find.  
That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
I first awaked, and found myself reposed 450  
Under a shade on flowers, much wond'ring where  
And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound  
Of waters issued from a cave, and spread  
Into a liquid plain, then stood unmoved,  
Pure as th' expanse of heav'n ; I thither went  
With unexperienced thought, and laid me down  
On the green bank, to look into the clear  
Smooth lake, that to me seemed another sky.  
As I bent down to look, just opposite 460  
A shape within the wat'ry gleam appeared,  
Bending to look on me : I started back,  
It started back ; but pleased I soon returned,  
Pleased it returned as soon with answering looks  
Of sympathy and love : there I had fixed  
Mine eyes till now, and pined with vain desire,

## Paradise Lost

Had not a voice thus warned me, 'What thou seest,  
What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself;  
With thee it came and goes : but follow me,  
And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470  
Thy coming, and thy soft embraces ; he  
Whose image thou art, him thou shalt enjoy  
Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear  
Multitudes like thyself, and thence be called  
Mother of human race.' What could I do,  
But follow straight, invisibly thus led?  
Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,  
Under a plantain ; yet, methought, less fair,  
Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
Than that smooth wat'ry image ; back I turned, 480  
Thou following criedst aloud, 'Return, fair Eve,  
Whom fliest thou? whom thou fliest, of him thou art,  
His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being, I lent  
Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,  
Substantial life, to have thee by my side  
Henceforth an individual solace dear :  
Part of my soul, I seek thee, and thee claim,  
My other half.' With that thy gentle hand  
Seized mine ; I yielded, and from that time see  
How beauty is excelled by manly grace, 490  
And wisdom, which alone is truly fair."

So spake our general mother, and, with eyes  
Of conjugal attraction unproved  
And meek surrender, half embracing leaned  
On our first father ; half her swelling breast  
Naked met his under the flowing gold  
Of her loose tresses hid : he, in delight  
Both of her beauty and submissive charms,  
Smiled with superior love, as Jupiter  
On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 500  
That shed May flowers, and pressed her matron lip  
With kisses pure : aside the devil turned  
For envy, yet with jealous leer malign  
Eyed them askance, and to himself thus plained :  
"Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two,  
Imparadised in one another's arms,



## Paradise Lost

The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill  
Of bliss on bliss, while I to hell am thrust,  
Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
Among our other torments not the least, 510  
Still unfulfilled, with pain of longing pines.  
Yet let me not forget what I have gained  
From their own mouths : all is not theirs, it seems ;  
One fatal tree there stands, of Knowledge called,  
Forbidden them to taste : knowledge forbidden ?  
Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord  
Envy them that ? can it be sin to know ?  
Can it be death ? and do they only stand  
By ignorance ? is that their happy state,  
'The proof of their obedience and their faith ? 520  
O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
Their ruin ! Hence I will excite their minds  
With more desire to know, and to reject  
Envious commands, invented with design  
To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt  
Equal with Gods ; aspiring to be such,  
They taste and die : what likelier can ensue ?  
But first with narrow search I must walk round  
'This garden, and no corner leave unspied ;  
A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530  
Some wand'ring spirit of heav'n, by fountain side,  
Or in thick shade retired, from him to draw  
What further would be learned. Live while ye may,  
Yet happy pair ; enjoy, till I return,  
Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed."

So saying, his proud step he scornful turned,  
But with sly circumspection, and began  
'Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale,  
his roam.

Meanwhile, in utmost longitude, where heav'n  
With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540  
Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
Against the eastern gate of Paradise  
Levelled his ev'ning rays : it was a rock  
Of alabaster, piled up to the clouds,  
Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent

## Paradise Lost

Accessible from earth, one entrance high ;  
The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
Still as it rose, impossible to climb.  
Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel <sup>1</sup> sat,  
Chief of the angelic guards, awaiting night : 550  
About him exercised heroic games

The unarmed youth of heav'n ; but nigh at hand  
Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,  
Hung high, with diamond flaming and with gold.  
Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even  
On a sunbeam, swift as a shooting star  
In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fired  
Impress the air, and show the mariner  
From what point of his compass to beware  
Impetuous winds : he thus began in haste : 560

“Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given  
Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place  
No evil thing approach or enter in.  
This day at highth of noon came to my sphere  
A spirit, zealous, as he seemed, to know  
More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,  
God's latest image : I described his way,  
Bent all on speed, and marked his aery gait :  
But in the mount that lies from Eden north,  
Where he first lighted, soon discerned his looks 570  
Alien from heav'n, with passions foul obscured :  
Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade  
Lost sight of him. One of the banished crew,  
I fear, hath ventured from the deep to raise  
New troubles ; him thy care must be to find.”

To whom the wingèd warrior thus returned :  
“Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,  
Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitt'st,  
See far and wide : in at this gate none pass  
The vigilance here placed, but such as come 580  
Well known from heav'n ; and since meridian hour  
No creature thence. If spirit of other sort,  
So minded, have o'erleaped these earthy bounds

<sup>1</sup> The angel sent to Daniel (Dan. ix. 21), and to the Virgin Mary and to Zacharias (see Luke i. 19 and 26).

# Paradise Lost

On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.  
But if within the circuit of these walks,  
In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know."

So promised he, and Uriel to his charge  
Returned on that bright beam, whose point now raised  
Bore him slope downward to the sun, now fall'n [590  
Beneath th' Azores ; whether the prime orb,  
Incredible how swift, had thither rolled  
Diurnal, or this less volúbil earth,  
By shorter flight to th' east, had left him there,  
Arraying with reflected purple and gold  
The clouds that on his western throne attend.

Now came still evening on, and twilight grey  
Had in her sober livery all things clad ;  
Silence accompanied ; for beast and bird, 600  
They to their grassy couch, these to their nests,  
Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;  
She all night long her amorous descant sung ;  
Silence was pleased : now glowed the firmament  
With living sapphires ; Hesperus that led  
The starry host rode brightest, till the moon,  
Rising in clouded majesty, at length  
Apparent queen unveiled her peerless light,  
And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

When Adam thus to Eve : " Fair consort, the hour  
Of night, and all things now retired to rest [610  
Mind us of like repose, since GOD hath set  
Labour and rest, as day and night, to men  
Successive, and the timely dew of sleep  
Now falling with soft slumbrous weight inclines  
Our eyelids : other creatures all day long  
Rove idle, unemployed, and less need rest :  
Man hath his daily work of body or mind  
Appointed, which declares his dignity,  
And the regard of heaven on all his ways ; 620  
While other animals unactive range,  
And of their doings GOD takes no account.  
To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east

## Paradise Lost

With first approach of light, we must be risen,  
And at our pleasant labour, to reform  
Yon flowery arbours, yonder alleys green,  
Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,  
That mock our scant manuring, and require  
More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth.  
Those blossoms also and those dropping gums, 630  
That lie bestrown unsightly and unsmooth,  
Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease :  
Meanwhile, as nature wills, night bids us rest."

To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorned  
"My author and disposer, what thou bidd'st  
Unargued I obey, so GOD ordains ;  
GOD is thy law, thou mine ; to know no more  
Is woman's happiest knowledge and her praise.  
With thee conversing I forget all time,  
All seasons and their change, all please alike : 640  
Sweet is the breath of Morn, her rising sweet,  
With charm of earliest birds ; pleasant the sun,  
When first on this delightful land he spreads  
His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,  
Glist'ring with dew ; fragrant the fertile earth  
After soft showers ; and sweet the coming on  
Of grateful evening mild ; then silent night,  
With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,  
And these the gems of heav'n, her starry train :  
But neither breath of Morn when she ascends 650  
With charm of earliest birds, nor rising sun  
On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, flower,  
Glist'ring with dew, nor fragrance after showers,  
Nor grateful evening mild, nor silent night,  
With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,  
Or glittering starlight, without thee is sweet.  
But wherefore all night long shine these ? for whom  
This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?"

To whom our general ancestor replied :  
"Daughter of GOD and man, accomplished Eve, 660  
These have their course to finish round the earth  
By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land  
In order, though to nations yet unborn,

## Paradise Lost

Minist'ring light prepared, they set and rise ;  
Lest total darkness should by night regain  
Her old possession, and extinguish life  
In nature and all things, which these soft fires  
Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat  
Of various influence foment and warm,  
Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670  
Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow  
On earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,  
Shine not in vain ; nor think, though men were none,  
That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise :  
Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth  
Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep ;  
All these with ceaseless praise His works behold  
Both day and night : how often from the steep 680  
Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard  
Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
Sole, or responsive each to other's note,  
Singing their great Creator? oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk.  
With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds  
In full harmonic number joined, their songs  
Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to heaven."  
Thus talking, hand in hand alone they passed  
On to their blissful bower, it was a place 690  
Chosen by the sovereign planter, when He framed  
All things to man's delightful use : the roof  
Of thickest covert, was inwoven shade,  
Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew  
Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side  
Acanthus and each odorous bushy shrub  
Fenced up the verdant wall, each beauteous flower,  
Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,  
Reared high their flourished heads between, and  
wrought  
Mosaic ; under foot the violet, 700  
Crocus, and hyacinth with rich inlay  
Broidered the ground, more coloured than with stone

## Paradise Lost

Of costliest emblem : other creature here,  
Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none ;  
Such was their awe of man. In shadier bower  
More sacred and sequestered, though but feigned,  
Pan or Sylvanus never slept ; nor nymph  
Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,  
With flowers, garlands, and sweet smelling herbs,  
Espoused Eve decked first her nuptial bed, 710  
And heav'nly choirs the Hymenean sung,  
What day the genial angel to our sire  
Brought her in naked beauty, more adorned,  
More lovely than Pandora,<sup>1</sup> whom the Gods  
Endowed with all their gifts, and O, too like  
In sad event, when to the unwiser son  
Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnared  
Mankind with her fair looks, to be avenged  
On him who had stole Jove's authentic fire.

Thus, at their shady lodge arrived, both stood, 720  
Both turned, and under open sky adored  
The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heav'n  
Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,  
And starry pole. "Thou also mad'st the night,  
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day,  
Which we, in our appointed work employed,  
Have finished, happy in our mutual help  
And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
Ordained by thee, and this delicious place  
For us too large, where thy abundance wants 730  
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promised from us two a race  
To fill the earth, who shall with us extol  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep."

<sup>1</sup> Pandora was a most beautiful woman, on whom the gods bestowed all their gifts. Jupiter, enraged with Prometheus, the son of Japhet, for having stolen fire from heaven, sent Pandora, with a box of supposed treasures, to him, to punish him ; but he refused to receive her. Hermes (or Mercury) then led her to Prometheus's "unwiser" brother Epimetheus, who received her, and was persuaded by her to open the box she brought as her dowry. It contained all the ills which have since afflicted humanity, but *Hope* remained at the bottom. It is very probable that this fable originated in the true story of *Eve's* disobedience, and her enticing Adam to share her sin.

## Paradise Lost

This said unanimous, and other rites  
Observing none, but adoration pure  
Which God likes best, into their inmost bower  
Handed they went ; and, eased the putting off  
These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740  
Straight side by side were laid ; nor turned, I  
ween,

Adam from his fair spouse ; nor Eve the rites  
Mysterious of connubial love refused :  
Whatever hypocrites austere talk  
Of purity, and place, and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain  
But our destroyer, foe to God and man ?  
Hail wedded love ! mysterious law, true source 750  
Of human offspring, sole propriety  
In Paradise of all things common else.  
By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men  
Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee  
Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
Relations dear, and all the charities<sup>1</sup>  
Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,  
Or think thee unbecoming holiest place,  
Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets, 760  
Whose bed is undefiled and chaste pronounced,  
Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs used.  
Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile  
Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendeared,  
Casual fruition ; nor in court amours,  
Mixed dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
Or serenate, which the starved lover sings  
To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 770  
These, lulled by nightingales, embracing slept,  
And on their naked limbs the flowery roof  
Showered roses, which the morn repaired. Sleep on,

<sup>1</sup> Affections.

## .Paradise Lost

Blest pair, and O ! yet happiest if ye seek  
No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night measured with her shadowy cone  
Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,  
And from their ivory port the Cherubim,  
Forth issuing at th' accustomed hour, stood armed  
To their night watches in warlike parade, 780  
When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake :

“ Uzziel,<sup>1</sup> half these draw off, and coast the south  
With strictest watch ; these other wheel the north ;  
Our circuit meets full west.” As flame they part,  
Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.  
From these, two strong and subtle spirits he called  
That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge :

“ Ithuriel and Zephon,<sup>2</sup> with winged speed  
Search through this garden, leave unsearched no  
nook ;

But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge, 790  
Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harm.  
This evening from the sun's decline arrived,  
Who tells of some infernal spirit seen  
Hitherward bent, who could have thought<sup>3</sup> escaped  
The bars of hell, on errand bad no doubt :  
Such where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.”

So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
Dazzling the moon ; these to the bower direct  
In search of whom they sought : him there they found,  
Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve ; 800  
Assaying by his devilish art to reach  
The organs of her fancy, and with them forge  
Illusions as he list, phantasms, and dreams ;  
Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
The animal spirits that from pure blood arise  
Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise  
At least distempered, discontented thoughts,  
Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires  
Blown up with high conceits ingend'ring pride.

<sup>1</sup> This angel's name signifies the strength of God.

<sup>2</sup> The name of Ithuriel signifies the discovery of God ; of Zephon, a secret, or searcher of secrets — *From HUME.*



## Paradise Lost

Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear 810  
Touched lightly ; for no falsehood can endure  
Touch of celestial temper, but returns  
Of force to its own likeness : up he starts  
Discovered and surprised. As when a spark  
Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid  
Fit for the tun, some magazine to store  
Against a rumoured war, the smutty grain  
With sudden blaze diffused inflames the air ;  
So started up in his own shape the fiend.  
Back stepped those two fair angels, half amazed 820  
So sudden to behold the grisly king ;  
Yet thus, unmoved with fear, accost him soon :  
“ Which of those rebel spirits adjudged to hell  
Comest thou, escaped thy prison ? and transformed,  
Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,  
Here watching at the head of these that sleep ? ”  
“ Know ye not then,” said Satan, filled with scorn,  
“ Know ye not me ? ye knew me once no mate  
For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar ;  
Not to know me argues yourselves unknown, 830  
The lowest of your throng ; or, if ye know,  
Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
Your message, like to end as much in vain ? ”  
To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn :  
“ Think not, revolted spirit, thy shape the same,  
Or undiminished brightness, to be known  
As when thou stood'st in heav'n upright and pure ;  
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,  
Departed from thee, and thou resemblest now  
Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul. 840  
But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account  
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
This place inviolable, and these from harm.”  
So spake the Cherub, and his grave rebuke,  
Severe in youthful beauty, added grace  
Invincible : abashed the devil stood,  
And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
Virtue in her shape how lovely, saw, and pined  
His loss ; but chiefly to find here observed

## Paradise Lost

His lustre visibly impaired ; yet seemed 850  
Undaunted. "If I must contend," said he,  
"Best with the best, the sender not the sent,  
Or all at once ; more glory will be won,  
Or less be lost." "Thy fear," said Zephon bold,  
"Will save us trial what the least can do  
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak."

The fiend replied not, overcome with rage ;  
But like a proud steed reined went haughty on,  
Champing his iron curb : to strive or fly  
He held it vain ; awe from above had quelled 860  
His heart, not else dismayed. Now drew they nigh  
The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
Just met, and closing stood in squadron joined,  
Awaiting next command. To whom their chief,  
Gabriel, from the front thus called aloud :

"O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet  
Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern  
Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,  
And with them comes a third of regal port,  
But faded splendour wan ; who by his gait 870  
And fierce demeanour seems the prince of hell,  
Nor likely to part hence without contest :  
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours."

He scarce had ended, when those two approached,  
And brief related whom they brought, where found,  
How busied, in what form and posture couched.  
To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake :

"Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescribed  
To thy transgressions, and disturbed the charge  
Of others, who approve not to transgress 880  
By thy example, but have power and right  
To question thy bold entrance on this place,  
Employed, it seems, to violate sleep, and those  
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss?"

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow :  
"Gabriel, thou hadst in heav'n th' esteem of wise,  
And such I held thee ; but this question asked  
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain?  
Who would not, finding way, break loose from hell,

## Paradise Lost

Though thither doomed? thou wouldst thyself, no  
doubt, 890

And boldly venture to whatever place  
Farthest from pain, where thou might'st hope to change  
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense  
Dole with delight, which in this place I sought :  
To thee no reason, who know'st only good,  
But evil hast not tried : and wilt object  
His will who bound us? Let Him surer bar  
His iron gates, if He intends our stay  
In that dark durance : thus much what was asked.  
The rest is true, they found me where they say ; 900  
But that implies not violence or harm."

Thus he in scorn. The warlike angel moved,  
Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied :  
"O loss of one in heav'n to judge of wise,  
Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,  
And now returns him from his prison 'scaped,  
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither  
Unlicensed from his bounds in hell prescribed :  
So wise he judges it to fly from pain 910  
However, and to 'scape his punishment.  
So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,  
Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight  
Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to hell,  
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
Can equal anger infinite provoked.  
But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee  
Came not all hell broke loose? is pain to them  
Less pain, less to be fled, or thou than they  
Less hardy to endure? Courageous chief, 920  
The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alleged  
To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive."

To which the fiend thus answered, frowning stern :  
"Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
Insulting Angel ; well thou know'st I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid  
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,

## Paradise Lost

And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.  
But still thy words at random, as before, 930  
Argue thy inexperience what behoves  
From hard assays and ill successes past  
A faithful leader, not to hazard all  
Through ways of danger by himself untried.  
I therefore, I alone first undertook  
To wing the desolate abyss, and spy  
This new created world, whereof in hell  
Fame is not silent ; here in hope to find  
Better abode, and my afflicted Powers  
To settle here on earth, or in mid air ; 940  
Though for possession put to try once more  
What thou and thy gay legions dare against ;  
Whose easier business were to serve their Lord  
High up in heav'n, with songs to hymn His throne,  
And practised distances to cringe, not fight.”  
To whom the warrior Angel soon replied :  
“To say and straight unsay, pretending first  
Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,  
Argues no leader, but a liar traced,  
Satan : and couldst thou faithful add ? O name, 950  
O sacred name of faithfulness profaned !  
Faithful to whom ? to thy rebellious crew ?  
Army of fiends, fit body to fit head :  
Was this your discipline and faith engaged,  
Your military obedience, to dissolve  
Allegiance to th' acknowledged Power supreme ?  
And thou sly hypocrite, who now would'st seem  
Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
Once fawned, and cringed, and servilely adored  
Heav'n's awful Monarch ? wherefore but in hope 960  
To dispossess Him, and thyself to reign ?  
But mark what I arreed thee now ; Avaunt !  
Fly thither whence thou fledst : if from this hour  
Within these hallowed limits thou appear,  
Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chained,  
And seal thee so,<sup>1</sup> as henceforth not to scorn  
The facile gates of hell too slightly barred.”

## Paradise Lost

So threatened he ; but Satan to no threats  
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied :  
"Then when I am thy captive talk of chains, 970  
Proud liminary Cherub ; but ere then  
Far heavier load thyself expect to feel  
From my prevailing arm ; though heaven's King  
Ride on thy wings,<sup>1</sup> and thou with thy compeers,  
Used to the yoke, draw'st His triumphant wheels  
In progress through the road of heav'n star-paved."

While thus he spake, th' angelic squadron bright  
Turned fiery red, sharp'ning in moonèd horns  
Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
With ported spears, as thick as when a field 980  
Of Ceres, ripe for harvest, waving bends  
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind  
Sways them ; the careful ploughman doubting stands,  
Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarmed,  
Collecting all his might, dilated stood,  
Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremoved :  
His stature reached the sky, and on his crest  
Sat horror plumed ; nor wanted in his grasp  
What seemed both spear and shield. Now dreadful  
deeds 990

Might have ensued, nor only Paradise  
In this commotion, but the starry cope  
Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements  
At least had gone to wrack, disturbed and torn  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
Hung forth in heav'n His golden scales,<sup>2</sup> yet seen  
Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,  
Wherein all things created first He weighed,

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. i. x. and xi. 22.

<sup>2</sup> The constellation *Libra*. This image of the Deity weighing the fates of the combatants is found both in Homer—XXII. "*Iliad*"—and in Virgil, who represents Jupiter as weighing the fates of Turnus and *Aeneas*. "In Homer and Virgil the combatants are weighed one against another, but here Satan only is weighed ; in one scale the consequence of his retreating, in the other of his fighting. And there is this further improvement, that, as in Homer and Virgil the fates are weighed to satisfy Jupiter himself, it is here done to satisfy only the contending parties—for Satan to read his own destiny !"—NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

The pendulous round earth with balanced air      1000  
In counterpoise ; now ponders all events,  
Battles, and realms : in these He put two weights,  
The sequel each of parting and of fight ;  
The latter quick up flew and kicked the beam :  
Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the fiend :

“Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know’st  
mine ;

Neither our own but given ; what folly then  
To boast what arms can do, since thine no more  
Than heav’n permits, nor mine, though doubled now  
To trample thee as mire ? for proof look up,      1010  
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign,  
Where thou art weighed,<sup>1</sup> and shown how light,  
how weak,  
If thou resist.” The fiend looked up, and knew  
His mounted scale aloft : nor more ; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

*Dan. v. 27*

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK V.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream ; he likes it not, yet comforts her : they come forth to their day-labours : their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render Man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise ; his appearance described, his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower ; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve ; their discourse at table ; Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy ; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof ; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him ; persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime                    I  
Advancing, sowed the earth with orient pearl,  
When Adam waked, so custom'd ; for his sleep  
Was aery light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,  
Lightly dispersed, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on every bough : so much the more  
His wonder was to find unawaken'd Eve  
With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek,                    10  
As through unquiet rest : he, on his side  
Leaning half-raised, with looks of cordial love  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
Shot forth peculiar graces : then with voice  
Mild as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,  
Her hand soft touching, whispered thus : " Awake,  
My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight ;  
Awake, the morning shines, and the fresh field                    20  
Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,  
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,

## Paradise Lost

How Nature paints her colours, how the bee  
Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet."

Such whisp'ring waked her, but with startled eye  
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake :

"O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
My glory, my perfection, glad I see  
Thy face, and morn returned ; for I this night, 30  
Such night till this I never passed, have dreamed,  
(If dreamed,) not as I oft am wont, of thee,  
Works of day passed, or morrow's next design,  
But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
Knew never till this irksome night. Methought  
Close at mine ear one called me forth to walk  
With gentle voice ; I thought it thine : it said,  
Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? now is the pleasant time,  
The cool, the silent, save where silence yields 40  
To the night-warbling bird, that now awake  
Tunes sweetest his love-laboured song ; now reigns  
Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light  
Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
If none regard : heav'n wakes with all his eyes,  
Whom to behold but thee, nature's desire ?  
In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.  
I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;  
To find thee I directed then my walk ;  
And on, methought, alone I passed through ways 50  
That brought me on a sudden to the tree  
Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seemed,  
Much fairer to my fancy than by day :  
And as I wond'ring looked, beside it stood  
One shaped and winged like one of those from heav'n  
By us oft seen ; his dewy locks distilled  
Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gazed ;  
And 'O fair plant,' said he, 'with fruit surcharged,  
Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,  
Nor God, nor man ; is knowledge so despised ? 60  
Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste ?  
Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
Longer thy offered good ; why else set here ?'



## Paradise Lost

This said, he paused not, but with venturous arm  
He plucked, he tasted ; me damp horror chilled  
At such bold words vouched with a deed so bold.  
But he thus, overjoyed : ‘ O fruit divine,  
Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropped,  
Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit  
For gods, yet able to make gods of men : 70  
And why not gods of men, since good, the more  
Communicated, more abundant grows,  
The author not impaired, but honoured more ?  
Here, happy creature, fan angelic Eve,  
Partake thou also : happy though thou art,  
Happier thou may’st be, worthier canst not be :  
Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods  
Thyself a goddess, not to earth confined,  
But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes 80  
Ascend to heav’n, by merit thine, and see  
What life the gods live there, and such live thou.’  
So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part  
Which he had plucked ; the pleasant savoury smell  
So quickened appetite, that I, methought,  
Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds  
With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
The earth outstretched immense, a prospect wide  
And various : wond’ring at my flight and change  
To this high exaltation, suddenly 90  
My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,  
And fell asleep ; but O, how glad I waked  
To find this but a dream !” Thus Eve her night  
Related, and thus Adam answered sad :  
“ Best image of myself, and dearer half,  
The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
Affects me equally ; nor can I like  
This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear :  
Yet evil whence ? in thee can harbour none,  
Created pure. But know that in the soul 100  
Are many lesser faculties that serve  
Reason as chief : among these Fancy next  
Her office holds ; of all external things,

## Paradise Lost

Which the five watchful senses represent,  
She forms imaginations, aery shapes,  
Which Reason joining, or disjoining, frames  
All what we affirm, or what deny, and call  
Our knowledge or opinion ; then retires  
Into her private cell when Nature rests.  
Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes 110  
To imitate her ; but, misjoining shapes,  
Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams,  
Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
Some such resemblances methinks I find  
Of our last evening's talk in this thy dream,  
But with addition strange ; yet be not sad :  
Evil into the mind of God or man  
May come and go, so unapproved, and leave  
No spot or blame behind ; which gives me hope  
That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream, 120  
Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
Be not disheartened, then, nor cloud those looks  
That wont to be more cheerful and serene  
Than when fair morning first smiles on the world ;  
And let us to our fresh employments rise,  
Among the groves, the fountains, and the flow'rs,  
That open now their choicest bosomed smells,  
Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store."  
So cheered he his fair spouse, and she was cheered ;  
But silently a gentle tear let fall 130  
From either eye, and wiped them with her hair :  
Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell  
Kissed as the gracious signs of sweet remorse,  
And pious awe that feared to have offended.  
So all was cleared, and to the field they haste.  
But first, from under shady arborous roof  
Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
Of dayspring and the sun, who, scarce uprisen,  
With wheels yet hov'ring o'er the ocean brim, 140  
Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,  
Discovering in wide landscape all the east  
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,

## Paradise Lost

Lowly they bowed adoring, and began  
Their orisons, each morning duly paid  
In various style ; for neither various style  
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounced or sung  
Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence  
Flowed from their lips, in prose or numerous verse, 150  
More tuneable than needed lute or harp  
To add more sweetness : and they thus began :

“These are thy glorious works, Parent of good !  
Almighty, thine this universal frame,  
Thus wondrous fair : thyself how wondrous then !  
Unspeakable, who sitt’st above these heavens,  
To us invisible, or dimly seen  
In these thy lowest works ; yet these declare  
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.  
Speak ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160  
Angels, for ye behold Him, and with songs  
And choral symphonies, day without night,  
Circle His throne rejoicing, ye in heaven :  
On earth, join all ye creatures to extol  
Him first, Him last, Him midst, and without end.  
Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure pledge of day, that crown’st the smiling morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise Him in thy sphere  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170  
Thou sun, of this great world both eye and soul,  
Acknowledge Him thy greater, sound His praise  
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb’st,  
And when high noon hast gained, and when thou  
fall’st.

Moon, that now meet’st the orient sun, now fly’st,  
With the fixed stars, fixed in their orb that flies,  
And ye five other wand’ring fires that move  
In mystic dance not without song,<sup>1</sup> resound  
His praise, who out of darkness called up light.  
Air, and ye elements, the eldest birth 180  
Of nature’s womb, that in quaternion run

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the Pythagorean idea of the music of the spheres.

# Paradise Lost

Perpetual circle, multiform, and mix  
And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change  
Vary to our great Maker still new praise.  
Ye mists and exhalations, that now rise  
From hill or steaming lake, dusky or grey,  
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
In honour to the world's great Author rise,  
Whether to deck with clouds the uncoloured sky,  
Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers, 190  
Rising or falling, still advance His praise.  
His praise, ye winds that from four quarters blow,  
Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye pines,  
With every plant, in sign of worship wave.  
Fountains and ye that warble, as ye flow,  
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune His praise.  
Join voices, all ye living souls, ye birds,  
That singing up to heaven gate ascend,  
Bear on your wings and in your notes His praise.  
Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200  
The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep ;<sup>1</sup>  
Witness if I be silent, morn or even,  
To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
Made vocal by my song, and taught His praise.  
Hail, universal Lord, be bounteous still  
To give us only good ; and if the night  
Have gathered aught of evil, or concealed,  
Disperse it, as now light dispells the dark."

So prayed they, innocent, and to their thoughts  
Firm peace recovered soon and wonted calm. 210  
On to their morning's rural work they haste,  
Among sweet dews and flowers ; where any row  
Of fruit-trees over-woody reached too far  
Their pampered<sup>2</sup> boughs, and needed hands to check  
Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine  
To wed her elm ; she, spoused, about him twines  
Her marriageable arms, and with her brings  
Her dower, th' adopted clusters, to adorn  
His barren leaves. Them thus employed beheld  
With pity heav'n's high King, and to Him called 220

<sup>1</sup> See Psalm cxlviii.

<sup>2</sup> Unrestrained.

# Paradise Lost

Raphael, the sociable spirit, that deigned  
To travel with Tobias, and secured  
His marriage with the seven-times-wedded maid.

"Raphael," said He, "thou hear'st what stir on  
earth

Satan, from hell 'scaped through the darksome gulf  
Hath raised in Paradise, and how disturbed  
This night the human pair, how he designs  
In them at once to ruin ail mankind :  
Go therefore, halt this day as friend with friend  
Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade 230  
'Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retired,  
To respite his day labour with repast,  
Or with repose ; and such discourse bring on,  
As may advise him of his happy state,  
Happiness in his power left free to will,  
Left to his own free will, his will though free  
Yet mutable ; whence warn him to beware  
He swerve not too secure ; tell him withal  
His danger, and from whom ; what enemy,  
Late fall'n himself from heaven, is plotting now 240  
'The fall of others from like state of bliss ;  
By violence ? no, for that shall be withstood ;  
But by deceit and lies : this let him know,  
Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend  
Surprisal, unadmonished, unforewarned."

So spake th' eternal Father, and fulfilled  
All justice : nor delayed the wingèd saint  
After his charge received ; but from among  
'Thousand celestial ardours, where he stood  
Veiled with his gorgeous wings, up springing light, 250  
Flew through the midst of heav'n ; the angelic choirs,  
On each hand parting, to his speed gave way  
Through all th' empyreal road ; till at the gate  
Of heav'n arrived, the gate self-opened wide  
On golden hinges turning, as by work  
Divine the sov'ran Architect had framed.  
From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
Star interposed, however small—he sees,  
Not unconform to other shining globes,

# Paradise Lost

Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crowned 260  
Above all hills : as when by night the glass  
Of Galileo, less assured, observes  
Imagined lands and regions in the moon ;  
Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades,  
Delos or Samos, first appearing, kens  
A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing,  
Now to the polar winds, then with quick fan  
Winnows the buxom air ; till, within soar 270  
Of tow'ring eagles, to all the fowls he seems  
A phoenix, gazed by all, as that sole bird,  
When, to inshrine his reliques in the sun's  
Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.<sup>1</sup>  
At once on th' eastern cliff of Paradise  
He lights, and to his proper shape returns,  
A scraph winged : six wings he wore, to shade  
His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad  
Each shoulder broad came mantling o'er his breast  
With regal ornament ; the middle pair 280  
Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round  
Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold  
And colours dipped in heav'n ; the third his feet  
Shadowed from either heel with feathered mail,  
Sky-tinctured grain. Like Maia's son<sup>2</sup> he stood,  
And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance filled  
The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands  
Of angels under watch ; and to his state,  
And to his message high, in honour rise ;  
For on some message high they guessed him bound. 290  
Their glittering tents he passed, and now is come  
Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
And flow'ring odours, cassia, nard, and balm ;

<sup>1</sup> The phoenix was a fabled bird, of which one only was said to exist at a time. It was exquisitely beautiful ; and lived many hundred years. At the end of its life it made a pile of aromatic woods, which it kindled, and, fanning the flames with its wings, perished in the blaze. From its ashes sprang another phoenix. The phoenix made his funeral pyre in the sun's temple at Thebes.

<sup>2</sup> "The feathered Mercury."—SHAKESPEARE. Mercury had wings on his feet as well as his shoulders.

## Paradise Lost

A wilderness of sweets ; for Nature here  
Wantoned as in her prime, and played at will  
Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
Wild above rule or art ; enormous bliss.  
Him through the spicy forest onward come  
Adam discerned, as in the door he sat  
Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun 300  
Shot down direct his fervid rays, to warm  
Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs ;  
And Eve within, due at her hour prepared  
For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please  
True appetite, and not disrelish thirst  
Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,  
Berry or grape, to whom thus Adam called :

“Haste hither, Eve, and, worth thy sight, behold  
Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape  
Comes this way moving ; seems another morn 310  
Ris'n on mid-noon ; some great behest from heav'n  
To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
And what thy stores contain bring forth, and pour  
Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
Our heav'nly stranger ; well we may afford  
Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow  
From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies  
Her fertile growth, and by disburd'ning grows  
More fruitful ; which instructs us not to spare.” 320

To whom thus Eve : “Adam, earth's hallowed  
mould,  
Of GOD inspired, small store will serve, where store  
All seasons ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;  
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes.  
But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,  
Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
To entertain our Angel guest, as he  
Beholding shall confess, that here on earth  
God hath dispensed His bounties as in heav'n.” 330

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent

## Paradise Lost

What choice to choose for delicacy best,  
What order, so contrived as not to mix  
Tastes, not well joined, inelegant, but bring  
Taste after taste upheld with kindest change ;  
Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
Whatever earth, all-bearing mother, yields  
In India east or west, or middle shore  
In Pontus, or the Punic coast, or where 340  
Alcinous reigned,<sup>1</sup> fruit of all kinds, in coat,  
Rough or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,  
She gathers, tribute large, and on the board  
Heaps with unsparing hand : for drink the grape  
She crushes, inoffensive must,<sup>2</sup> and meaths<sup>3</sup>  
From many a berry, and from sweet kernels pressed  
She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold  
Wants her fit vessels pure ; then strews the ground  
With rose and odours from the shrub unfumed.  
Meanwhile our primitive great sire, to meet 350  
His god-like guest, walks forth, without more train  
Accompanied than with his own complete  
Perfections ; in himself was all his state,  
More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
On princes, when their rich retinue long  
Of horses led and grooms besmeared with gold  
Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.  
Nearer his presence Adam, though not awed,  
Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,  
As to a superior nature, bowing low, 360  
Thus said : " Native of heav'n, for other place  
None can than heav'n such glorious shape contain,  
Since by descending from the thrones above,  
Those happy places thou hast deigned a while  
To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us  
Two only, who yet by sov'ran gift possess  
This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower  
To rest, and what the garden choicest bears  
To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
Be over, and the sun more cool decline." 370

<sup>1</sup> Phœacia, an island in the Ionian Sea.

<sup>2</sup> Grape-juice, unfermented.

<sup>3</sup> Mead.



## Paradise Lost

Whom thus the angelic Virtue answered mild :  
" Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such  
Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
As may not oft invite, though spirits of heav'n,  
To visit thee : lead on then where thy bower  
O'ershades ; for these mid-hours, till ev'ning rise,  
I have at will." So to the sylvan lodge  
They came, that like Pomona's arbour smiled  
With flow'rets decked and fragrant smells : but Eve  
Undecked, save with her self, more lovely fair 380  
Than wood-nymph, or the fairest goddess feigned  
Of three that in Mount Ida naked strove,<sup>1</sup>  
Stood to entertain her guest from heav'n ; no veil  
She needed, virtue-proof ; no thought infirm  
Altered her cheek. On whom the angel " Hail "  
Bestowed, the holy salutation used  
Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.

" Hail, mother of mankind, whose fruitful womb  
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,  
Than with these various fruits the trees of God 390  
Have heaped this table." Raised of grassy turf  
Their table was, and mossy seats had round,  
And on her ample square from side to side  
All autumn piled, though spring and autumn here  
Danced hand in hand. A while discourse they hold,  
(No fear lest dinner cool,) when thus began  
Our author : " Heav'nly stranger, please to taste  
These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom  
All perfect good unmeasured out descends,  
To us for food and for delight hath caused 400  
The earth to yield ; unsavoury food, perhaps,  
To spiritual natures : only this I know,  
That one celestial Father gives to all."

To whom the angel : " Therefore what He gives,  
Whose praise be ever sung, to man in part  
Spiritual, may of purest spirits be found  
No ingrateful food : and food alike those pure  
Intelligential substances require,

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the judgment of Paris, when Juno, Minerva and Venus contended for the apple inscribed " To the fairest."

# Paradise Lost

As doth your rational ; and both contain  
Within them every lower faculty 410  
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
For know, whatever was created needs  
To be sustained and fed ; of elements  
The grosser feeds the purer ; earth the sea ;  
Earth and the sea feed air ; the air those fires  
Ethereal ; and as lowest first the moon ;  
Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurged  
Vapours not yet into her substance turned. 420  
Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale  
From her moist continent to higher orbs.  
The sun, that light imparts to all, receives  
From all his alimential recompense  
In humid exhalations, and at even  
Sups with the ocean. Though in heav'n the trees <sup>1</sup>  
Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines  
Yield nectar ; tho' from off the boughs each morn  
We brush mellifluous dew, and find the ground  
Covered with pearly grain ; <sup>2</sup> yet God hath here 430  
Varied His bounty so with new delights,  
As may compare with heaven ; and to taste  
Think not I shall be nice." So down they sat,  
And to their viands fell ; nor seemingly  
The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss  
Of theologians, but with keen dispatch  
Of real hunger, and concoctive heat  
To transubstantiate : what redounds, transpires  
Through spirits with ease ; nor wonder ; if by fire  
Of sooty coal the empiric alchymist 440  
Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,  
Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold  
As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve  
Ministered naked, and their flowing cups  
With pleasant liquors crowned. O innocence  
Deserving Paradise ! if ever, then,

<sup>1</sup> Psalm lxxviii. 25, cv. 40.

<sup>2</sup> "The bread of Heaven," *i.e.* manna. Rev. xxii. 2 ; Matt. xxvi. 29.

## Paradise Lost

Then had the sons of GOD excuse to have been  
Enamoured at that sight ; but in those hearts  
Love unlibidinous reigned, nor jealousy  
Was understood, the injured lover's hell. 450

Thus when with meats and drinks they had sufficed,  
Not burdened nature, sudden mind arose  
In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass,  
Given him by this great conference, to know  
Of things above his world, and of their being  
Who dwell in heav'n, whose excellence he saw  
Transcend his own so far ; whose radiant forms,  
Divine effulgence, whose high power so far  
Exceeded human ; and his wary speech  
Thus to th' empyreal minister he framed : 460

" Inhabitant with GOD, now know I well  
Thy favour, in this honour done to Man,  
Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsafed  
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,  
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,  
As that more willingly thou could'st not seem  
At heav'n's high feasts to have fed : yet what com-  
pare ? "

To whom the wingèd Hierarch replied :  
" O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom  
All things proceed, and up to Him return, 470  
If not depraved from good, created all  
Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
Indued with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and, in things that live, of life:  
But more refined, more spirituous, and pure,  
As nearer to Him placed, or nearer tending,  
Each in their several active spheres assigned,  
Till body up to spirit work, in bounds  
Proportioned to each kind. So from the root  
Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves  
More aery, last the bright consummate flow'r [480  
Spirits odorous breathes ; flowers and their fruit,  
Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublimed,  
To vital spirits aspire, to animal,  
To intellectual, give both life and sense,

# Paradise Lost

Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul  
Reason receives, and reason is her being,  
Discursive or intuitive ; discourse  
Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,  
Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490  
Wonder not then, what GOD for you saw good  
If I refuse not, but convert, as you,  
To proper substance : time may come, when men  
With Angels may participate, and find  
No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare :  
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improved by tract of time, and winged ascend  
Ethereal, as we, or may at choice  
Here or in heav'nly Paradises dwell ; 500  
If ye be found obedient, and retain  
Unalterably firm His love entire,  
Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy  
Your fill what happiness this happy state  
Can comprehend, incapable of more."

To whom the patriarch of mankind replied :  
"O favourable spirit, propitious guest,  
Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
From centre to circumference, whereon 510  
In contemplation of created things  
By steps we may ascend to GOD. But say,  
What meant that caution joined, If ye be found  
Obedient ? Can we want obedience then  
To Him, or possibly His love desert,  
Who formed us from the dust and placed us here  
Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
Human desires can seek or apprehend ?"

To whom the angel : "Son of heav'n and earth,  
Attend : that thou art happy, owe to GOD ; 520  
That thou continu'st such, owe to thyself,  
That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.  
This was that caution given thee ; be advised.  
GOD made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
And good He made thee, but to persevere

## Paradise Lost

He left it in thy power ; ordained thy will  
By nature free, not over-ruled by fate  
Inextricable, or strict necessity :  
Our voluntary service He requires,  
Not our necessitated, such with Him 530  
Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how  
Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve  
Willing or no, who will but what they must  
By destiny, and can no other choose ?  
Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand  
In sight of GOD enthroned, our happy state  
Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;  
On other surety none : freely we serve,  
Because we freely love, as in our will  
To love or not ; in this we stand or fall. 540  
And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,  
And so from heaven to deepest hell : O fall  
From what high state of bliss into what woe ! ”

To whom our great progenitor : “ Thy words  
Attentive, and with more delighted ear,  
Divine instructor, I have heard, than when  
Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills  
Aerial music send : nor knew I not  
To be both will and deed created free ;  
Yet that we never shall forget to love 550  
Our Maker, and obey Him whose command  
Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
Assured me, and still assure : though what thou tell'st  
Hath past in heav'n, some doubt within me move,  
But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;  
And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun  
Hath finished half his journey, and scarce begins  
His other half in the great zone of heav'n.” 560

Thus Adam made request, and Raphael,  
After short pause assenting, thus began :

“ High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men,  
Sad task and hard ; for how shall I relate  
To human sense th' invisible exploits

## Paradise Lost

Of warring spirits ? how without remorse  
The ruin of so many, glorious once  
And perfect while they stood ? how last unfold  
The secrets of another world, perhaps  
Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good 570  
'This is dispensed ; and what surmounts the reach  
Of human sense I shall delineate so,  
By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,  
As may express them best ; though what if earth  
Be but the shadow of heav'n ; and things therein  
Each to other like, more than on earth is thought ?  
"As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild  
'Reigned where these heav'ns now roll, where earth  
now rests  
Upon her centre poised, when on a day,  
For time, though in eternity, applied 580  
To motion, measures all things durable  
By present, past, and future ; on such day  
As heav'n's great year<sup>1</sup> brings forth, th' empyreal host<sup>2</sup>  
Of angels, by imperial summons called,  
Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne  
Forthwith from all the ends of heav'n appeared :  
Under their hierarchs in orders bright  
Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanced,  
Standards and gonfalons 'twixt van and rear  
Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590  
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees :  
Or in their glittering tissues bear imblazed  
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love  
Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs  
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
Orb within orb, the Father infinite,  
By whom in bliss imbosomed sat the Son,  
Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top  
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake :  
"Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light, 600  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,

<sup>1</sup> Plato's great year was probably in Milton's mind. It was a revolution of all the spheres. "Everything returns to where it set out when their motion first began."—*From* RICHARDSON.

<sup>2</sup> Job i. 6 ; Dan. vii. 10.

# Paradise Lost

Hear my decree,<sup>1</sup> which unrevoked shall stand.  
This day I have begot whom I declare  
My only Son, and on this holy hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand ; your head I him appoint ;  
And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow  
All knees in heav'n, and shall confess him Lord.  
Under his great vicegerent reign abide  
United, as one individual soul, 610  
For ever happy : him who disobeys  
Me disobeys, breaks union, and, that day  
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
Into utter darkness, deep ingulfed, his place  
Ordained without redemption, without end.'  
"So spake th' Omnipotent, and with His words  
All seemed well pleased ; all seemed, but were not all.  
'That day, as other solemn days, they spent  
In song and dance about the sacred hill,  
Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere 620  
Of planets and of fixed in all her wheels  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
Eccentric, interwolved, yet regular  
Then most, when most irregular they seem ;  
And in their motions harmony divine  
So smooths her charming tones, that God's own ear  
Listens delighted. Ev'ning now approached,  
For we have also our ev'ning and our morn,  
We ours for change delectable, not need ;  
Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn 630  
Desirous ; all in circles as they stood,  
Tables are set, and on a sudden piled  
With angels' food, and rubied nectar flows,  
In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold ;  
Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of heav'n.  
On flow'rs reposed and with fresh flowerets crowned,  
They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
Quaff immortality and joy, secure  
Of surfeit where full measure only bounds  
Excess, before th' all-bounteous King, who show'ed 640

<sup>1</sup> See Psalm ii. ; Heb. i. 5.

## Paradise Lost

With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy.  
Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhaled  
From that high mount of God, whence light and  
shade

Spring both, the face of brightest heav'n had changed  
To grateful twilight, (for night comes not there  
In darker veil,) and roseate dews disposed  
All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest ;<sup>1</sup>  
Wide over all the plain, and wider far  
Than all this globous earth in plain outspread,  
Such are the courts of God, th' angelic throng 650  
Dispersed in bands and files, their camp extend  
By living streams among the trees of life,<sup>2</sup>  
Pavilions numberless and sudden rear'd,  
Celestial tabernacles, where they slept  
Fanned with cool winds, save those who in their  
course

Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne  
Alternate all night long. But not so waked  
Satan—so call him now, his former name  
Is heard no more in heav'n—he of the first  
If not the first Archangel, great in power, 660  
In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught  
With envy against the Son of God, that day  
Honoured by his great Father, and proclaimed  
Messiah King anointed, could not bear  
Thro' pride that sight, and thought himself impaired.  
Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,  
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour  
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolved  
With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
Unworshipped, unobeyed, the throne supreme, 670  
Contemptuous ; and his next subordinate  
Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake :

“Sleep'st thou, companion dear? what sleep can close  
Thy eyelids, and remember'st what decree  
Of yesterday so late hath past the lips  
Of heav'n's Almighty? Thou to me thy thoughts

<sup>1</sup> Psalm cxxi. 4 : “He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep.”

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xxii.



# Paradise Lost

Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart :  
Both waking we were one ; how then can now  
Thy sleep dissent ? new laws thou see'st imposed ;  
New laws from Him who reigns new minds may raise  
In us who serve, new counsels, to debate [680  
What doubtful may ensue ; more in this place  
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou

Of all those myriads which we lead the chief :  
Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim Night  
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
And all who under me their banners wave,  
Homeward with flying march, where we possess  
The quarters of the north,<sup>1</sup> there to prepare  
Fit entertainment to receive our King 690  
The great Messiah, and his new commands ;  
Who speedily through all the hierarchies  
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.'

"So spake the false Archangel, and infused  
Bad influence into th' unwary breast  
Of his associate ; he together calls,  
Or several one by one, the regent Powers,  
Under him regent, tells, as he was taught,  
That, the Most High commanding, now ere night,  
Now ere dim night had disincumbered heav'n, 700  
The great hierarchial standard was to move ;  
Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
Or taint integrity : but all obeyed  
The wonted signal, and superior voice  
Of their great potentate ; for great indeed  
His name, and high was his degree in heav'n ;  
His count'nance, as the morning star that guides

<sup>1</sup> "How art thou fallen, O Lucifer, son of the morning. . . . For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God : I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation *in the sides of the north*."—Isaiah xiv. part of 12 and 13 vers. In Shakespeare, First Part of *Henry VI.* Act V. Scene 3, Joan of Arc, addressing the fiends, calls them,—

"substitutes

Unto the loudly *monarch of the north*,"

*i.e.* the devil. This was probably in accordance with popular superstition, which actually gave an ill name to the *north* side of even a churchyard.

# Paradise Lost

The starry flock, allured them, and with lies  
Drew after him the third part of heav'n's host.<sup>1</sup> 710

“Meanwhile th’ eternal Eye, whose sight discerns  
Abstrusest thoughts, from forth His holy mount,  
And from within the golden lamps<sup>2</sup> that burn  
Nightly before Him, saw without their light  
Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread  
Among the sons of morn,<sup>3</sup> what multitudes  
Were banded to oppose His high decree ;  
And, smiling, to His only Son, thus said :

“Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, heir of all my might, 720  
Nearly it now concerns us to be sure  
Of our omnipotence, and with what arms  
We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
Of deity or empire ; such a foe  
Is rising, who intends to erect his throne  
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north ;  
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
In battle what our power is, or our right.  
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
With speed what force is left, and all employ 730  
In our defence, lest unawares we lose  
This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.’

“To whom the Son, with calm aspect and clear,  
Light’ning divine, ineffable, serene,  
Made answer : ‘ Mighty Father, thou thy foes  
Justly hast in derision, and secure  
Laugh’st at their vain designs and tumult vain,<sup>4</sup>  
Matter to me of glory, whom their hate  
Illustrates, when they see all regal power  
Giv’n me to quell their pride, and in event 740  
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
Thy rebels, or be found the worst in heav’n.’

“So spake the Son : but Satan with his powers  
Far was advanced on winged speed, an host  
Innumerable as the stars of night,  
Or stars of morning, dewdrops, which the sun

<sup>1</sup> Rev. xii. 3, 4.

<sup>2</sup> Isaiah xiv. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. iv. 5.

<sup>4</sup> Psalm ii. 4.

## Paradise Lost

Impearls on every leaf and every flower.  
Regions they passed, the mighty regencies  
Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,  
In their triple degrees ; regions to which 750  
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more  
Than what this garden is to all the earth,  
And all the sea, from one entire globose  
Stretched into longitude ; which having passed,  
At length into the limits of the north  
They came, and Satan to his royal seat  
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount  
Raised on a mount, with pyramids and tow'rs  
From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold,  
The palace of great Lucifer ; so call 760  
That structure in the dialect of men  
Interpreted, which not long after, he,  
Affecting all equality with GOD,  
In imitation of that mount<sup>1</sup> whereon  
Messiah was declared in sight of heav'n,  
The mountain of the congregation called ;  
For thither he assembled all his train,  
Pretending so commanded to consult  
About the great reception of their King,  
Thither to come, and with calumnious art 770  
Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears :  
“Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers!  
If these magnific titles yet remain  
Not merely titular, since by decree  
Another now hath to himself ingrossed  
All power, and us eclipsed under the name  
Of King Anointed, for whom all this haste  
Of midnight march and hurried meeting here,  
This only to consult how we may best  
With what may be devised of honours new 780  
Receive him, coming to receive from us  
Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,  
Too much to one, but double how endured,  
To one and to His image now proclaimed ?  
But what if better counsels might erect

<sup>1</sup> Psalm ii. 6.

# Paradise Lost

Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?  
Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend  
The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust  
To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves  
Natives and sons of heav'n, possess before 790  
By none, and if not equal all, yet free,  
Equally free; for orders and degrees  
Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
Who can in reason then or right assume  
Monarchy over such as live by right  
His equals, if in power and splendour less,  
In freedom equal? or can introduce  
Law and edict on us, who without law  
Err not? much less for this to be our Lord,  
And look for adoration, to th' abuse 800  
Of those imperial titles, which assert  
Our being ordained to govern, not to serve?'

"Thus far his bold discourse without control  
Had audience, when among the Seraphim  
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal adored  
The Deity, and divine commands obeyed,  
Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe  
The current of his fury thus opposed:

"'O argument blasphemous, false, and proud,  
Words which no ear ever to hear in heav'n 810  
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate,  
In place thyself so high above thy peers.  
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
The just decree of God, pronounced and sworn,  
That to His only Son, by right endued  
With regal sceptre, every soul in heav'n  
Shall bend the knee,<sup>1</sup> and in that honour due  
Confess him rightful King? Unjust thou say'st,  
Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,  
And equal over equals to let reign, 820  
One over all with unsucceeded power.  
Shalt thou give law to God?<sup>2</sup> shalt thou dispute.  
With Him the points of liberty, who made  
Thee what thou art, and formed the pow'rs of heav'n

<sup>1</sup> Philip. ii. 9, 10, 11.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. ix. 20.

## Paradise Lost

Such as He pleased, and circumscribed their being?  
Yet by experience taught we know how good,  
And of our good, and of our dignity  
How provident He is, how far from thought  
To make us less, bent rather to exalt  
Our happy state under one head more near 830  
United. But to grant it thee unjust,  
That equal over equals monarch reign :  
Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count,  
(Or all angelic nature joined in one,)  
Equal to him begotten Son, by whom  
As by His word the mighty Father made  
All things, ev'n thee ; and all the spirits of heav'n  
By Him created in their bright degrees,<sup>1</sup>  
Crowned them with glory, and to their glory named  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
Essential Powers ; nor by his reign obscured, [840  
But more illustrious made ; since he the head  
One of our number thus reduced becomes ;  
His laws our laws, all honour to him done,  
Returns our own ? Cease then this impious rage,  
And tempt not these ; but hasten to appease  
Th' incensèd Father, and th' incensèd Son,<sup>2</sup>  
While pardon may be found in time besought.'  
"So spake the fervent angel ; but his zeal  
None seconded, as out of season judged, 850  
Or singular and rash ; whereat rejoiced  
Th' Apostate, and more haughty thus replied  
" "That we were formed then, say'st thou ? and the  
work  
Of secondary hands, by task transferred  
From Father to His Son ? Strange point and new !  
Doctrine which we would know whence learned : who  
saw  
When this creation was ? remember'st thou  
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being ?  
We know no time when we were not as now ;  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-raised 860  
By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course

<sup>1</sup> Colos. i. 15, 16, 17.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm ii.

## Paradise Lost

Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
Of this our native heav'n, ethereal sons.  
Our puissance is our own ; our own right hand  
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try  
Who is our equal : then thou shalt behold  
Whether by supplication we intend  
Address, and to begird th' Almighty throne  
Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
These tidings carry to the Anointed King ; 870  
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.'

"He said, and as the sound of waters deep,  
Hoarse murmur echoed to his words applause  
Through the infinite host ; nor less for that  
The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone,  
Encompassed round with foes, thus answered bold :

"O alienate from God, O spirit accurst,  
Forsaken of all good, I see thy fall  
Determined, and thy hapless crew involved 880  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread  
Both of thy crime and punishment. Henceforth  
No more be troubled how to quit the yoke  
Of GOD'S MESSIAH ; those indulgent laws  
Will not be now vouchsafed, other decrees  
Against thee are gone forth without recall :  
That golden sceptre which thou didst reject  
Is now an iron rod, to bruise and break  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise ;  
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly  
These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 890  
Impendent raging into sudden flame  
Distinguish not ; for soon expect to feel  
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
Then who created thee lamenting learn,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.'

"So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found  
Among the faithless, faithful only he :  
Among innumerable false, unmoved,  
Unshaken, unseduced, unterrified,  
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal ; 900  
Nor number nor example with him wrought

## Paradise Lost

To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,  
Though single. From amidst them forth he passed,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustained  
Superior, nor of violence feared aught ;  
And with retorted scorn his back he turned  
On those proud tow'rs to swift destruction doomed."

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK VI.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described : Satan and his powers retire under night : he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his angels to some disorder ; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan ; yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah His Son, for whom He had reserved the glory of that victory. He in the power of His Father coming to the place, and causing all His legions to stand still on either side, with His chariot and thunder driving into the midst of His enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of heaven ; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep. Messiah returns with triumph to His Father.

“ALL night the dreadless angel unpursued 1  
Through heav'n's wide champaign held his way, till Morn,  
Waked by the circling hours, with rosy hand  
Unbarred the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of God, fast by His throne,  
Where light and darkness in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through  
heav'n  
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night :  
Light issues forth, and at the other door  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10  
To veil the heav'n, though darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here ; and now went forth the Morn,  
Such as in highest heav'n, arrayed in gold  
Empyreal, from before her vanished Night,  
Shot through with orient beams : when all the plain  
Covered with thick embattled squadrons bright,  
Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view.  
War he perceived, war in procinct, and found  
Already known what he for news had thought 20  
To have reported : gladly then he mixed  
Among those friendly Powers, who him received  
With joy and acclamations loud, that one,  
That of so many myriads fall'n yet one



## Paradise Lost

Returned not lost. On to the sacred hill  
They led him high applauded, and present  
Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice  
From midst a golden cloud thus mild was heard :

“ ‘ Servant of God, well done ! Well hast thou fought  
The better fight, who single hast maintained 30  
Against revolted multitudes the cause  
Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;  
And for the testimony of truth hast borne  
Universal reproach, far worse to bear  
Than violence : for this was all thy care,  
To stand approved in sight of God, though worlds  
Judged thee perverse. The easier conquest now  
Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
Back on thy foes more glorious to return  
Than scorned thou didst depart, and to subdue 40  
By force, who reason for their law refuse,  
Right reason for their law, and for their King  
Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.  
Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,  
And thou, in military prowess next,  
Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons  
Invincible ! lead forth my armèd Saints  
By thousands and by millions ranged for fight ;  
Equal in number to that godless crew  
Rebellious ; them with fire and hostile arms 50  
Fearless assault, and to the brow of heav’n  
Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,  
Into their place of punishment, the gulf  
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide  
His fiery chaos to receive their fall.’ ”

“ So spake the Sov’reign Voice, and clouds began  
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll  
In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign  
Of wrath awaked : nor with less dread the loud  
Ethereal trumpet from on high ’gan blow : 60  
At which command the Powers militant  
That stood for heav’n, in mighty quadrate joined  
Of union irresistible, moved on  
In silence their bright legions, to the sound

# Paradise Lost

Of instrumental harmony, that breathed  
Heroic ardour to adventurous deeds,  
Under their godlike leaders, in the cause  
Of GOD and His Messiah. On they move  
Indissolubly firm ; nor obvious hill,  
Nor strait'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides 70  
Their perfect ranks ; for high above the ground  
Their march was, and the passive air upbore  
Their nimble tread ; as when the total kind  
Of birds in orderly array on wing  
Came summoned over Eden to receive  
Their names of thee : so over many a tract  
Of heav'n they marched, and many a province wide  
Tenfold the length of this terrene. At last,  
Far in the horizon to the north appeared  
From skirt to skit a fiery region, stretched 80  
In battailous aspect, and nearer view  
Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
Of rigid spears, and helmets thronged, and shields  
Various, with boastful argument portrayed,<sup>1</sup>  
The banded powers of Satan hasting on  
With furious expedition ; for they weened  
That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,  
To win the mount of GOD, and on His throne  
To set the envier of His state, the proud  
Aspirer ; but their thoughts proved fond and vain 90  
In the mid way. Though strange to us it seemed  
At first, that angel should with angel war,  
And in fierce hosting<sup>2</sup> meet, who wont to meet  
So oft in festivals of joy and love  
Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire,  
Hymning th' eternal Father ; but the shout  
Of battle now began,<sup>3</sup> and rushing sound  
Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
High in the midst, exalted as a god,  
The apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 100

<sup>1</sup> Here is an allusion to the designs and mottoes on shields.

<sup>2</sup> Mustering of *hosts* or armies.

<sup>3</sup> "There was war in heaven ; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not," etc. See Rev. xii. 7, 8, 9.

# Paradise Lost

Idol<sup>1</sup> of Majesty divine, enclosed  
With flaming Cherubim and golden shields :  
Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now  
'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,  
A dreadful interval, and front to front  
Presented stood in terrible array  
Of hideous length : before the cloudy van,  
On the rough edge of battle ere it joined,  
Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanced,  
Came tow'ring, armed in adamant and gold : 110  
Abdiel that sight endured not, where he stood  
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
And thus his own undaunted heart explores :

“ ‘O heav'n ! that such resemblance of the Highest  
Should yet remain, where faith and reäly<sup>2</sup>  
Remain not ; wherefore should not strength and might  
There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove  
Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable ?  
His puissance, trusting in Almighty's aid,  
I mean to try, whose reason I have tried 120  
Unsound and false ; nor is it aught but just  
That he, who in debate of truth hath won,  
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike  
Victor : though brutish that contést and foul,  
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
Most reason is that reason overcome.’

“So pondering, and, from his armèd peers  
Forth stepping opposite, half way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more  
Incensed, and thus securely him defied : 130

“ ‘Proud, art thou met ? thy hope was to have reached  
The highth of thy aspiring unopposed,  
The throne of God unguarded, and His side  
Abandoned at the terror of thy power  
Or potent tongue : Fool ! not to think how vain  
Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms ;  
Who out of smallest things could without end  
Have raised incessant armies to defeat  
Thy folly ; or, with solitary hand

<sup>1</sup> For counterfeit — false deity.

<sup>2</sup> Reality.

## Paradiſe Lost

Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow 140  
Unaided could have finished thee, and whelmed  
Thy legions under darkness : but thou seest  
All are not of thy train ; there be, who faith  
Prefer and piety to GOD ; though then  
To thee not visible, when I alone  
Seemed in thy world erroneous to dissent  
From all : my sect thou seest ; now learn too late  
How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.'

“ Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askance,  
Thus answered : ‘ Ill for thee, but in wished hour 150  
Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return’st  
From flight, seditious angel, to receive  
Thy merited reward, the first assay  
Of this right hand provoked, since first that tongue  
Inspired with contradiction durst oppose  
A third part of the gods, in synod met  
Their deities to assert, who while they feel  
Vigour divine within them, can allow  
Omnipotence to none. But well thou com’st  
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160  
From me some plume, that thy success may show  
Destruction to the rest : this pause between,  
Unanswered lest thou boast, to let thee know,  
At first I thought that liberty and heav’n  
To heav’nly souls had been all one ; but now  
I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
Minist’ring spirits, trained up in feast and song ;  
Such hast thou armed, the minstrelsy of heav’n,  
Servility with freedom to contend,  
As both their deeds compared this day shall prove.’ 170

“ To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied :  
‘ Apostate, still thou err’st, nor end wilt find  
Of erring, from the path of truth remote :  
Unjustly thou deprav’st it with the name  
Of servitude to serve whom GOD ordains,  
Or Nature ; GOD and Nature bid the same,  
When he who rules is worthiest, and excels  
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
To serve th’ unwise, or him who hath rebelled

## Paradise Lost

Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180  
Thyself not free, but to thyself enthralled ;  
Yet lewdly dar'st our minist'ring upbraid.  
Reign thou in hell, thy kingdom ; let me serve  
In heav'n GOD ever blessed, and His divine  
Behests obey, worthiest to be obeyed ;  
Yet chains in hell, not realms expect : meanwhile  
From me returned, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
'This greeting on thy impious crest receive.'

"So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190  
On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,  
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield  
Such ruin intercept : ten paces huge  
He back recoiled ; the tenth on bended knee  
His massy spear upstayed ; as if on earth  
Winds under ground or waters, forcing way,  
Sidelong had pushed a mountain from his seat,  
Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seized  
The rebel thrones, but greater rage to see  
'Thus foiled their mightiest ; ours joy filled, and shout, 200  
Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
Of battle : whereat Michaël bid sound  
The Archangel trumpet ; through the vast of heav'n  
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
Hosanna to the Highest : nor stood at gaze  
The adverse legions, nor less hideous joined  
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
And clamour, such as heard in heav'n till now  
Was never ; arms on armour clashing brayed  
Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210  
Of brazen chariots raged ; dire was the noise  
Of conflict ; over head the dismal hiss  
Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,  
And flying vaulted either host with fire.  
So under fiery cope together rushed  
Both battles main, with ruinous assault  
And inextinguishable rage ; all heav'n  
Resounded, and had earth been then, all earth  
Had to her centre shook. What wonder ? when

## Paradise Lost

Millions of fierce encount'ring angels fought      220  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
'These elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all their regions : how much more of power  
Army against army numberless to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
'Though not destroy, their happy native seat ;  
Had not the eternal King omnipotent  
From His strong hold of heav'n high overruled  
And limited their might ; though numbered such,  
As each divided legion might have seemed      230  
A numerous host ; in strength each armed hand  
A legion ; led in fight, yet leader seemed  
Each warrior single as in chief, expert  
When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
Of battle, open when, and when to close  
The ridges of grim war ; no thought of flight,  
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
That argued fear ; each on himself relied,  
As only in his arm the moment lay  
Of victory : deeds of eternal fame      240  
Were done, but infinite ; for wide was spread  
That war, and various : sometimes on firm ground  
A standing fight ; then, soaring on main wing,  
Tormented all the air ; all air seemed then  
Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale  
The battle hung ; till Satan, who that day  
Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms  
No equal, ranging through the dire attack  
Of fighting Seraphim confused, at length  
Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and felled      250  
Squadrons at once ; with huge two-handed sway  
Brandished aloft, the horrid edge came down  
Wide wasting : such destruction to withstand  
• He hasted, and opposed the rocky orb  
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,  
A vast circumference. At his approach  
The great Archangel from his warlike toil  
Surceased ; and glad, as hoping here to end  
Intestine war in heav'n, th' arch-foe subdued

# Paradise Lost

Or captive dragged in chains, with hostile frown      260  
And visage all inflamed, first thus began :

“ ‘Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnawn in heav’n ; now plenteous, as thou seest,  
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest by just measure on thyself  
And thy adherents : how hast thou disturbed  
Heav’n’s blessed peace, and into nature brought  
Misery, uncreated till the crime  
Of thy rebellion ! how hast thou instilled  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
And faithful, now proved false ! But think not here  
To trouble holy rest ; heav’n casts thee out  
From all her confines : heav’n, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence and war.  
Hence then, and evil go with thee along,  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, hell ;  
Thou and thy wicked crew : there mingle broils,  
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,  
Or some more sudden vengeance winged from God  
Precipitate thee with augmented pain.’ 280

"So spake the prince of angels ; to whom thus  
The adversary : ' Nor think thou with wind  
Of airy threats to awe whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turned the least of these  
To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquished ? easier to transact with me  
That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats  
To chase me hence ? err not that so shall end  
The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style  
The strife of glory : which we mean to win,  
Or turn this heav'n itself into the hell  
Thou fablest ; here, however, to dwell free,  
If not to reign : meanwhile thy utmost force,  
And join Him named Almighty to thy aid,  
I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.'

290

“They ended parle, and both addressed for fight  
Unspeakeable ; for who, though with the tongue  
Of angels, can relate, or to what things  
Likely on earth conspicuous, that may lift

## Paradise Lost

Human imagination to such highth 300  
Of godlike power? for likest gods they seemed,  
Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,  
Fit to decide the empire of great heav'n.  
Now waved their fiery swords, and in the air  
Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields  
Blazed opposite, while expectation stood  
In horror; from each hand with speed retired,  
Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,  
And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
Of such commotion, such as, to set forth 310  
Great things by small, if, nature's concord broke,  
Among the constellations war were sprung,  
Two planets, rushing from aspect malign  
Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky  
Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.  
Together both, with next to Almighty arm,  
Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aimed  
That might determine, and not need repeat,  
As not of power, at once; nor odds appeared  
In might or swift prevention; but the sword 320  
Of Michael from the armoury of God  
Was giv'n him tempered so, that neither keen  
Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
The sword of Satan with steep force to smite  
Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stayed,  
But with swift wheel reverse, deep ent'ring, shared  
All his right side; then Satan first knew pain,  
And writhed him to and fro convolved; so sore  
The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
Passed thro' him, but th' ethereal substance closed, 330  
Not long divisible, and from the gash  
A stream of nectarous humour issuing flowed  
Sanguine, such as celestial spirits may bleed,<sup>1</sup>  
And all his armour stained, erewhile so bright.  
Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run  
By angels many and strong, who interposed  
Defence, while others bore him on their shields

<sup>1</sup> Homer calls the blood of the gods *ichor*, and describes it as differing from human blood, as Milton does that of Satan the Archangel.



## Paradise Lost

Back to his chariot ; where it stood retired  
From off the files of war : there they him laid,  
Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340  
To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
His confidence to equal God in power.  
Yet soon he healed ; for spirits that live throughout  
Vital in every part, not as frail man  
In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,  
Cannot but by annihilating die ;  
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
Receive, no more than can the fluid air :  
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350  
All intellect, all sense, and as they please  
They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.  
“ Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deserved  
Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,  
And with fierce ensigns pierced the deep array  
Of Moloch, furious king, who him defied,  
And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound  
Threatened, nor from the Holy One of heav’n  
Refrained his tongue blasphemous ; but anon, 360  
Down cloven to the waist, with shattered arms  
And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing  
Uriel and Raphael, his vaunting foe,  
Though huge, and in a rock of diamond armed,  
Vanquished, Adrameleck<sup>1</sup> and Asmadai,<sup>2</sup>  
Two potent thrones, that to be less than gods  
Disdained, but meaner thoughts learned in their flight,  
Mangled with ghastly wounds thro’ plate and mail.  
Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy  
The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow 370  
Ariel, and Arioc, and the violence  
Of Ramiel scorched and blasted, overthrew.  
I might relate of thousands, and their names  
Eternise here on earth ; but those elect  
Angels, contented with their fame in heav’n,

<sup>1</sup> One of the idols of Sepharvaim. 2 Kings xvii. 31

<sup>2</sup> The same as Asmodeus, the persecutor of Sara in Tobit.

## Paradise Lost

Seek not the praise of men : the other sort,  
In might though wondrous and in acts of war,  
Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
Cancelled from heav'n and sacred memory,  
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380  
For strength from truth divided and from just,  
Ullaudable, naught merits but dispraise  
And ignominy ; yet to glory aspires  
Vainglorious, and through infamy seeks fame :  
Therefore eternal silence be their doom.

“ And now, their mightiest quelled, the battle swerved,  
With many an inroad gored ; deformèd rout  
Entered, and foul disorder : all the ground  
With shivered armour strown, and on a heap  
Chariot and charioteer lay overturned, 390  
And fiery foaming steeds ; what stood, recoiled  
O'erwearied, through the faint Satanic host  
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surprised,  
Then first with fear surprised, and sense of pain,  
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
By sin of disobedience, till that hour  
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.  
Far otherwise th' inviolable saints,  
In cubic phalanx, firm advanced entire,  
Invulnerable, impenetrably armed : 400  
Such high advantages their innocence  
Gave them above their foes, not to have sinned,  
Not to have disobeyed ; in fight they stood  
Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pained  
By wound, tho' from their place by violence moved.

“ Now Night her course began, and, over heav'n  
Inducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,  
And silence on the odious din of war :  
Under her cloudy covert both retired,  
Victor and vanquished. On the foughten field 410  
Michaël and his Angels prevalent  
Encamping, placed in guard their watches round  
Cherubic waving fires : on the other part,  
Satan with his rebellious disappeared,  
Far in the dark dislodged ; and, void of rest,

# Paradise Lost

His potentates to council called by night ;  
And in the midst thus undismayed began

"O now in danger tried, now known in arms  
 Not to be overpowered, companions dear,  
 Found worthy not of liberty alone, 420  
 Too mean pretence, but what we more affect,  
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;  
 Who have sustained one day in doubtful fight,  
 —And if one day, why not eternal days?—  
 What heaven's Lord had powerfullest to send  
 Against us from about His throne, and judged  
 Sufficient to subdue us to His will,  
 But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,  
 Of future we may deem Him, though till now  
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly armed, 430  
 Some disadvantage we endured and pain,  
 Till now not known, but known, as soon contemned ;  
 Since now we find this our empyreal form  
 Incapable of mortal injury,  
 Imperishable, and though pierced with wound  
 Soon closing, and by native vigour healed.  
 Of evil then so small, as easy think  
 The remedy ; perhaps more valid arms,  
 Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440  
 Or equal what between us made the odds,  
 In nature none : if other hidden cause  
 Left them superior, while we can preserve  
 Unhurt our minds and understanding sound,  
 Due search and consultation will disclose.'

“He sat; and in th’ assembly next upstood  
 Nisroch,<sup>1</sup> of principalities the prime;  
 As one he stood escaped from cruel fight,  
 Sore toiled, his riven arms to havock hewn;  
 And cloudy in aspéct thus answering spake :  
 “ ‘ Deliverer from new lords, leader to free  
 Enjoyment of our right as gods; yet hard  
 For gods, and too unequal work we find

450

<sup>1</sup> Nisroch was worshipped by the Assyrians. It was in his temple that Sennacherib was slain by his two sons. See 2 Kings xix. 37.

## Paradise Lost

Against unequal arms to fight in pain,  
Against unpained, impassive ; from which evil  
Ruin must needs ensue, for what avails  
Valour or strength, though matchless, quelled with pain,  
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hand  
Of mightiest ? sense of pleasure we may well  
Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460  
But live content, which is the calmest life :  
But pain is perfect misery, the worst  
Of evils, and excessive overturns  
All patience. He who therefore can invent  
With what more forcible we may offend  
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm  
Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves  
No less than for deliverance what we owe.'

"Where to with look composed Satan replied :  
'Not uninvented that, which thou aight 470  
Believ'st so main to our success, I bring :  
Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
This continent of spacious heav'n, adorned  
With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems, and gold ;  
Whose eye so superficially surveys  
These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
Of spirituous and fiery spume, till touched  
With heaven's ray, and tempered they shoot forth 480  
So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light ?  
These in their dark nativity the deep  
Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame ;  
Which into hollow engines long and round,  
Thick-rammed, at the other bore with touch of fire  
Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth  
From far, with thund'ring noise, among our foes  
Such implements of mischief, as shall dash  
To pieces and o'erwhelm whatever stands  
Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarmed 490  
The Thunderer of His only dreaded bolt.  
Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn,  
Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive ;

## Paradise Lost

Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel joined  
Think nothing hard, much less to be despaired.'

"He ended, and his words their drooping cheer  
Enlightened, and their languished hope revived.  
'The invention all admired, and each, how he  
'To be th' inventor missed, so easy it seemed  
Once found, which yet unfound most would have  
thought 500

Impossible : yet haply of thy race  
In future days, if malice should abound,  
Some one intent on mischief, or inspired  
With dev'lish machination, might devise  
Like instrument, to plague the sons of men  
For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.  
Forthwith from council to the work they flew,  
None arguing stood ; innumerable hands  
Were ready ; in a moment up they turned  
Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath 510  
The originals of nature in their crude  
Conception : sulphurous and nitrous foam  
They found, they mingled, and with subtle art  
Concocted and adusted, they reduced  
'To blackest grain, and into store conveyed.  
Part hidden veins digged up, nor hath this earth  
Entrails unlike, of mineral and stone,  
Whereof to found their engines and their balls  
Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed  
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520  
So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,  
Secret they finished and in order set,  
With silent circumspection unespied.

"Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appeared,  
Up rose the victor Angels, and to arms  
The matin trumpet sung : in arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host,  
Soon banded : others from the dawning hills  
Looked round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour  
Each quarter, to descry the distant foe, 530  
Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
In motion or in halt : him soon they met,

## Paradise Lost

Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow  
But firm battalion : back with speediest sail  
Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,  
Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried :

“ ‘Arm, warriors, arm for fight ! the foe at hand,  
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud  
He comes, and settled in his face I see 540  
Sad resolution and secure : let each  
His adamantine coat gird well, and each  
Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orbèd shield,  
Borne ev’n or high ; for this day will pour down,  
If I conjecture aught, no drizzling show’r,  
But rattling storm of arrows barbed with fire.’

“So warned he them, aware themselves, and soon  
In order, quit of all impediment ;  
Instant without disturb they took alarm,  
And onward moved embattled ; when, behold ! 550  
Not distant far, with heavy pace the foe  
Approaching gross and huge ; in hollow cube  
Training his devilish engin’ry, impaled  
On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,  
To hide the fraud. At interview both stood  
Awhile ; but suddenly at head appeared  
Satan ; and thus was heard commanding loud :

“ ‘Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;  
That all may see, who hate us, how we seek 560  
Peace and composure, and with open breast  
Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
Our overture, and turn not back perverse ;  
But that I doubt ; however, witness heaven,  
Heav’n witness thou anon, while we discharge  
Freely our part : ye who appointed stand  
Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
What we propound, and loud that all may hear.’

“So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
Had ended, when to right and left the front  
Divided, and to either flank retired : 570  
Which to our eyes discovered, new and strange,  
A triple mounted row of pillars, laid

## Paradise Lost

On wheels, for like to pillars most they seemed  
Or hollowed bodies made of oak or fir,  
With branches lopped, in wood or mountain felled ;  
Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths  
With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,  
Portending hollow truce ; at each, behind,  
A seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
Stood waving tipped with fire ; while we suspense 580  
Collected stood within our thoughts amused ;  
Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds  
Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied  
With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,  
But soon obscured with smoke, all heaven appeared,  
From those deep-throated engines belched, whose roar  
Embowelled with outrageous noise the air,  
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul  
Their devilish glut, chained thunderbolts and hail  
Of iron globes, which on the victor host 590  
Levelled with such impetuous fury smote,  
That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,  
Though standing else as rocks ; but down they fell  
By thousands, argel on archangel rolled,  
The sooner for their arms ; unarmed they might  
Have easily as spirits evaded swift  
By quick contraction or remove : but now  
Foul dissipation followed and forced rout ;  
Nor served it to relax their serried files.  
What should they do ? if on they rushed, repulse 600  
Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
Doubled, would render them yet more despised,  
And to their foes a laughter : for in view  
Stood ranked of seraphim another row,  
In posture to displode their second tire  
Of thunder : back defeated to return  
They worse abhorred. Satan beheld their plight,  
And to his mates thus in derision called :  
“ O friends, why come not on these victors proud ?  
Erewhile they fierce were coming, and when we, 610  
To entertain them fair with open front  
And breast (what could we more ?) propounded terms

## Paradise Lost

Of composition, straight they changed their minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance : yet for a dance they seemed  
Somewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps  
For joy of offered peace : but I suppose  
If our proposals once again were heard,  
We should compel them to a quick result.'

"To whom thus Belial in like gamesome mood : 620  
'Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urged home ;  
Such as we might perceive amused them all,  
And stumbled many ; who receives them right,  
Had need from head to foot well understand ;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They shew us when our foes walk not upright.'

"So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
Stood scoffing, heightened in their thoughts beyond  
All doubt of victory ; Eternal Might 630  
To match with their inventions they presumed  
So easy, and of His thunder made a scorn,  
And all His host derided, while they stood  
Awhile in trouble ; but they stood not long ;  
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.  
Forthwith—behold the excellence, the power  
Which God hath in His mighty angels placed !—  
Their arms away they threw, and to the hills,  
For earth hath this variety from heav'n 640  
Of pleasure situate in hill and dale,  
Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew,  
From their foundations loos'ning to and fro  
They plucked the seated hills with all their load,  
Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops  
Uplifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,  
Be sure, and terror seized the rebel host,  
When coming towards them so dread they saw  
The bottom of the mountains upward turned ;  
'Till on those cursèd engines' triple-row 650  
They saw them whelmed, and all their confidence  
Under the weight of mountains buried deep,



## Paradise Lost

Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
Main promontories flung, which in the air  
Came shadowing, and oppressed whole legions armed ;  
Their armour helped their harm, crushed in and bruised  
Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain  
Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,  
Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
Out of such prison, though spirits of purest light, 660  
Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
The rest in imitation to like arms  
Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore ;  
So hills amid the air encountered hills,  
Hurled to and fro with jaculation dire,  
That under ground they fought in dismal shade ;  
Infernal noise ; war seemed a civil game  
To this uproar ; horrid confusion heaped  
Upon confusion rose : and now all heav'n  
Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread, 670  
Had not the Almighty Father, where He sits  
Shrined in His sanctuary of heav'n secure,  
Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
This tumult, and permitted all, advised :  
That His great purpose He might so fulfil,  
To honour His anointed Son avenged  
Upon His enemies, and to declare  
All power on Him transferred : whence to His Son  
The assessor of His throne He thus began :  
“ Effulgence of my glory, Son beloved, 680  
Son in whose face, invisible is beheld  
Visibly, what by Deity I am,  
And in whose hand what by decree I do,  
Second Omnipotence ! two days are past,  
Two days, as we compute the days of heav'n,  
Since Michael and his powers went forth to tame  
These disobedient ; sore hath been their fight,  
As likeliest was, when two such foes met armed ;  
For to themselves I left them, and thou know'st,  
Equal in their creation they were formed, 690  
Save what sin hath impaired, which yet hath wrought  
Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;

# Paradise Lost

Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
Endless, and no solution will be found.  
War wearied hath performed what war can do,  
And to disordered rage let loose the reins,  
With mountains as with weapons armed, which make  
Wild work in heav'n and dangerous to the main.  
Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;  
For thee I have ordained it, and thus far 700  
Have suffered, that the glory may be thine  
Of ending this great war, since none but thou  
Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace  
Immense I have transfused, that all may know  
In heav'n and hell thy power above compare,  
And this perverse commotion governed thus,  
To manifest thee worthiest to be heir  
Of all things, to be heir and to be king  
By sacred unction,<sup>1</sup> thy deserved right.  
Go then, thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might, 710  
Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels  
That shake heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war,  
My bow and thunder, my almighty arms  
Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh ;<sup>2</sup>  
Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out  
From all heav'n's bounds into the utter deep :  
'There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
God and Messiah His Anointed King.'

"He said, and on His Son with rays direct  
Shone full, He all His Father full exprest 720  
Ineffably into His face received,  
And thus the filial Godhead answering spake :  
" 'O Father, O Supreme of heav'nly thrones,  
First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st  
To glorify thy Son,<sup>3</sup> I always thee,  
As is most just ; this I my glory account,  
My exaltation, and my whole delight,  
That thou in me well pleased declar'st thy will  
Fulfilled, which to fulfil is all my bliss.  
Sceptre, and power, thy giving, I assume, 730  
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end

<sup>1</sup> Psalm xlv. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm xlv. 3, 4.

<sup>3</sup> John xvii. 4, 5.

# Paradise Lost

Thou shalt be all in all,<sup>1</sup> and I in thee  
For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st:<sup>2</sup>  
But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on  
Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,  
Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,  
Armed with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebelled,  
To their prepared ill mansion driven down  
To chains of darkness<sup>3</sup> and th' undying worm;<sup>4</sup>  
That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740  
Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
Then shall thy saints unmixed, and from th' impure  
Far separate, circling thy holy mount  
Unfeign'd hallelujahs to thee sing,  
Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.  
"So said, He, o'er His sceptre bowing, rose  
From the right hand of glory where He sat,  
And the third sacred morn began to shine,  
Dawning through heav'n: forth rushed with whirlwind  
sound  
The chariot of paternal Deity, 750  
Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,  
Itself instinct with spirit, but convoyed  
By four cherubic shapes; four faces each  
Had wondrous; as with stars their bodies all  
And wings were set with eyes; with eyes the wheels  
Of beryl,<sup>5</sup> and careering fires between;<sup>6</sup>  
Over their heads a crystal firmament,  
Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure  
Amber, and colours of the show'ry arch.  
He, in celestial panoply all armed 760  
Of radiant Urim,<sup>7</sup> work divinely wrought,  
Ascended; at His right hand Victory  
Sate eagle-winged, beside Him hung His bow  
And quiver with three-bolted thunder stored,  
And from about Him fierce effusion rolled  
Of smoke,<sup>8</sup> and bickering flame, and sparkles dire

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 28.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Peter ii. 4.

<sup>3</sup> A beryl is a precious stone of sea-green colour.

<sup>4</sup> See Ezek. i.

<sup>5</sup> Psalm xviii. 8, 1. 3.

<sup>6</sup> John xvii. 21, 23

<sup>7</sup> Mark ix. 44.

<sup>8</sup> Exod. xxviii. 2.

# Paradise Lost

Attended with ten thousand thousand saints<sup>1</sup>  
He onward came, far off His coming shone,  
And twenty thousand,<sup>2</sup> I their number heard,  
Chariots of GOD, half on each hand were seen. 770  
He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime<sup>3</sup>  
On the crystalline sky, in sapphire throned.  
Illustrious far and wide, but by his own  
First seen ; them unexpected joy surprised,  
When the great ensign of Messiah blazed,  
Aloft by angels borne, his sign in heav'n :<sup>4</sup>  
Under whose conduct Michael soon reduced  
His army, circumfused on either wing,  
Under their Head<sup>5</sup> embodied all in one.  
Before Him power divine His way prepared ; 780  
At His command the uprooted hills retired  
Each to his place, they heard His voice and went  
Obsequious : Heav'n his wonted face renewed,  
And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smiled.  
" This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdured,  
And to rebellious fight rallied their powers  
Insensate, hope conceiving from despair :  
In heav'nly spirits could such perverseness dwell ?  
But to convince the proud what signs avail,  
Or wonders move the obdurate to relent ? 790  
They hardened more by what might most reclaim,  
Grieving to see His glory, at the sight  
Took envy, and, aspiring to His highth,  
Stood reimbattled fierce, by force or fraud  
Weening to prosper, and at length prevail  
Against God and Messiah, or to fall  
In universal ruin last ; and now  
To final battle drew, disdaining flight,  
Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of GOD  
To all His host on either hand thus spake : 800  
" ' Stand still in bright array, ye saints, here stand.  
Ye angels armed, this day from battle rest ;  
Faithful hath been your warfare, and of GOD  
Accepted, fearless in His righteous cause,

<sup>1</sup> Jude 14.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm lxxviii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Psalm xlviii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xxiv. 30.

<sup>5</sup> Rom. xii. 5.

## Paradise Lost

And as ye have received, so have ye done  
Invincibly : but of this cursèd crew  
The punishment to other hand belongs ;  
Vengeance is His,<sup>1</sup> or whose He sole appoints :  
Number to this day's work is not ordained,  
Nor multitude ; stand only and behold 810  
God's indignation on these godless poured  
By me ; not you, but me they have despised,  
Yet envied : against me is all their rage,  
Because the Father, t' whom, in heav'n supreme,  
Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains,  
Hath honoured me according to His will.  
Therefore to me their doom He hath assigned ;  
That they may have their wish, to try with me  
In battle which the stronger proves, they all,  
Or I alone against them ; since by strength 820  
They measure all, of other excellence  
Not emulous, nor care who them excels ;  
Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.'  
"So spake the Son, and into terror changed  
His count'nance, too severe to be beheld,  
And full of wrath bent on His enemies.  
At once the Four<sup>2</sup> spread out their starry wings  
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
Of His fierce chariot rolled, as with the sound  
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830  
He on His impious foes right onward drove,  
Gloomy as night ; under His burning wheels  
The steadfast empyrean shook throughout,  
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon  
Among them He arrived, in His right hand  
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which He sent  
Before Him, such as in their souls infixed  
Plagues : they, astonished, all resistance lost,  
All courage ; down their idle weapons dropped ;  
O'er shields, and helms, and helmèd heads He rode  
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate, [840  
That wished the mountains now might be again<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Deut. xxxii. 35 ; Rom. xii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> The four Cherubim. Ezek. i.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. vi. 16.

## Paradise Lost

Thrown on them as a shelter from His ire.  
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
His arrows, from the fourfold visaged Four,  
Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels  
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes ;  
One spirit in them ruled, and every eye  
Glared light'ning, and shot forth pernicious fire  
Among the accursed, that withered all their strength,  
And of their wonted vigour left them drained, [850  
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
Yet half His strength He put not forth, but checked  
His thunder in mid volley, for He meant  
Not to destroy, but root them out of heav'n.  
The overthrown He raised, and as a herd  
Of goats or timorous flock together thronged,  
Drove them before Him thunder-struck, pursued  
With terrors and with furies to the bounds  
And crystal wall of heav'n, which op'ning wide 860  
Rolled inward, and a spacious gap disclosed  
Into the wasteful deep ; the monstrous sight  
Struck them with horror backward ; but far worse  
Urged them behind ; headlong themselves they threw  
Down from the verge of heav'n, eternal wrath  
Burned after them to the bottomless pit.  
Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, hell saw  
Heav'n ruining from heav'n, and would have fled  
Affrighted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870  
Nine days they fell ; confounded Chaos roared,  
And felt tenfold confusion in their fall  
Through his wild anarchy ; so huge a rout  
Incumbered him with ruin : hell at last  
Yawning received them whole, and on them closed ;  
Hell their fit habitation, fraught with fire  
Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.  
Disburdened heav'n rejoiced, and soon repaired  
Her mural breach, returning whence it rolled.  
" Sole victor, from th' expulsion of His foes, 880  
Messiah His triumphal chariot turned :  
To meet Him all His saints, who silent stood

# Paradise Lost

Eye-witnesses of His almighty acts,  
With jubilee advanced ; and, as they went,  
Shaded with branching palm, each order bright  
Sung triumph, and Him sung victorious King,  
Son, Heir, and Lord, to Him dominion giv'n,  
Worthiest to reign : He celebrated rode  
Triumphant through mid heav'n, into the courts  
And temple of His mighty Father throned 890  
On high ; who into glory Him received,<sup>1</sup>  
Where now He sits at the right hand of bliss.

“ Thus measuring things in heav'n by things on earth,  
At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
By what is past, to thee I have revealed  
What might have else to human race been hid :  
The discord which befell, and war in heav'n  
Among th' angelic powers, and the deep fall  
Of those too high aspiring, who rebelled 900  
With Satan ; he who envies now thy state,  
Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
Thee also from obedience, that with him  
Bereaved of happiness thou may'st partake  
His punishment, eternal misery ;  
Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
As a despite done against the Most High,  
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
But listen not to his temptations ; warn  
Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard  
By terrible example the reward 910  
Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,  
Yet fell : remember, and fear to transgress.”

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. iii. 16 ; Heb. i. 3.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK VII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael, at the request of Adam, relates how, and wherefore, this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declared His pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends His Son with glory and attendance of angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and His reascension into heaven.

DESCEND from heav'n, Urania,<sup>1</sup> by that name 1  
If rightly thou art called, whose voice divine  
Following, above th' Olympian hill I soar,  
Above the flight of Pegasean wing.<sup>2</sup>  
The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine,<sup>3</sup> nor on the top  
Of old Olympus dwell'st, but heav'nly born,  
Before the hills appeared, or fountain flowed,  
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse.  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play 10  
In presence of th' almighty Father, pleased  
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee  
Into the heav'n of heav'ns I have presumed,  
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air  
Thy temp'ring; with like safety guided down  
Return me to my native element:  
Least from this flying steed unreined, as once  
Bellerophon,<sup>4</sup> though from a lower clime,  
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall  
Erroneous, there to wander and forlorn. 20

<sup>1</sup> The word "Urania" signifies heavenly. Here the Poet means *Heavenly Muse*.

<sup>2</sup> The winged horse, Pegasus, said to belong to the Muses, was emblematical of flights of imagination.

<sup>3</sup> Urania, amongst the Muses, was the patroness of Astronomy.

<sup>4</sup> Bellerophon, the son of Glaucus, was a beautiful youth, who was falsely accused by Sthenobœa, Queen of Argos, to her husband. Prætus, King of Argos, sent him, in consequence, into Lycia with letters, commanding that he should be exposed to destruction. He escaped from many perilous enterprises forced on him; but when he attempted to mount to heaven on a winged horse, Pegasus (incited to the trial by vain-glory), he was thrown off, and wandered on the Aleian plains for the remainder of his life. The Aleian plains were in Cilicia.



# Paradise Lost

Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound,  
Within the visible diurnal sphere ;  
Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,  
More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged  
To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days,  
On evil days though fall'n and evil tongues ;  
In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
And solitude ; yet not alone, while thou  
Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn  
Purples the east. Still govern thou my song, 30  
Urania, and fit audience find, though few.  
But drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race  
Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard  
In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears  
To rapture, till the savage clamour drowned  
Both harp and voice ; nor could the Muse defend  
Her son.<sup>1</sup> So fail not thou, who thee implores :  
For thou art heav'nly, she an empty dream.  
Say, Goddess, what ensued when Raphael, 40  
The affable Archangel, had forewarned  
Adam by dire example to beware  
Apostasy, by what befell in heav'n  
To those apostates, lest the like befall  
In Paradise to Adam or his race,  
Charged not to touch the interdicted tree,  
If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
So easily obeyed, amid the choice  
Of all tastes else to please their appetite,  
Though wand'ring. He with his consorted Eve 50  
The story heard attentive, and was filled  
With admiration and deep muse, to hear  
Of things so high and strange, things to their thoughts  
So unimaginable as hate in heav'n,  
And war so near the peace of God in bliss  
With such confusion : but the evil soon  
Driven back redounded as a flood on those

<sup>1</sup> Orpheus was torn to pieces by the Bacchanalian women of Rhodope, a mountain of Thrace ; nor could his mother, the Muse Calliope, save him. Newton thinks that Milton here alludes to the dissolute Court of Charles II.

## Paradise Lost

From whom it sprung, impossible to mix  
With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repealed  
The doubts that in his heart arose : and now 60  
Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
What nearer might concern him, how this world  
Of heav'n and earth conspicuous first began,  
When, and whereof, created, for what cause,  
What within Eden, or without, was done  
Before his memory, as one whose drouth  
Yet scarce allayed, still eyes the current stream,  
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly guest :

“Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70  
Far differing from this world, thou hast revealed,  
Divine Interpreter, by favour sent  
Down from the empyrean to forewarn  
Us timely of what might else have been our loss,  
Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach :  
For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
Immortal thanks, and His admonishment  
Receive with solemn purpose to observe  
Immutably His sovereign will, the end  
Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsafed 80  
Gently for our instruction to impart  
Things above earthly thought, which yet concerned  
Our knowing, as to highest Wisdom seemed,  
Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
What may no less perhaps avail us known ;  
How first began this heav'n which we behold  
Distant so high, with moving fires adorned  
Innumerable, and this which yields or fills  
All space, the ambient air wide interfused  
Embracing round this florid earth ; what cause 90  
Moved the Creator in His holy rest  
Through all eternity so late to build  
In Chaos ; and the work begun, how soon  
Absolved ; if unforbid thou may'st unfold  
What we, not to explore the secrets, ask  
Of His eternal empire, but the more  
To magnify His works, the more we know.

## Paradise Lost

And the great light of day yet wants to run  
Much of his race, though steep ; suspense in heav'n  
Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 100  
And longer will delay to hear thee tell  
His generation, and the rising birth  
Of nature from the unapparent deep :  
Or if the star of ev'ning and the moon  
Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring  
Silence, and Sleep list'ning to thee will watch ;  
Or we can bid his absence, till thy song  
End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine."

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought ;  
And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild : 110

" This also thy request with caution asked  
Obtain : though to recount almighty works  
What words or tongue of seraph can suffice,  
Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?  
Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
To glorify the Maker, and infer  
Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
Thy hearing, such commission from above  
I have received, to answer thy desire  
Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain 120  
To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope  
Things not revealed, which th' invisible King,<sup>1</sup>  
Only omniscient, hath suppress in night,  
To none communicable in earth or heav'n :  
Enough is left besides to search and know.  
But knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temperance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain,  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. 130

" Know then, that after Lucifer from heav'n,  
—So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of angels, than that star the stars among,—  
Fell with his flaming legions through the deep  
Into his place, and the great Son returned  
Victorious with His saints, th' Omnipotent

## Paradise Lost

Eternal Father from His throne beheld

Their multitude, and to His Son thus spake :

“ ‘ At least our envious foe hath failed, who thought  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140

This inaccessible high strength, the seat

Of Deity supreme, us dispossessed

He trusted to have seized, and into fraud

Drew many, whom their place knows here no more :

Yet far the greater part have kept, I see,

Their station, heav’n yet populous retains

Number sufficient to possess her realms

Though wide, and this high temple to frequent

With ministeries due and solemn rites.

But lest his heart exalt him in the harm 150

Already done, to have dispeopled heav’n,

My damage fondly deemed, I can repair

That detriment, if such it be to lose

Self-lost, and in a moment will create

Another world, out of one man a race

Of men innumerable, there to dwell,

Not here, till by degrees of merit raised,

They open to themselves at length the way

Up hither, under long obedience tried ;

And earth be changed to heav’n, and heav’n to earth,

One kingdom, joy and union without end. [160

Meanwhile inhabit lax,<sup>1</sup> ye powers of heav’n,

And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee

This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done.

My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee

I send along ; ride forth, and bid the deep

Within appointed bounds be heav’n and earth ;

Boundless the deep, because I AM who fill

Infinitude ; nor vacuous the space ;

Though I uncircumscribed myself retire, 170

And put not forth my goodness, which is free

To act, or not, necessity and chance

Approach not me, and what I will is fate.’

“ So spake th’ Almighty, and to what He spake

<sup>1</sup> The meaning seems to be, “ Occupy freely the space left by the fall of the angels.”

## Paradise Lost

His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
Immediate are the acts of GOD, more swift  
Than time or motion, but to human ears  
Cannot without process of speech be told,  
So told as earthly notion can receive.  
Great triumph and rejoicing was in heav'n, 180  
When such was heard declared the Almighty's will;  
Glory they sung to the Most High, good will  
To future men, and in their dwellings peace.  
Glory to Him, whose just avenging ire  
Had driven out th' ungodly from His sight  
And the habitations of the just; to Him  
Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordained  
Good out of evil to create, instead  
Of spirits malign a better race to bring  
Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190  
His good to worlds and ages infinite.

"So sang the Hierarchies. Meanwhile the Son  
On His great expedition now appeared,  
Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crowned  
Of Majesty divine, sapience and love  
Immense, and all His Father in Him shone.  
About His chariot numberless were poured  
Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,  
And Virtues, winged Spirits, and Chariots winged  
From the armoury of GOD, where stand of old 200  
Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodged  
Against a solemn day, harnessed at hand,  
Celestial equipage; and now came forth  
Spontaneous, for within them spirit lived,  
Attendant on their Lord: heav'n opened wide  
Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound  
On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
The King of glory, in His powerful Word  
And Spirit coming to create new worlds.  
On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the 210  
shore

They viewed the vast immeasurable abyss,  
Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,  
Up from the bottom turned by furious winds

## Paradise Lost

And surging waves, as mountains, to assault  
Heav'n's highth, and with the centre mix the pole.

“‘Silence, ye troubled waves, and, thou Deep, peace,’  
Said then th’ omnific Word ; ‘ your discord end.’

“Nor stayed ; but, on the wings of Cherubim  
Uplifted, in Paternal Glory rode  
Far into Chaos and the world unborn ; 220  
For Chaos heard His voice. Him all His train  
Followed in bright procession to behold  
Creation, and the wonders of His might.  
Then stayed the fervid wheels, and in His hand  
He took the golden compasses,<sup>1</sup> prepared  
In God’s eternal store, to circumscribe  
This universe, and all created things.  
One foot he centred, and the other turned  
Round through the vast profundity obscure,  
And said, ‘ Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 230  
This be thy just circumference, O world.’

“Thus GOD the heav’n created, thus the earth,  
Matter unformed and void. Darkness profound  
Covered th’ Abyss ; but on the watery calm  
His brooding wings the Spirit of GOD outspread,<sup>2</sup>  
And vital virtue infused and vital warmth  
Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purged  
The black, tartareous, cold, infernal dregs,  
Adverse to life : then founded, then conglobed  
Like things to like ; the rest to several place 240  
Disparted, and between spun out the air,  
And earth self-balanced on her centre hung.

“‘Let there be light,’ said GOD, and forthwith light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,  
Sprung from the deep, and from her native east  
To journey through the aery gloom began,  
Sphered in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun  
Was not ; she in a cloudy tabernacle  
Sojourned the while. GOD saw the light was good ;  
And light from darkness by the hemisphere 250  
Divided : light the Day, and darkness Night,  
He named. Thus was the first day ev’n and morn:

<sup>1</sup> Prov. viii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. i. 1, 2.

# Paradise Lost

Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the celestial quires, when orient light  
Exhaling first from darkness they beheld,  
Birth-day of heav'n and earth ; with joy and shout <sup>1</sup>  
The hollow universal orb they filled,  
And touched their golden harps, and hymning praised  
God and His works, Creator Him they sung,  
Both when first evening was, and when first morn. 260

“Again God said, ‘Let there be firmament’ <sup>2</sup>  
Amid the waters, and let it divide  
The waters from the waters.’ And God made  
The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, elemental air, diffused  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great round ; partition firm and sure,  
The waters underneath from those above  
Dividing : for as earth, so He the world  
Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide 270  
Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule  
Of Chaos far removed, lest fierce extremes  
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame :  
And heav’n He named the firmament : so ev’n  
And morning chorus sung the second day.

“The earth was formed, but, in the womb as yet  
Of waters embryo immature involved,  
Appeared not : over all the face of earth  
Main ocean flowed, not idle, but with warm  
Prolific humour soft’ning all her globe 280  
Fermented the great mother to conceive,  
Sate with genial moisture ; when God said,  
‘Be gathered now, ye waters under heav’n,  
Into one place, and let dry land appear.’  
Immediately the mountains huge appear  
Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave  
Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky.  
So high as heaved the tumid hills, so low  
Down sank a hollow bottom broad and deep,  
Capacious bed of waters : thither they 290  
Hasted with glad precipitance, uprolled

Job xxxviii. 4, 7.

<sup>2</sup> Firmament signifies expansion.—NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

As drops on dust conglobing from the dry :  
Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,  
For haste ; such flight the great command impressed  
On the swift floods : as armies at the call  
Of trumpet, for of armies thou hast heard,  
Troop to their standard, so the watery throng,  
Wave rolling after wave, where way they found ;  
If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,  
Soft-ebbing : nor withstood them rock or hill, 300  
But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
With serpent error wandering, found their way,  
And on the washy ooze deep channels wore,  
Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,  
All but within those banks, where rivers now  
Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.  
The dry land, Earth ; and the great receptacle  
Of congregated waters He called Seas ;  
And saw that it was good, and said, ' Let the earth  
Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 310  
And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind ;  
Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.'  
He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then  
Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorned,  
Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad  
Her universal face with pleasant green ;  
Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flowered,  
Opening their various colours, and made gay  
Her bosom smelling sweet : and these scarce blown,  
Forth flourished thick the clustering vine, forth crept 320  
The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed  
Embattled in her field ; and the humble shrub,  
And bush with frizzled hair implicit : last  
Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread  
Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemmed  
Their blossoms : with high woods the hills were crown'd,  
With tufts the valleys and each fountain side :  
With borders long the rivers : that earth now  
Seemed like to heav'n, a seat where gods might dwell,  
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330  
Her sacred shades : though God had not yet rained



## Paradise Lost

Upon the earth, and man to till the ground  
None was ; but from the earth a dewy mist  
Went up and watered all the ground, and each  
Plant of the field ; which, ere it was in the earth,  
God made, and every herb, before it grew  
On the green stem : God saw that it was good :  
So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.

“ Again th' Almighty spake : ‘ Let there be lights  
High in th' expanse of heaven, to divide 340  
The day from night ; and let them be for signs,  
For seasons, and for days, and circling years ;  
And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
Their office in the firmament of heav'n  
To give light on the earth.’ And it was so.  
And God made two great lights, great for their use  
To man, the greater to have rule by day,  
The less by night, altern : and made the stars,  
And set them in the firmament of heav'n,  
To illuminate the earth, and rule the day 350  
In their vicissitude, and rule the night,  
And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
Surveying His great work, that it was good :  
For of celestial bodies first the sun,  
A mighty sphere, He framed, unlightsome first,  
Though of ethereal mould : then formed the moon  
Globose, and every magnitude of stars,  
And sowed with stars the heav'n thick as a field.  
Of light by far the greater part He took,  
Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and placed 360  
In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
And drink the liquid light, firm to retain  
Her gathered beams, great palace now of light.  
Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,  
And hence the morning planet gilds her horns :  
By tincture or reflection they augment  
Their small peculiar, though from human sight  
So far remote, with diminution seen.  
First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, 370  
Regent of day, and all the horizon round

# Paradise Lost

Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
His longitude through heav'n's high road : the gray  
Dawn and the Pleiades before him danced,  
Shedding sweet influence.<sup>1</sup> Less bright the moon,  
But opposite in levelled west was set  
His mirror, with full face borrowing her light  
From him, for other light she needed none  
In that aspect ; and still that distance keeps  
Till night ; then in the east her turn she shines, 380  
Revolved on heav'n's great axle, and her reign  
With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
With thousand thousand stars, that then appeared  
Spangling the hemisphere : then first adorned  
With their bright luminaries, that set and rose,  
Glad ev'ning and glad morn crowned the fourth day.

"And God said, 'Let the waters generate'<sup>2</sup>  
Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul :  
And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings  
Displayed on the open firmament of heav'n.' 390  
And God created the great whales, and each  
Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
The waters generated by their kinds,  
And every bird of wing after his kind ;  
And saw that it was good, and blessed them, saying,  
'Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,  
And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;  
And let the fowl be multiplied on the earth.'  
Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,  
With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 400  
Of fish, that with their fins and shining scales  
Glide under the green wave, in sculls<sup>3</sup> that oft  
Bank the mid sea : part single, or with mate,

<sup>1</sup> The Pleiades are seven stars in the neck of the constellation Taurus, which, rising about the time of the vernal equinox, are called by the Latins "Vergiliae." Milton, therefore, in saying that the Pleiades danced before the sun at his creation, implies that creation began with the spring.—*From NEWTON.* It has been a recent idea of astronomers, that the Pleiades, or seven stars—for fixed stars *are* suns—are the centre of the universe round which the heavens revolve ; but this is not yet clearly ascertained. Job speaks of "the sweet influences of the Pleiades."  
—See Job xxxviii. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. i. 20, 22.

<sup>3</sup> *Schools.* We say a "school of whales" for a shoal now. Scull comes from the Saxon *sceole*, an assembly.

# Paradise Lost

Graze the seaweed their pasture, and through groves  
 Of coral stray, or sporting with quick glance  
 Show to the sun their waved coats dropt with gold ;  
 Or in their pearly shells at ease attend  
 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food  
 In jointed armour watch : on smooth the seal  
 And bended dolphins play ; part huge of bulk, 410  
 Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,  
 Tempest the ocean : there Leviathan,  
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep  
 Stretched like a promontory sleeps, or swims  
 And seems a moving land, and at his gills  
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.  
 Meanwhile the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,  
 Their brood as numerous hatch from the egg, that soon  
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclosed  
 Their callow young ; but feathered soon and fledge, 420  
 They summed their pens,<sup>1</sup> and soaring the air sublime  
 With clang despised the ground, under a cloud  
 In prospect ; there the eagle and the stork  
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build : <sup>2</sup>  
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise  
 In common ranged in figure,<sup>3</sup> wedge their way,  
 Intelligent of seasons,<sup>4</sup> and set forth  
 Their acry caravan, high over seas  
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing  
 Easing their flight ; so steers the prudent crane 430  
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds ; the air  
 Floats, as they pass, fanned with unnumbered plumes.  
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
 Solaced the woods, and spread their painted wings  
 Till even ; nor then the solemn nightingale  
 Ceased warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays.  
 Others on silver lakes and rivers bathed  
 Their downy breast ; the swan, with archèd neck  
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows

<sup>1</sup> Pens are feathers. Here the meaning is, "They used their pinions as full-fledged birds."

<sup>2</sup> Jeremiah xxxix. 27, 28.

<sup>3</sup> Migratory birds fly in shape of a wedge, one bird leading alternately.

<sup>4</sup> Jeremiah vii. 7.

## Paradise Lost

Her state with oary feet : yet oft they quit 440  
The dank, and rising on stiff pennons tower  
The mid ærial sky. Others on ground  
Walked firm ; the crested cock, whose clarion sounds  
The silent hours ; and the other, whose gay train  
Adorns him, coloured with the florid hue  
Of rainbows and starry eyes. 'The waters thus  
With fish replenished, and the air with fowl,  
Ev'ning and morn solemnised the fifth day.

"The sixth, and of creation last, arose  
With ev'ning harps and matin ; when GOD said, 450  
'Let the earth bring forth soul living in her kind,  
Cattle and creeping things, and beast of the earth,  
Each in their kind.' The earth obeyed, and straight  
Opening her fertile womb teemed at a birth  
Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,  
Limbed and full grown. Out of the ground up rose  
As from his lair the wild beast, where he wonns<sup>1</sup>  
In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;  
Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walked ;  
The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 460  
Those rare and solitary, these in flocks  
Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.  
The grassy clods now calved ; now half appeared  
The tawny lion, pawing to get free  
His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds,  
And rampant shakes his brinded mane ; the ounce,  
The libbard,<sup>2</sup> and the tiger, as the mole  
Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw  
In hillocks ; the swift stag from under ground  
Bore up his branching head ; scarce from his mould 470  
Behemoth, biggest born of earth, upheaved  
His vastness : fleeced the flocks and bleating rose,  
As plants : ambiguous between sea and land  
The river horse and scaly crocodile.  
At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
Insect or worm ; those waved their limber fans

<sup>1</sup> *Wone* is Saxon for to dwell, to inhabit.—See CHAUCER, *Somfoure's Tale*, line 7745.

<sup>2</sup> Leopard.

## Paradise Lost

For wings, and smallest lineaments exact  
In all the liveries decked of summer's pride,  
With spots of gold and purple, azure and green :  
These as a line their long dimension drew, 480  
Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all  
Minims<sup>1</sup> of nature ; some of serpent kind,  
Wondrous in length and corpulence, involved  
Their snaky folds and addled wings. First crept  
The parsimonious emmet, provident  
Of future, in small room large heart inclosed,  
Pattern of just equality perhaps  
Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes  
Of commonalty : swarming next appeared  
The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 490  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells  
With honey stored : the rest are numberless,  
And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,  
Needless to thee repeated ; nor unknown  
The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field,  
Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
And hairy mane terrific, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

“ Now heav'n in all her glory shone, and rolled  
Her motions, as the great First Mover's hand 500  
First wheeled their course ; earth in her rich attire  
Consummate lovely smiled ; air, water, earth,  
By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walked  
Frequent ; and of the sixth day yet remained ;  
There wanted yet the master work, the end  
Of all yet done ; a creature, who not prone  
And brute as other creatures, but indued  
With sanctity of reason, might erect  
His stature, and upright with front serene  
Govern the rest, self-knowing ; and from thence 510  
Magnanimous to correspond with heav'n ;  
But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes  
Directed in devotion, to adore  
And worship GOD Supreme, who made him chief

<sup>1</sup> Something exceedingly small, a dwarf.

# Paradise Lost

Of all His works : therefore the Omnipotent  
Eternal Father,—for where is not He  
Present?—thus to His Son audibly spake :

“ ‘Let us make now Man in our image, man<sup>1</sup>  
In our similitude, and let them rule 520  
Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,  
Beast of the field and over all the earth,  
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.’  
This said, He formed thee, Adam, thee, O man,  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breathed  
The breath of life : in His own image He  
Created thee, in the image of God  
Express, and thou becam’st a living soul.  
Male He created thee, but thy consort  
Female for race ; then blessed mankind, and said, 530  
‘Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth ;  
Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,  
And every living thing that moves on the earth.’  
Wherever thus created, for no place  
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know’st,  
He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
This garden, planted with the trees of God,  
Delectable both to behold and taste ;  
And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540  
Gave thee : all sorts are here that all th’ earth yields,  
Variety without end ; but of the tree,  
Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,  
Thou may’st not : in the day thou eat’st thou diest ;  
Death is the penalty imposed ; beware,  
And govern well thy appetite ; lest Sin  
Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.  
“Here finished He, and all that He had made  
Viewed, and behold all was entirely good ;  
So ev’n and morn accomplished the sixth day : 550  
Yet not, till the Creator from His work  
Desisting, though unwearied, up returned,  
Up to the heav’n of heav’ns, His high abode,  
Thence to behold His new-created world,

<sup>1</sup> Gen. i. 26-28.

## Paradise Lost

Th' addition of His empire, how it showed  
In prospect from His throne, how good, how fair,  
Answering His great idea. Up He rode,  
Followed with acclamation and the sound  
Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned  
Angelic harmonies : the earth, the air 560  
Resounded, thou remember'st, for thou heard'st ;  
The heav'ns and all the constellations rung,  
The planets in their station list'ning stood,  
While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.  
'Open, ye everlasting gates,' they sung,<sup>1</sup>  
'Open, ye heavens, your living doors ; let in  
The great Creator, from His work returned  
Magnificent, His six days' work, a world.  
Open, and henceforth oft ; for GOD will deign  
To visit oft the dwellings of just men 570  
Delighted, and with frequent intercourse  
Thither will send His winged messengers  
On errands of supernal grace.' So sung  
The glorious train ascending : He through heav'n,  
That opened wide her blazing portals, led  
To GOD's eternal house direct the way ;  
A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold,  
And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear  
Seen in the galaxy, that milky way  
Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest 580  
Powdered with stars. And now on earth the seventh  
Ev'ning arose in Eden, for the sun  
Was set, and twilight from the east came on,  
Forerunning night ; when at the holy mount  
Of heaven's high seated top, th' imperial throne  
Of Godhead, fixed for ever firm and sure,  
The Filial Power arrived, and sat Him down  
With His great Father ; for He also went  
Invisible, yet stayed, such privilege  
Hath Omnipresence, and the work ordained, 590  
Author and end of all things, and from work

<sup>1</sup> Psalm xxiv. 7. This Psalm was sung by the Levites when the ark of God was carried up into the sanctuary on Mount Sion, and is understood as a prophecy of our Lord's ascension.—*From* NEWTON, and Mant's "Bible."

## Paradise Lost

Now resting, blessed and hallowed the seventh day,  
As resting on that day from all His work,  
But not in silence holy kept ; the harp  
Had work, and rested not ; the solemn pipe  
And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,  
All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,  
Tempered soft tunings, intermixed with voice  
Choral or unison : of incense, clouds  
Fuming from golden censers hid the Mount. 600  
Creation and the six days' acts they sung :  
'Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite  
Thy power ; what thought can measure thee, or  
tongue  
Relate thee ? greater now in thy return  
Than from the giant angels. Thee that day  
Thy thunders magnified ; but to create  
Is greater than created to destroy.  
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound  
Thy empire ? easily the proud attempt  
Of spirits apostate and their counsels vain 610  
Thou hast repelled, while impiously they thought  
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
To manifest the more thy might : his evil  
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
Witness this new-made world, another heav'n  
From heaven gate not far, founded in view  
On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea ;  
Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620  
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world  
Of destined habitation ; but thou know'st  
Their seasons : among these the seat of men,  
Earth, with her nether ocean circumfused,  
Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy men,  
And sons of men, whom GOD hath thus advanced,  
Created in His image, there to dwell  
And worship Him ; and in reward to rule  
Over His works, on earth, in sea, or air,  
And multiply a race of worshippers 630



## Paradise Lost

Holy and just : thrice happy, if they know  
Their happiness, and persevere upright.'

"So sung they, and the empyrean rung  
With hallelujahs : thus was Sabbath kept.  
And thy request think now fulfilled, that asked  
How first this world and face of things began,  
And what before thy memory was done  
From the beginning, that posterity  
Informed by thee might know. If else thou seek'st  
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say." 640

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK VIII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning the motions, is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge. Adam assents; and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve; his discourse with the angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

THE angel ended, and in Adam's ear 1  
So charming left his voice, that he awhile  
Thought him still speaking, still stood fixed to hear;  
Then, as new waked, thus gratefully replied:  
    "What thanks sufficient, or what recompence  
Equal, have I to render thee, divine  
Historian? who thus largely hast allayed  
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed  
This friendly condescension to relate  
Things else by me unsearchable, now heard 10  
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glory attributed to the high  
Creator: something yet of doubt remains  
Which only thy solution can resolve.  
When I behold this goodly frame, this world,  
Of heav'n and earth consisting, and compute  
Their magnitudes, this earth a spot, a grain,  
An atom, with the firmament compared  
And all her numbered stars, that seem to roll  
Spaces incomprehensible, for such 20  
Their distance argues, and their swift return  
Diurnal, merely to officiate light  
Round this opacous earth, this punctual<sup>1</sup> spot,  
One day and night, in all their vast survey  
Useless besides; reasoning, I oft admire  
How nature, wise and frugal, could commit  
Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
So many nobler bodies to create,

<sup>1</sup> Small as a point in punctuation.

# Paradise Lost

Greater so manifold, to this one use,  
For aught appears, and on their orbs impose 30  
Such restless revolution day by day  
Repeated, while the sedentary earth,  
That better might with far less compass move,  
Served by more noble than herself, attains  
Her end without least motion, and receives,  
As tribute, such a sumless journey brought  
Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light ;  
Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails."<sup>1</sup>  
So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seemed  
Entering on studious thoughts abstruse ; which Eve  
Perceiving where she sat retired in sight, [40  
With lowliness majestic from her seat,  
And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flow'rs.  
To visit how they prospered, bud and bloom,  
Her nursery ; they at her coming sprung,  
And touched by her fair tendance gladlier grew.  
Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
Delighted, or not capable her ear  
Of what was high : such pleasure she reserved, 50  
Adam relating, she sole auditress ;  
Her husband the relater she preferred  
Before the angel, and of him to ask  
Chose rather ; he, she knew, would intermix  
Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute  
With conjugal caresses ; from his lip  
Not words alone pleased her. O when meet now  
Such pairs, in love and mutual honour joined ?  
With goddess-like demeanour forth she went ;  
Not unattended, for on her as queen 60  
A pomp of winning graces waited still,  
And from about her shot darts of desire  
Into all eyes to wish her still in sight.  
And Raphael now to Adam's doubt proposed  
Benevolent and facile thus replied :  
"To ask or search I blame thee not, for heav'n

<sup>1</sup> One is here reminded of the fact that Milton had held communion with Galileo, whose "Eppure si muove" is historical.

## Paradise Lost

Is as the book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read His wondrous works, and learn  
His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years.  
This to attain, whether heav'n move or earth, 70  
Imports not, if thou reckon right ;<sup>1</sup> the rest  
From man or angel the great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets to be scanned by them who ought  
Rather admire ; or if they list to try  
Conjecture, He His fabric of the heav'n's  
Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide  
Hereafter, when they come to model heav'n  
And calculate the stars ; how they will wield 80  
The mighty frame, how build, unbuild, contrive,  
To save appearances ; how gird the sphere  
With centric and eccentric scribbled o'er,  
Cycle and epicycle,<sup>2</sup> orb in orb.  
Already by thy reasoning this I guess,  
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest,  
That bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The less not bright, nor heav'n such journeys run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receives  
The benefit. Consider first, that great 90  
Or bright infers not excellence : the earth  
Though, in comparison of heav'n, so small,  
Nor glistening, may of solid good contain  
More plenty than the sun, that barren shines,  
Whose virtue on itself works no effect,  
But in the fruitful earth : there first received  
His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.  
Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries  
Officious, but to thee, earth's habitant.  
And for the heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak 100

<sup>1</sup> The subject was then matter of discussion, and, in the Roman Church, of persecution. The Ptolemaic system made the earth the centre of the system, and the sun and stars move round it ; the Copernican made the sun the centre, and the earth move, as Galileo asserted.

<sup>2</sup> These terms were used by Ptolemaic astronomers to explain their system. *Centric* means a sphere whose centre is the same as that of the earth ; *eccentric*, a sphere whose centre is quite different to that of the earth. *Cycle* is a circle : *epicycle*, a circle on another circle.

## Paradise Lost

The Maker's high magnificence, who built  
So spacious, and His line stretched out so far ;  
That man may know he dwells not in his own ;  
An edifice too large for him to fill,  
Lodged in a small partition, and the rest  
Ordained for uses to his Lord best known.  
The swiftness of those circles attribute,  
Though numberless, to His omnipotence,  
That to corporeal substances could add  
Speed almost spiritual. me thou think'st not slow, 110  
Who since the morning hour set out from heav'n  
Where God resides, and ere midday arrived  
In Eden, distance inexpressible  
By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
Admitting motion in the heav'ns, to show  
Invalid that which thee to doubt it moved ;  
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.  
God, to remove His ways from human sense,  
Placed heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight, 120  
If it presume, might err in things too high,  
And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
Be centre to the world, and other stars,  
By his attractive virtue and their own  
Incited, dance about him various rounds ?  
Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,  
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
In six thou seest ;<sup>1</sup> and what if sev'nth to these  
The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,  
Insensibly three different motions<sup>2</sup> move ? 130  
Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe.  
Moved contrary with thwart obliquities,  
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift  
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb supposed,  
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel  
Of day and night ; which needs not thy belief,

<sup>1</sup> The moon and the five planets visible to Adam.

<sup>2</sup> Three motions were attributed by the Copernicans to the earth. The *diurnal*, round her own axis, causing day and night ; the *annual*, round the sun ; and the *motion of libration*, as it is called, "whereby the earth so proceeds in her orbit, as that her axis is constantly parallel to the axis of the world."—NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

If earth industrious of herself fetch day  
Travelling east, and with her part averse  
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part  
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light, 140  
Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,  
To the terrestrial moon be as a star  
Enlight'ning her by day, as she by night  
This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,  
Fields and inhabitants : her spots thou seest  
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
Fruits in her softened soil, for some to eat  
Allotted there ; and other suns perhaps  
With their attendant moons thou wilt descry,  
Communicating male and female light, 150  
Which two great sexes animate the world,  
Stored in each orb perhaps with some that live.  
For such vast room in nature unpossessed  
By living soul, desert and desolate,  
Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
Each orb a glimpse of light, conveyed so far  
Down to this habitable, which returns  
Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
Whether the sun predominant in heav'n 160  
Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun,  
He from the east his flaming road begin,  
Or she from west her silent course advance  
With inoffensive pace, that spinning sleeps  
On her soft axle, while she paces ev'n,  
And bears thee soft with the smooth air along,  
Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,  
Leave them to God above, Him serve and fear ;  
Of other creatures, as Him pleases best,  
Wherever placed, let Him dispose : joy thou 170  
In what He gives to thee, this paradise  
And thy fair Eve : heav'n is for thee too high  
To know what passes there ; be lowly wise :  
Think only what concerns thee and thy being ;  
Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
Live, in what state, condition, or degree,

## Paradise Lost

Contented that thus far hath been revealed  
Not of earth only, but of highest heav'n."

To whom thus Adam, cleared of doubt, replied:  
"How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure 180  
Intelligence of heav'n, angel serene,  
And freed from intricacies, taught to live  
The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts  
To interrupt the sweet of life, from which  
God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,  
And not molest us, unless we ourselves  
Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.  
But apt the mind or fancy is to rove  
Unchecked, and of her roving is no end ;  
Till warned, or by experience taught, she learn, 190  
That not to know at large of things remote  
From use, obscure and subtle, but to know  
That which before us lies in daily life,  
Is the prime wisdom ; what is more, is fume,  
Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,  
And renders us in things that most concern  
Unpractised, unprepared, and still to seek.  
Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
Useful, whence haply mention may arise 200  
Of something not unseasonable to ask  
By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deigned.  
Thee I have heard relating what was done  
Ere my remembrance : now hear me relate  
My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard.  
And day is not yet spent ; till then thou seest  
How subtly to detain thee I devise,  
Inviting thee to hear while I relate,  
Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply.  
For while I sit with thee, I seem in heav'n, 210  
And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
And hunger both, from labour, at the hour  
Of sweet repast : they satiate, and soon fill,  
Though pleasant ; but thy words, with grace divine  
Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety."

## Paradise Lost

To whom thus Raphael answered heav'nly meek :  
"Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of Men,  
Nor tongue ineloquent ; for GOD on thee  
Abundantly His gifts hath also poured, 220  
Inward and outward both, His image fair :  
Speaking or mute, all comeliness and grace  
Attends thee, and each word, each motion forms.  
Nor less think we in heav'n of thee on earth,  
Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire  
Gladly into the ways of GOD with man :  
For GOD we see hath honoured thee, and set  
On man His equal love. Say therefore on ;  
For I that day was absent, as befell,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230  
Far on excursion toward the gates of hell,  
Squared in full legion, such command we had,  
To see that none thence issued forth a spy,  
Or enemy, while GOD was in His work,  
Lest He, incensed at such eruption bold,  
Destruction with creation might have mixed.  
Not that they durst without His leave attempt,  
But us He sends upon His high behests  
For state, as Sov'reign King, and to enure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut 240  
The dismal gates, and barricadoed strong ;  
But long ere our approaching, heard within  
Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,  
'Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we returned up to the coasts of light  
Ere sabbath ev'ning : so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now ; for I attend,  
Pleased with thy words, no less than thou with mine."  
So spake the godlike Power, and thus our sire :  
"For man to tell how human life began 250  
Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse  
Induced me. As new waked from soundest sleep,  
Soft on the flow'ry herb I found me laid,  
In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun  
Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed.



## Paradise Lost

Straight toward heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,  
And gazed a while the ample sky, till raised  
By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,  
As thitherward endeavouring, and upright 260  
Stood on my feet. About me round I saw  
Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,  
And liquid lapse of murmuring streams ; by these,  
Creatures that lived, and moved, and walk'd, or flew ;  
Birds on the branches warbling ; all things smiled ;  
With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflowed.  
Myself I then perused, and limb by limb  
Surveyed, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led :  
But who I was, or where, or from what cause, 270  
Knew not. To speak I tried, and forthwith spake :  
My tongue obeyed, and readily could name  
Whate'er I saw. 'Thou sun,' said I, 'fair light,  
And thou enlightened earth, so fresh and gay,  
Ye hills and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains  
And ye that live and move, fair creatures, tell,  
Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here ?  
Not of myself, by some great Maker then,  
In goodness and in power pre-eminent :  
Tell me, how may I know Him, how adore, 280  
From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
And feel that I am happier than I know.'  
While thus I called, and strayed I knew not whither,  
From where I first drew air, and first beheld  
This happy light, when answer none returned,  
On a green shady bank profuse of flow'rs  
Pensive I sat me down ; there gentle sleep  
First found me, and with soft oppression seized  
My drowsèd sense, untroubled, though I thought  
I then was passing to my former state 290  
Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve :  
When suddenly stood at my head a dream,  
Whose inward apparition gently moved  
My fancy to believe I yet had being,  
And lived : one came, methought, of shape divine,  
And said, 'Thy mansion wants thee, Adam ; rise,

## Paradise Lost

First man, of men innumerable ordained  
First father ! called by thee, I come thy guide  
'To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepared.'  
So saying, by the hand He took me, raised, 300  
And over fields and waters, as in air  
Smooth sliding without step, last led me up  
A woody mountain ; whose high top was plain,  
A circuit wide, enclosed, with goodliest trees  
Planted, with walks, and bowers, that what I saw  
Of earth before scarce pleasant seemed. Each tree  
Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to the eye  
Tempting, stirred in me sudden appetite  
To pluck and eat : whereat I waked, and found  
Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310  
Had lively shadowed : here had new begun  
My wand'ring, had not He, who was my guide  
Up hither, from among the trees appeared,  
Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,  
In adoration at His feet I fell  
Submiss : He reared me, and, 'Whom thou sought'st I  
am,'  
Said mildly, ' Author of all this thou seest  
Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
This paradise I give thee, count it thine  
To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat : 320  
Of every tree that in the garden grows  
Eat freely with glad heart ; fear here no dearth :  
But of the Tree whose operation brings  
Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set  
The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith  
Amid the garden by the Tree of Life,  
Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,  
And shun the bitter consequence : for know,  
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
Transgressed, inevitably thou shalt die ; 330  
From that day mortal, and this happy state  
Shalt lose, expelled from hence into a world  
Of woe and sorrow.' Sternly He pronounced  
The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice

# Paradise Lost

Not to incur ; but soon His clear aspect  
Returned and gracious purpose thus renewed :  
'Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth  
To thee and to thy race I give ; as lords  
Possess it, and all things that therein live, 340  
Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl.  
In sign whereof each bird and beast behold  
After their kinds ; I bring them to receive  
From thee their names, and pay thee fealty  
With low subjection ; understand the same  
Of fish within their wat'ry residence,  
Not hither summoned since they cannot change  
Their element to draw the thinner air.'  
As thus He spake, each bird and beast behold  
Approaching two and two ; these cowering low 350  
With blandishment, each bird stooped on his wing.  
I named them, as they passed, and understood  
Their nature, with such knowledge God induced  
My sudden apprehension : but in these  
I found not what methought I wanted still ;  
And to the heav'nly Vision thus presumed :  
    "O by what name, for thou above all these,  
Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,  
Surpassest far my naming, how may I  
Adore thee, Author of this universe, 360  
And all this good to man, for whose well being  
So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
Thou hast provided all things ? but with me  
I see not who partakes. In solitude  
What happiness ? who can enjoy alone,  
Or all enjoying what contentment find ?'  
'Thus I presumptuous ; and the Vision bright,  
As with a smile more brightened, thus replied :  
    " 'What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the earth  
With various living creatures and the air 370  
Replenished, and all these at thy command  
To come and play before thee ? Know'st thou not  
Their language and their ways ? They also know,  
And reason not contemptibly ; with these  
Find pastime, and bear rule ; thy realm is large.'

## Paradise Lost

"So spake the Universal Lord, and seemed  
So ordering. I, with leave of speech implored,  
And humble deprecation, thus replied :

"'Let not my words offend thee, heav'nly Power,  
My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380

Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
And these inferior far beneath me set ?

Among unequals what society

Can sort, what harmony, or true delight ?

Which must be mutual, in proportion due,

Giv'n and received ; but in disparity,

The one intense, the other still remiss,

Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove

Tedious alike : of fellowship I speak

Such as I seek, fit to participate 390

All rational delight, wherein the brute

Cannot be human consort : they rejoice

Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combined ;

Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl,

So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;

Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.'

"Whereto th' Almighty answered, not displeased :

'A nice and subtile happiness I see

Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice 400

Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste

No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.

What think'st thou then of Me, and this My state?

Seem I to thee sufficiently possessed

Of happiness, or not ? who am alone

From all eternity ; for none I know

Second to Me or like, equal much less.

How have I then with whom to hold converse,

Save with the creatures which I made, and those

To Me inferior, infinite descents 410

Beneath what other creatures are to thee ?'

"He ceased, I lowly answered : 'To attain

The highth and depth of thy eternal ways

All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things,

Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee

## Paradise Lost

Is no deficiency found : not so is man,  
But in degree, the cause of his desire  
By conversation with his like to help,  
Or solace his defects. No need that thou  
Should'st propagate, already infinite, 420  
And through all numbers absolute, though One ;  
But man by number is to manifest  
His single imperfection, and beget  
Like of his like, his image multiplied,  
In unity defective, which requires  
Collateral love, and dearest amity.  
Thou in thy secrecy although alone,  
Best with thyself accompanied, seek'st not  
Social communication ; yet so pleased  
Canst raise thy creature to what highth thou wilt 430  
Of union or communion, deified ;

I, by conversing, cannot these erect  
From prone, nor in their ways complacence find.  
Thus I emboldened spake, and freedom used  
Permissive, and acceptance found ; which gained  
This answer from the gracious Voice Divine :  
“ Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleased,  
And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,  
Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself,  
Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440  
My image, not imparted to the brute ;  
Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee  
Good reason was thou freely should'st dislike,  
And be so minded still : I, ere thou spak'st,  
Knew it not good for man to be alone,  
And no such company as then thou saw'st  
Intended thee, for trial only brought,  
To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet.  
What next I bring shall please thee, be assured,  
Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450  
Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.’

“ He ended, or I heard no more : for now  
My earthly by His heav'nly overpowered,  
Which it had long stood under, strained to the highth  
In that celestial colloquy sublime,

## Paradise Lost

As with an object that excels the sense,  
 Dazzled, and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, called  
 By nature as in aid, and closed mine eyes.<sup>1</sup>  
 Mine eyes He closed, but open left the cell 46c  
 Of fancy, my internal sight, by which  
 Abstract as in a trance methought I saw,  
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the Shape  
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;  
 Who stooping opened my left side, and took  
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,  
 And life-blood streaming fresh ; wide was the wound,  
 But suddenly with flesh filled up and healed.  
 The rib He formed and fashioned with His hands ;  
 Under His forming hands a creature grew 47c  
 Manlike, but different sex, so lovely fair,  
 That what seemed fair in all the world, seemed now  
 Mean, or in her summed up, in her contained,  
 And in her looks, which from that time infused  
 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,  
 And into all things from her air inspired  
 The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
 She disappeared, and left me dark ; I waked  
 To find her, or for ever to deplore  
 Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure. 48c  
 When out of hope, behold her, not far off,  
 Such as I saw her in my dream, adorned  
 With what all earth or heaven could bestow  
 To make her amiable : on she came,  
 Led by her heav'nly Maker, though unseen,  
 And guided by His voice, nor uninformed  
 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites.  
 Grace was in all her steps, heav'n in her eye,  
 In every gesture dignity and love.  
 I overjoyed could not forbear aloud : 49c  
 " 'This turn hath made amends. Thou hast fulfilled  
 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign.  
 Giver of all things fair, but fairest this  
 Of all Thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see

<sup>1</sup> Gen. ii. 21.

## Paradise Lost

Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself  
Before me ; Woman is her name, of Man  
Extracted ; for this cause he shall forego  
Father and mother, and to his wife adhere ;  
And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.'

"She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,  
Yet innocence and virgin modesty, [ 500  
Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be wooed, and not unsought be won,  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retired,  
The more desirable, or, to say all,  
Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that seeing me she turned ;  
I followed her, she what was honour knew.

And with obsequious majesty approved  
My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bow'r 510  
I led her blushing like the morn : all heav'n,  
And happy constellations on that hour  
Shed their selectest influence ; the earth  
Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill ;  
Joyous the birds ; fresh gales and gentle airs  
Whispered it to the woods, and from their wings  
Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous bird of night  
Sung spousal, and bid haste the ev'ning star  
On his hill top to light the bridal lamp. 520

"Thus I have told thee all my state, and brought  
My story to the sum of earthly bliss,  
Which I enjoy, and must confess to find  
In all things else delight indeed, but such  
As, used or not, works in the mind no change,  
Nor vehement desire ; these delicacies  
I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and  
flow'rs,

Walks, and the melody of birds : but here  
Far otherwise, transported I behold,  
Transported touch ; here passion first I felt, 530  
Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else  
Superior and unmoved, here only weak  
Against the charm of beauty's powerful glance,

## Paradise Lost

Or nature failed in me, and left some part  
Not proof enough such object to sustain,  
Or from my side subducting took perhaps  
More than enough ; at least on her bestowed  
Too much of ornament, in outward show  
Elaborate, of inward less exact.  
For well I understand in the prime end 540  
Of nature her th' inferior, in the mind  
And inward faculties, which most excel ;  
In outward also her resembling less  
His image who made both, and less expressing  
'The character of that dominion giv'n  
O'er other creatures : yet when I approach  
Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
And in herself complete, so well to know  
Her own, that what she wills to do or say  
Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best : 550  
All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her  
Loses discountenanced, and like folly shows :  
Authority and reason on her wait,  
As one intended first, not after made  
Occasionally ; and, to consummate all,  
Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat  
Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
About her, as a guard angelic placed."  
To whom the angel with contracted brow : 560  
" Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part ;  
Do thou but thine, and be not diffident  
Of Wisdom ; she deserts thee not, if thou  
Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her  
nigh,  
By attributing overmuch to things  
Less excellent, as thou thyself perceivest.  
For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so ?  
An outside ? fair no doubt, and worthy well  
Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,  
Not thy subjection : weigh with her thyself ; 570  
Then value : oft times nothing profits more  
Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right,



## Paradise Lost

Well managed : of that skill the more thou know'st,  
The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
And to realities yield all her shows ;  
Made so adorn for thy delight the more,  
So awful, that with honour thou may'st love  
Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least  
wise.

But if the sense of touch whereby mankind  
Is propagated seem such dear delight 580  
Beyond all other, think the same vouchsafed  
To cattle and each beast ; which would not be  
To them made common and divulged, if aught  
Therein enjoyed were worthy to subdue  
The soul of man, or passion in him move.  
What higher in her society thou find'st  
Attractive, human, rational, love still :  
In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
Wherein true love consists not : love refines  
The thoughts, and heart enlarges : hath his seat 590  
In reason, and is judicious ; is the scale  
By which to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend,  
Not sunk in carnal pleasure ; for which cause  
Among the beasts no mate for thee was found."

To whom thus half abashed Adam replied :  
" Neither her outside formed so fair, nor aught  
In procreation, common to all kinds,  
(Though higher of the genial bed by far  
And with mysterious reverence I deem,)  
So much delights me, as those graceful acts, 600  
Those thousand decencies that daily flow  
From all her words and actions, mixed with love  
And sweet compliance, which declare unfeigned  
Union of mind, or in us both one soul ;  
Harmony to behold in wedded pair,  
More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.  
Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose  
What inward thence I feel, not therefore foiled,  
Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
Variously representing ; yet still free 610  
Approve the best, and follow what I approve.

## Paradise Lost

To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou say'st  
Leads up to heav'n, is both the way and guide ;  
Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask :  
Love not the heav'nly spirits, and how their love  
Express they ? by looks only, or do they mix  
Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch ?”

To whom the angel, with a smile that glowed  
Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,  
Answered : “ Let it suffice thee that thou know'st 620  
Us happy, and without love no happiness.  
Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st,  
(And pure thou wert created,) we enjoy  
In eminence, and obstacle find none  
Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars :  
Easier than air with air, if spirits embrace,  
Total they mix, union of pure with pure  
Desiring ; nor restrained conveyance need  
As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.  
But I can now no more ; the parting sun 630  
Beyond the earth's green Cape and Verdant  
Isles,<sup>1</sup>

Hesperian<sup>2</sup> sets, my signal to depart.  
Be strong, live happy, and love, but first of all  
Him whom to love is to obey,<sup>3</sup> and keep  
His great command ; take heed lest passion sway  
Thy judgment to do aught, which else free will  
Would not admit ; thine and of all thy sons  
The weal or woe in thee is placed ; beware.  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the blest : stand fast ; to stand or fall 640  
Free in thine own arbitrement it lies ;  
Perfect within, no outward aid require,  
And all temptation to transgress repel.”

So saying, he arose ; whom Adam thus  
Followed with benediction : “ Since to part,  
Go, heavenly guest, ethereal messenger,  
Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.

<sup>1</sup> Cape de Verde and the Cape de Verde Islands.

<sup>2</sup> In the West, where Hesperus, the evening star, appears.—From  
NEWTON.

<sup>3</sup> 1 John v. 3.

## Paradise Lost

Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honoured ever  
With grateful memory : thou to mankind  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return." 650  
So parted they, the angel up to heav'n  
From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK IX.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan having compassed the earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise, and enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart : Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone : Eve, loth to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength ; Adam at last yields : the serpent finds her alone ; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding not till now ; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both : Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden ; the serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat : she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam, or not ; at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof : Adam at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her, and extenuating the trespass eats also of the fruit. the effects thereof in them both : they seek to cover their nakedness : then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where God or angel guest  
With man, as with his friend, familiar used  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast, permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblamed ; I now must change  
These notes to tragic ; foul distrust, and breach  
Disloyal on the part of man, revolt,  
And disobedience : on the part of heav'n  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger, and just rebuke, and judgment giv'n, 10  
That brought into this world a world of woe,  
Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery,  
Death's harbinger : sad task, yet argument  
Not less but more heroic than the wrath  
Of stern Achilles on his foe<sup>1</sup> pursued  
Thrice fugitive about Troy wall ; or rage  
Of Turnus for Lavinia disespoused,<sup>2</sup>  
Or Neptune's ire or Juno's, that so long  
Perplexed the Greek<sup>3</sup> and Cytherea's son :<sup>4</sup>  
If answerable style I can obtain 20\*

<sup>1</sup> Hector. See *Iliad*.

<sup>3</sup> Ulysses.

<sup>2</sup> See *Aeneid*.

<sup>4</sup> Eneas.

# Paradise Lost

Of my celestial patroness, who deigns  
Her nightly visitation unimplored,  
And dictates to me slumb'ring, or inspires  
Easy my unpremeditated verse :  
Since first this subject for heroic song  
Pleased me, long choosing and beginning late ;<sup>1</sup>  
Not sedulous by nature to indite  
Wars, hitherto the only argument  
Heroic deemed, chief mast'ry to dissect  
With long and tedious havock fabled knights      30  
In battles feigned ; the better fortitude  
Of patience and heroic martyrdom  
Unsung ; or to describe races and games,  
Or tilting furniture, emblazoned shields,  
Impresses quaint,<sup>2</sup> caparisons and steeds ;  
Bases<sup>3</sup> and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
At joust and tournament ; then marshalled feast  
Served up in hall with sewers, and seneshals ;  
The skill of artifice or office mean,  
Not that which justly gives heroic name      40  
To person or to poem. Me of these  
Nor skilled nor studious, higher argument  
Remains, sufficient of itself to raise  
That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
Climate, or years, damp my intended wing  
Depressed, and much they may, if all be mine,  
Not hers who brings it nightly to mine ear.  
The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring  
Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter      50  
'Twixt day and night ; and now from end to end  
Night's hemisphere had veiled the horizon round :  
When Satan who late fled before the threats  
Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improved  
In meditated fraud and malice, bent  
On man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
Of heavier on himself, fearless returned.

<sup>1</sup> Milton is supposed to have begun his great poem in his forty-eighth year, and finished it in his fifty-seventh. It was published in 1667, when the Poet was in his sixtieth year.

<sup>2</sup> Devices on shields.

<sup>3</sup> The mantles worn by knights.

# Paradise Lost

By night he fled, and at midnight returned  
From compassing the earth, cautious of day,  
Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried 60  
His entrance, and forewarned the Cherubim  
That kept their watch ; thence full of anguish driv'n,  
The space of seven continued nights he rode  
With darkness ; thrice the equinoctial line  
He circled, four times crossed the car of night  
From pole to pole, traversing each colure ;<sup>1</sup>  
On the eighth returned, and on the coast averse  
From entrance or Cherubic watch by stealth  
Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,  
Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise [70  
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part  
Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.  
In with the river sunk, and with it rose  
Satan involved in rising mist, then sought  
Where to lie hid : sea he had searched, and land  
From Eden over Pontus, and the pool  
Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;<sup>2</sup>  
Downward as far Antarctic ; and in length 80  
West from Orontes to the ocean barred  
At Darien ; thence to the land where flows  
Ganges and Indus : thus the orb he roamed  
With narrow search ; and with inspection deep  
Considered every creature, which of all  
Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found  
The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.  
Him after long debate, irresolute  
Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence chose  
Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90  
From sharpest sight : for in the wily snake  
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,  
As from his wit and native subtlety  
Proceeding, which in other beasts observed

<sup>1</sup> The colures are two great imaginary circles encompassing the globe from north to south. Satan moved thus to keep in the shades of night.—From NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> Oby, a river of Siberia, near the pole.

## Paradise Lost

Doubt might beget of diabolic pow'r  
Active within beyond the sense of brute.  
Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief  
His bursting passion into plaints thus poured :  
    " O earth, how like to heav'n, if not preferred  
More justly ; seat worthier of gods, as built      100  
With second thoughts, reforming what was old !  
For what god after better worse would build ?  
Terrestrial heav'n, danced round by other heav'ns  
That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,  
In thee concentring all their precious beams  
Of sacred influence. As God in heav'n  
Is centre, yet extends to all, so thou  
Centring receiv'st from all those orbs : in thee,  
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears      110  
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth  
Of creatures animate with gradual life  
Of growth, sense, reason, all summed up in man.  
With what delight could I have walked thee round,  
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crowned,  
Rocks, dens, and caves ! but I in none of these  
Find place or refuge ; and the more I see  
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel      120  
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
Of contraries ; all good to me becomes  
Bane, and in heav'n much worse would be my state.  
But neither here seek I, no nor in heav'n  
To dwell, unless by mast'ring heav'n's Supreme ;  
Nor hope to be myself less miserable  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound :  
For only in destroying I find ease  
To my relentless thoughts ; and him destroyed,      130  
Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
Follow, as to him linked in weal or woe :  
In woe then ; that destruction wide may range.

## Paradise Lost

To me shall be the glory sole among  
The infernal powers, in one day to have marred  
What He, Almighty styled, six nights and days  
Continued making, and who knows how long  
Before had been contriving? though perhaps  
Not longer than since I in one night freed 140  
From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng  
Of His adorers. He, to be avenged,  
And to repair His numbers thus impaired,  
Whether such virtue spent of old now failed  
More angels to create, if they at least  
Are His created, or to spite us more,  
Determined to advance into our room  
A creature formed of earth, and him endow,  
Exalted from so base original, 150  
With heav'nly spoils, our spoils: what He decreed,  
He effected; man He made, and for him built  
Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,  
Him lord pronounced, and, O indignity!  
Subjected to his service angel wings,<sup>1</sup>  
And flaming ministers, to watch and tend  
Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance  
I dread, and to elude, thus wrapped in mist  
Of midnight vapour, glide obscure, and pry  
In every bush and brake, where hap may find 160  
The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds  
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
O foul descent! that I, who erst contended  
With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrained  
Into a beast, and mixed with bestial slime,  
This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
That to the highth of deity aspired!  
But what will not ambition and revenge  
Descend to? who aspires must down as low  
As high he soared, obnoxious first or last 170  
To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils:  
Let it; I reck not, so it light well aimed,

<sup>1</sup> Psalm civ. 4.



## Paradise Lost

Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
Provokes my envy, this new favourite  
Of heav'n, this man of clay, son of despite,  
Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker raised  
From dust : spite then with spite is best repaid."

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,  
Like a black mist low creeping, he held on 180  
His midnight search, where soonest he might find  
The serpent : him fast sleeping soon he found,  
In labyrinth of many a round self-rolled,  
His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles :  
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,  
Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb,  
Fearless, unfeared he slept. In at his mouth  
The devil entered, and his brutal sense,  
In heart or head, possessing soon inspired  
With act intelligential ; but his sleep 190  
Disturbed not, waiting close th' approach of morn.

Now, when as sacred light began to dawn  
In Eden on the humid flow'rs, that breathed  
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe  
From the earth's great altar send up silent praise  
To the Creator, and His nostrils fill  
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
And joined their vocal worship to the choir  
Of creatures wanting voice ; that done, partake  
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs : 200  
Then commune, how that day they best may ply  
Their growing work ; for much their work outgrew  
The hands' dispatch of two, gard'ning so wide.  
And Eve first to her husband thus began :

"Adam, well may we labour still to dress  
This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,  
Our pleasant task enjoined ; but till more hands  
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day  
Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210  
One night or two with wanton growth derides,  
Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,  
Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present :

## Paradise Lost

Let us divide our labours ; thou where choice  
Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
The woodbine round this arbour, or direct  
The clasping ivy where to climb ; while I  
In yonder spring<sup>1</sup> of roses intermixed  
With myrtle find what to redress till noon :  
For while so near each other thus all day 220  
Our task we choose, what wonder if so near  
Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
Casual discourse draw on ; which intermits  
Our day's work, brought to little, though begun  
Early, and the hour of supper comes unearned ? ”

To whom mild answer Adam thus returned :  
“ Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond  
Compare above all living creatures dear,  
Well hast thou motioned, well thy thoughts employed,  
How we might best fulfil the work which here 230  
God hath assigned us, nor of me shalt pass  
Unpraised ; for nothing lovelier can be found  
In woman, than to study household good,  
And good works in her husband to promote.  
Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed  
Labour, as to debar us when we need  
Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,  
Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse  
Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,  
To brute denied, and are of love the food— 240  
Love, not the lowest end of human life.  
For not to irksome toil, but to delight,  
He made us, and delight to reason joined.  
These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands  
Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide  
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
Assist us : but if much converse perhaps  
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield ;  
For solitude sometimes is best society,  
And short retirement urges sweet return. 250  
But other doubt possesses me, lest harm  
Befall thee severed from me ; for thou know'st

<sup>1</sup> A spring is a small coppice or thicket.

## Paradise Lost

What hath been warned us, what malicious foe,  
Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame  
By sly assault ; and somewhere nigh at hand  
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
His wish and best advantage, us asunder,  
Hopeless to circumvent us joined, where each  
To other speedy aid might lend at need ;<sup>1</sup> 260  
Whether his first design be to withdraw  
Our fealty from GOD, or to disturb  
Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss  
Enjoyed by us excites his envy more ;  
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.  
The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,  
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures."

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, 270  
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
With sweet austere composure thus replied :

"Offspring of heav'n and earth, and all earth's lord !  
That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
Our ruin, both by thee informed I learn,  
And from the parting angel overheard,  
As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
Just then returned at shut of evening flow'rs.  
But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt  
To GOD or thee, because we have a foe 280  
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
His violence thou fear'st not, being such,  
As we, not capable of death or pain,  
Can either not receive, or can repel.  
His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers  
Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love  
Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced :  
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy  
breast,

Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear?"  
To whom with healing words Adam replied : 290

<sup>1</sup> Eccles. iv. 9, 10.

# Paradise Lost

“Daughter of God and man, immortal Eve !  
For such thou art, from sin and blame entire :  
Not diffident of thee do I dissuade  
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
Th’ attempt itself, intended by our foe :  
For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
The tempted with dishonour foul, supposed  
Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn  
And anger wouldst resent the offered wrong, 300  
Though ineffectual found : misdeem not then,  
If such affront I labour to avert  
From thee alone, which on us both at once  
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,  
Or daring, first on me th’ assault shall light.  
Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;  
Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce  
Angels ; nor think superfluous others’ aid.  
I from the influence of thy looks receive  
Access in every virtue, in thy sight 310  
More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were  
Of outward strength ; while shame, thou looking on,  
Shame to be overcome or over-reached,  
Would utmost vigour raise, and raised unite.  
Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
When I am present, and thy trial choose  
With me, best witness of thy virtue tried ?”  
So spake domestic Adam in his care  
And matrimonial love ; but Eve, who thought  
Less attributed to her faith sincere, 320  
Thus her reply with accent sweet renewed :  
“ If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
In narrow circuit straitened by a foe,  
Subtle or violent, we not endued  
Single with like defence, wherever met,  
How are we happy, still in fear of harm ?  
But harm precedes not sin : only our foe  
Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem  
Of our integrity : his foul esteem  
Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns 330

## Paradise Lost

Foul on himself ; then wherefore shunned or feared  
By us ? who rather double honour gain  
From his surmise proved false, find peace within,  
Favour from Heav'n, our witness, from th' event.  
And what is faith, love, virtue, unassayed  
Alone, without exterior help sustained ?  
Let us not then suspect our happy state  
Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
As not secure to single or combined.  
Frail is our happiness, if this be so,  
And Eden were no Eden thus exposed." 340

To whom thus Adam fervently replied :  
" O woman, best are all things as the will  
Of God ordained them ; His creating hand  
Nothing imperfect or deficient left  
Of all that He created, much less man,  
Or aught that might his happy state secure,  
Secure from outward force ; within himself  
The danger lies, yet lies within his power :  
Against his will he can receive no harm. 350  
But God left free the will, for what obeys  
Reason is free ; and reason He made right ;  
But bid her well beware, and still erect,  
Lest by some fair-appearing good surprised  
She dictate false, and misinform the will  
To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoins,  
That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,  
Since reason not impossibly may meet 360  
Some specious object by the foe suborned,  
And fall into deception unaware,  
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warned.  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
Were better, and most likely, if from me  
Thou sever not : trial will come unsought.  
Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve  
First thy obedience ; the other, who can know ?  
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?  
But if thou think trial unsought may find 370

## Paradise Lost

Us both securer than thus warned thou seem'st,  
Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;  
Go in thy native innocence, rely  
On what thou hast of virtue, summon all,  
For God towards thee hath done His part, do thine."

So spake the patriarch of mankind, but Eve  
Persisted, yet submissive, though last, replied:

"With thy permission, then, and thus forewarned,  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touched only, that our trial, when least sought, 38c  
May find us both perhaps far less prepared,  
The willinger I go, nor much expect  
A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;  
So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse."

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand  
Soft she withdrew; and, like a wood-nymph light,  
Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's<sup>1</sup> train,  
Betook her to the groves, but Delia's self  
In gait surpassed and goddess-like deport, 39c  
Though not as she with bow and quiver armed,  
But with such gard'ning tools as art, yet rude,  
Guiltless of fire had formed, or angels brought.  
To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorned,  
Likest she seemed; Pomona when she fled  
Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,  
Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.  
Her long with ardent look his eye pursued  
Delighted, but desiring more her stay:  
Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
Repeated, she to him as oft engaged 40c  
To be returned by noon amid the bow'r,  
And all things in best order to invite  
Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.  
O much deceived, much failing, hapless Eve,  
Of thy presumed return! event perverse!  
Thou never from that hour in Paradise  
Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose;  
Such ambush hid among sweet flow'rs and shades  
Waited with hellish rancour imminent

<sup>1</sup> A surname of Diana, because born in Delos.

## Paradise Lost

To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410  
Despoiled of innocence, of faith, of bliss.  
For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,  
Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,  
And on his quest, where likeliest he might find  
The only two of mankind, but in them  
'The whole included race, his purposed prey.  
In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft  
Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,  
'Their tendance or plantation for delight ;  
By fountain or by shady rivulet 420  
He sought them both, but wished his hap might find  
Eve separate ; he wished, but not with hope  
Of what so seldom chanced, when to his wish,  
Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,  
Veiled in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,  
Half spied, so thick the roses bushing round  
About her glowed, oft stooping to support  
Each flow'r of tender stalk, whose head, though gay  
Carnation, purple, azure, or specked with gold,  
Hung drooping unsustained ; them she upstays 430  
Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while  
Herself, though fairest unsupported flow'r,  
From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.  
Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed  
Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm,  
Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen  
Among thick-woven arborets and flow'rs  
Imbordered on each bank, the hand of Eve :  
Spot more delicious than those gardens feigned  
Or of revived Adonis,<sup>1</sup> or renowned 440  
Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,<sup>2</sup>  
Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king  
Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.<sup>3</sup>  
Much he the place admired, the person more.  
As one who long in populous city pent,  
Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,

<sup>1</sup> At the request of Venus, he was restored to life.

<sup>2</sup> Ulysses. For description of the gardens of Alcinous, see the "Odyssey."

<sup>3</sup> Gardens of Solomon.

## Paradise Lost

Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe  
Among the pleasant villages and farms  
Adjoined, from each thing met conceives delight,  
The smell of grain, or tedded grass,<sup>1</sup> or kine, 450  
Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ;  
If chance with nymph-like step fair virgin pass,  
What pleasing seemed, for her now pleases more,  
She most, and in her look sums all delight:  
Such pleasure took the serpent to behold  
This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of Eve  
Thus early, thus alone : her heav'nly form  
Angelic, but more soft and feminine,  
Her graceful innocence, her every air  
Of gesture or least action, over-awed 460  
His malice, and with rapine sweet bereaved  
His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.  
That space the Evil One abstracted stood  
From his own evil, and for the time remained  
Stupidly good, of enmity disarmed,  
Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.  
But the hot hell that always in him burns,  
Though in mid heav'n, soon ended his delight,  
And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
Of pleasure not for him ordained : then soon 470  
Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites :

“Thoughts, whither have ye led me? with what sweet  
Compulsion thus transported to forget  
What hither brought us? hate, not love, nor hope  
Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste  
Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,  
Save what is in destroying : other joy  
To me is lost. Then let me not let pass  
Occasion which now smiles ; behold alone 480  
The woman opportune to all attempts,  
Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb  
Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould ;

<sup>1</sup> Hay spread out.



## Paradise Lost

Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,  
 I not : so much hath hell debased, and pain  
 Infeebled me, to what I was in heaven.  
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods,  
 Not terrible, though terror be in love, 490  
 And beauty, not approached by stronger hate,  
 Hate stronger under show of love well feigned ;  
 The way which to her ruin now I tend."

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclosed  
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve  
 Addressed his way ; not with indented wave,  
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,  
 Circular base of rising folds, that towered  
 Fold above fold a surging maze, his head  
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes ; 500  
 With burnished neck of verdant gold, erect  
 Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
 Floated redundant : pleasing was his shape,  
 And lovely, never since of serpent-kind  
 Lovelier, not those that in Illyria changed  
 Hermione and Cadmus,<sup>1</sup> or the God<sup>2</sup>  
 In Epidaurus ; nor to which transformed  
 Ammonian<sup>3</sup> Jove or Capitoline<sup>4</sup> was seen,  
 He with Olympias, this with her who bore  
 Scipio the highth of Rome. With tract oblique 510  
 At first, as one who sought access, but feared  
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.  
 As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought  
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind  
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail ;  
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train  
 Curled many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,  
 To lure her eye ; she, busied, heard the sound  
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as used

<sup>1</sup> Cadmus, who introduced letters into Greece, and Hermione his wife. They were changed by serpents into serpents.

<sup>2</sup> Esculapius, the god of medicine. He is said to have taken the form of a serpent when he appeared at Rome during a pestilence.

<sup>3</sup> Lybian.

<sup>4</sup> Roman. These lines relate to the fable of Jupiter being the father of Alexander the Great, and of Scipio also. All these images picture the magnificence of the serpent's form.

## Paradise Lost

'To such disport before her through the field, 520  
From every beast, more duteous at her call,  
Than at Circean call the herd disguised.  
He, bolder now, uncalled before her stood ;  
But as in gaze admiring : oft he bowed  
His turret crest, and sleek enamelled neck,  
Fawning, and licked the ground whereon she trod.  
His gentle dumb expression turned at length  
The eye of Eve to mark his play ; he glad  
Of her attention gained, with serpent tongue  
Organic, or impulse of vocal air, 530  
His fraudulent temptation thus began :

“ Wonder not, sov'reign mistress, if perhaps  
Thou canst, who art sole wonder, much less am  
Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,  
Displeased that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
Insatiate, I thus single, nor have feared  
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retired.  
Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,  
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore 540  
With ravishment beheld, there best beheld  
Where universally admired : but here,  
In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,  
Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
Who sees thee ? and what is one ? who shouldst be seen  
A Goddess among Gods, adored and served  
By angels numberless, thy daily train.”

So glozed the tempter, and his proem tuned.  
Into the heart of Eve his words made way, 550  
Though at the voice much marvelling : at length,  
Not unamazed, she thus in answer spake :

“ What may this mean ? Language of man pronounced  
By tongue of brute, and human sense expressed ?  
The first at least of these I thought denied  
To beasts, whom God on their creation-day  
Created mute to all articulate sound ;  
The latter I demur, for in their looks  
Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.

## Paradise Lost

Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560  
I knew, but not with human voice endued :  
Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
To me so friendly grown above the rest  
Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ?  
Say, for such wonder claims attention due."

To whom the guileful tempter thus replied :  
"Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve,  
Easy to me it is to tell thee all  
What thou command'st, and right thou shouldst be  
obeyed. 570

I was at first as other beasts that graze  
The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
As was my food, nor aught but food discerned  
Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :  
Till on a day roving the field, I chanced  
A goodly tree far distant to behold,  
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,  
Ruddy and gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;  
When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,  
Grateful to appetite, more pleased my sense 580  
Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats  
Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,  
Unsucked of lamb or kid, that tend their play.  
To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved  
Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once,  
Powerful persuaders, quickened at the scent  
Of that alluring fruit, urged me so keen.  
About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,  
For high from ground the branches would require 590  
Thy utmost reach or Adam's : round the tree  
All other beasts that saw with like desire,  
Longing and envying, stood, but could not reach.  
Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung  
Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
I spared not, for such pleasure, till that hour  
At feed or fountain never had I found.  
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive

# Paradise Lost

Strange alteration in me, to degree  
Of reason in my inward powers, and speech 600  
Wanted not long, though to this shape retained.  
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep  
I turned my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
Considered all things visible in heav'n,  
Or earth, or middle, all things fair and good ;  
But all that fair and good in thy divine  
Semblance and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray  
United I beheld ; no fair to thine  
Equivalent or second, which compelled  
Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610  
And gaze, and worship thee of right declared  
Sov'reign of creatures, universal dame."

So talked the spirited sly snake ; and Eve  
Yet more amazed unwary thus replied :  
"Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first proved :  
But say, where grows the tree? from hence how  
far?

For many are the trees of GOD that grow  
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
To us, in such abundance lies our choice, 620  
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouched,  
Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
Help to disburden nature of her birth."

To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad :  
"Empress, the way is ready, and not long ;  
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,  
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
Of blowing myrrh and balm : if thou accept  
My conduct, I can bring thee hither soon." 630

"Lead then," said Eve. He leading swiftly rolled  
In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,  
To mischief swift : hope elevates, and joy  
Brightens his crest : as when a wand'ring fire  
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night  
Condenses, and the cold environs round,  
Kindled through agitation to a flame,

## Paradise Lost

—Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends,—  
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,  
Misleads th' amazed night-wanderer from his way 640  
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,  
There swallowed up and lost, from succour far :  
So glistered the dire snake, and into fraud  
Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree  
Of prohibition, root of all our woe :

Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake :  
“Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,  
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,  
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee ;  
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650  
But of this tree we may not taste nor touch ;  
God so commanded, and left that command  
Sole daughter of His voice ; the rest, we live  
Law to ourselves, our reason is our law.”

To whom the tempter guilefully replied :  
“Indeed ! hath God then said that of the fruit  
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,  
Yet lords declared of all in earth or air ?”

To whom thus Eve, yet sinless : “Of the fruit  
Of each tree in the garden we may eat, 660  
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst  
The garden, God hath said, ye shall not eat  
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.”

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more  
bold  
The tempter, but with show of zeal and love  
To man, and indignation at his wrong,  
New part puts on, and, as to passion moved,  
Fluctuates disturbed, yet comely, and in act  
Raised, as of some great matter to begin.  
As when of old some orator renowned 670  
In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence  
Flourished, since mute, to some great cause addressed,  
Stood in himself collected, while each part,  
Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue ;  
Sometimes in highth began, as no delay  
Of preface brooking through his zeal of right :

## Paradise Lost

So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown,  
The tempter all impassioned thus began :

“O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,  
Mother of science, now I feel thy power 680  
Within me clear, not only to discern  
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
Of highest agents, deemed however wise.

Queen of this universe ! do not believe  
Those rigid threats of death ; ye shall not die :<sup>1</sup>  
How should ye ? by the fruit ? it gives you life  
To knowledge : by the Threatener ? look on me,  
Me who have touched and tasted, yet both live,  
And life more perfect have attained than fate  
Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot. 690

Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast  
Is open ? or will God incense His ire  
For such a petty trespass, and not praise  
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain  
Of death denounced, whatever thing death be,  
Deterred not from achieving what might lead  
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil ?  
Of good, how just ? of evil, if what is evil  
Be real, why not known, since easier shunned ?

God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just ; 700  
Not just, not God ; not feared then, nor obeyed :  
Your fear itself of death removes the fear.

Why then was this forbid ? Why but to awe,  
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
His worshippers ? He knows that in the day  
Ye eat thereof, your eyes—that seem so clear,  
Yet are but dim—shall perfectly be then  
Opened and cleared, and ye shall be as Gods,  
Knowing both good and evil as they know.

That ye should be as Gods, since I as man, 710  
Internal man, is but proportion meet,  
I of brute, human, ye of human, Gods.  
So shall ye die perhaps, by putting off  
Human, to put on Gods : death to be wished,  
Though threatened, which no worse than this can bring.

<sup>1</sup> Gen. iii. 4.

## Paradise Lost

And what are Gods that man may not become  
As they, participating godlike food?  
The Gods are first, and that advantage use  
On our belief, that all from them proceeds;  
I question it, for this fair earth I see, 720  
Warmed by the sun, producing every kind,  
Them nothing: if they all things, who enclosed  
Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,  
That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains  
Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies  
The offence, that man should thus attain to know?  
What can your knowledge hurt Him, or this tree  
Impart against His will if all be His?  
Or is it envy; and can envy dwell  
In heav'nly breasts? These, these and many more 730  
Causes import your need of this fair fruit.  
Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste."

He ended, and his words replete with guile  
Into her heart too easy entrance won:  
Fixed on the fruit she gazed, which to behold  
Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound  
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd  
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth:  
Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked  
An eager appetite, raised by the smell 740  
So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,  
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,  
Solicited her longing eye; yet first,  
Pausing a while, thus to herself she mused:

"Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,  
Though kept from man, and worthy to be admired,  
Whose taste, too long forborne, at first assay  
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise:  
Thy praise He also who forbids thy use 750  
Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree  
Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;  
Forbids us then to taste, but His forbidding  
Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
By thee communicated, and our want:

## Paradise Lost

For good unknown sure is not had, or had  
And yet unknown is as not had at all.  
In plain then, what forbids He but to know,  
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?  
Such prohibitions bind not. But if death 760  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
Our inward freedom? In the day we eat  
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.  
How dies the serpent? he hath eaten and lives,  
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,  
Irrational till then. For us alone  
Was death invented? or to us denied  
This intellectual food, for beasts reserved?  
For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first  
Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy 770  
The good befall'n him, author unsuspect,  
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.  
What fear I then? rather, what know to fear  
Under this ignorance of good and evil,  
Of God or death, of law or penalty?  
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,  
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
Of virtue to make wise: what hinders then  
'To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?"  
So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 780  
Forth reaching to the fruit, she plucked, she eat:  
Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat  
Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe,  
That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk  
The guilty serpent, and well might, for Eve  
Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else  
Regarded, such delight till then, as seemed,  
In fruit she never tasted, whether true  
Or fancied so, through expectation high  
Of knowledge; nor was Godhead from her thought. 790  
Greedily she ingorged without restraint,  
And knew not eating death: satiate at length,  
And hightened as with wine, jocund and boon,  
Thus to herself she pleasingly began:  
"O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees



## Paradise Lost

In Paradise, of operation blest  
To sapience, hitherto obscured, infamed,  
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
Created : but henceforth my early care,  
Not without song, each morning, and due praise 800  
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease  
Of thy full branches offered free to all ;  
'Till dieted by thee I grow mature  
In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know ;  
Though others envy what they cannot give ;  
For had the gift been theirs it had not here  
'Thus grown. Experience. next to thee I owe,  
Best guide ;<sup>1</sup> not following thee I had remained  
In ignorance ; thou open'st wisdom's way,  
And giv'st access, though secret she retire. 810  
And I perhaps am secret : heav'n is high,  
High and remote to see from thence distinct  
Each thing on earth ; and other care perhaps  
May have diverted from continual watch  
Our great Forbidder, safe with all his spies  
About him. But to Adam in what sort  
Shall I appear ? shall I to him make known  
As yet my change, and give him to partake  
Full happiness with me, or rather not,  
But keep the odds of knowledge in my power 820  
Without copartner ? so to add what wants  
In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
And render me more equal, and perhaps,  
A thing not undesirable, sometime  
Superior ; for, inferior, who is free ?  
This may be well : but what if God have seen,  
And death ensue ? then I shall be no more,  
And Adam wedded to another Eve  
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct :  
A death to think. Confirmed then I resolve, 830  
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe :  
So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
I could endure : without him live no life."  
So saying, from the tree her step she turned.

<sup>1</sup> The serpent.

## Paradise Lost

But first low reverence done, as to the power  
That dwelt within, whose presence had infused  
Into the plant sciential sap, derived  
From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn 840  
Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,  
As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.  
Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delayed ;  
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,  
Mishap'd him ; he the falt'ring measure felt ;  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That morn when first they parted. By the Tree  
Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,  
Scarce from the tree returning ; in her hand 850  
A bough of fairest fruit that downy smiled,  
New gathered, and ambrosial smell diffused.  
To him she hasted ; in her face excuse  
Came prologue, and apology too prompt,  
Which with bland words at will she thus addressed :  
“ Hast thou not wondered, Adam, at my stay ?  
Thee I have missed, and thought it long, deprived  
Thy presence, agony of love till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more  
Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought, 860  
The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange  
Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear :  
This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown  
Op'ning the way, but of divine effect  
To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste :  
And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,  
Or not restrained as we, or not obeying,  
Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become  
Not dead, as we are threatened, but thenceforth 870  
Endued with human voice and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration, and with me  
Persuasively hath so prevailed, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found

## Paradise Lost

Th' effects to correspond ; opener mine eyes,  
Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,  
And growing up to Godhead ; which for thee  
Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,  
Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon. 880  
Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot  
May join us, equal joy, as equal love ;  
Lest, thou not tasting, different degree  
Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce  
Deity for thee, when fate will not permit."

Thus Eve, with countenance blithe, her story told,  
But in her cheek distemper flushing glowed.  
On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard  
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,  
Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill 890  
Ran through his veins, and all his joints relaxed ;  
From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve  
Down dropped, and all the faded roses shed :  
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
First to himself he inward silence broke :

"O fairest of creation, last and best  
Of all God's works, creature in whom excelled  
Whatever can to sight or thought be formed,  
Holy, divine, good, amiable or sweet !  
How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost, 900  
Defaced, deflowered, and now to death devote !  
Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress  
The strict forbiddance, how to violate  
The sacred fruit forbidden ! some cursed fraud  
Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown.  
And me with thee hath ruined, for with thee  
Certain my resolution is to die :  
How can I live without thee ? how forego  
Thy sweet converse and love so dearly joined,  
To live again in these wild woods forlorn ? 910  
Should God create another Eve, and I  
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
Would never from my heart ; no, no ! I feel  
The link of nature draw me ; flesh of flesh,

## Paradise Lost

Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state  
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe."

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbed  
Submitting to what seemed remediless,  
Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turned : 920

"Bold deed thou hast presumed, adventurous Eve,  
And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared,  
Had it been only coveting to eye  
That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
Much more to taste it under ban to touch.  
But past who can recall, or done undo?  
Not GOD omnipotent, nor Fate ! Yet so  
Perhaps thou shalt not die ; perhaps the fact  
Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,  
Profaned first by the serpent, by him first 930  
Made common and unhallowed ere our taste ;  
Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,  
Lives, as thou said'st, and gains to live as man  
Higher degree of life, inducement strong  
To us, as likely tasting to attain  
Proportional ascent, which cannot be  
But to be Gods, or angels, demigods.  
Nor can I think that GOD, Creator wise,  
Though threat'ning, will in earnest so destroy  
Us His prime creatures, dignified so high, 940  
Set over all His works, which in our fall,  
For us created, needs with us must fail,  
Dependent made ; so GOD shall uncreate,  
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose—  
Not well conceived of GOD ; who, though His power  
Creation could repeat, yet would be loth  
Us to abolish, lest the adversary  
Triumph and say : 'Fickle their state whom GOD  
Most favours, who can please Him long ? Me first  
He ruined, now mankind ; whom will he next ?' 950  
Matter of scorn, not to be given the foe.  
However, I with thee have fixed my lot,  
Certain to undergo like doom ; if death  
Consort with thee, death is to me as life ;

## Paradise Lost

So forcible within my heart I feel  
The bond of nature draw me to my own,  
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine ;  
Our state cannot be severed, we are one,  
One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself."

So Adam ; and thus Eve to him replied : 960  
" O glorious trial of exceeding love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high,  
Engaging me to emulate, but, short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,  
Adam ? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,  
And gladly of our union hear thee speak,  
One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof  
This day affords, declaring thee resolved,  
Rather than death or aught than death more dread  
Shall separate us linked in love so dear, 970  
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit ;  
Whose virtue, for of good still good proceeds,  
Direct, or by occasion, hath presented  
This happy trial of thy love, which else  
So eminently never had been known.  
Were it I thought death menaced would ensue  
This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
The worst, and not persuade thee—rather die  
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 980  
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assured  
Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
So faithful love unequalled ; but I feel  
Far otherwise the event, not death but life  
Augmented, opened eyes, new hopes, new joys,  
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before  
Hath touched my sense, flat seems to this and harsh.  
On my experience, Adam, freely taste,  
And fear of death deliver to the winds."

So saying, she embraced him, and for joy 990  
Tenderly wept, much won that he his love  
Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur  
Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
In recompense, for such compliance bad

## Paradise Lost

Such recompense best merits, from the bough  
She gave him of that fair, enticing fruit  
With liberal hand ; he scrupled not to eat  
Against his better knowledge, not deceived,<sup>1</sup>  
But fondly overcome with female charm.  
Earth trembled from her entrails, as again 1000  
In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,  
Sky loured, and, mutt'ring thunder, some sad drops  
Wept at completing of the mortal sin  
Original ; while Adam took no thought,  
Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate  
Her former trespass feared, the more to soothe  
Him with her loved society, that now,  
As with new wine intoxicated both,  
They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
Divinity within them breeding wings 1010  
Wherewith to scorn the earth ; but that false fruit  
Far other operation first displayed,  
Carnal desire inflaming ; he on Eve  
Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him  
As wantonly repaid ; in lust they burn ;  
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move :  
“ Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
And elegant, of sapience no small part,  
Since to each meaning savour we apply,  
And palate call judicious ; I the praise 1020  
Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purveyed.  
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstained  
From this delightful fruit, nor known till now  
True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be  
In things to us forbidden, it might be wished,  
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.  
But come, so well refreshed, now let us play  
As meet is, after such delicious fare ;  
For never did thy beauty, since the day  
I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorned 1030  
With all perfections, so inflame my sense  
With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now  
Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.”

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. ii. 14.

# Paradise Lost

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
Of amorous intent, well understood  
Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
Her hand he seized, and to a shady bank,  
Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowered,  
He led her nothing loth ; flowers were the couch,  
Pansies, and violets, and asphodel, 1040  
And hyacinth, earth's freshest, softest lap.  
There they their fil of love and love's disport  
Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,  
The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep  
Oppressed them, wearied with their amorous play.  
Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,  
That with exhilarating vapour bland  
About their spirits had played, and inmost powers  
Made err, was now exhaled, and grosser sleep  
Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams 1050  
Encumbered, now had left them, up they rose  
As from unrest, and, each the other viewing,  
Soon found their eyes how opened, and their minds  
How darkened : innocence, that as a veil  
Had shadowed them from knowing ill, was gone ;  
Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
And honour from about them : naked left  
To guilty shame, he covered, but his robe  
Uncovered more. So rose the Danite strong  
Hercúlean Samson from the harlot-lap 1060  
Of Philistean Dalilah, and waked  
Shorn of his strength ; they destitute and bare  
Of all their virtue : silent, and in face  
Confounded, long they sate, as stricken mute,  
Till Adam, though not less than Eve abashed,  
At length gave utterance to these words constrained :  
"O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear  
To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
To counterfeit man's voice, true in our fall,  
False in our promised rising ; since our eyes 1070  
Opened we find indeed, and find we know  
Both good and evil, good lost, and evil got :  
Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,

## Paradise Lost

Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,  
Of innocence, of faith, of purity,  
Our wonted ornaments now soiled and stained,  
And in our faces evident the signs  
Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store,  
Ev'n shame, the last of evils ; of the first  
Be sure then. How shall I behold the face 1080  
Henceforth of GOD or angel, erst with joy  
And rapture so oft beheld ? those heav'nly shapes  
Will dazzle now this earthly, with their blaze  
Insufferably bright. O might I here  
In solitude live savage, in some glade  
Obscured, where highest woods, impenetrable  
To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad,  
And brown as evening. Cover me, ye pines !  
Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs  
Hide me, where I may never see them more ! 1090  
But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
What best may for the present serve to hide  
The parts of each from other, that seem most  
To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen ;  
Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sewed,  
And girded on our loins, may cover round  
Those middle parts, that this new comer, shame,  
There sit not, and reproach us as unclean."  
So counselled he, and both together went  
Into the thickest wood ; there soon they chose 1100  
The fig-tree, not that kind for fruit renowned,  
But such as at this day to Indians known  
In Malabar or Deccan spreads her arms,  
Branching so broad and long, that in the ground  
The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow  
About the mother tree, a pillared shade<sup>1</sup>  
High overarched, and echoing walks between ;  
There oft the Indian herdsman shunning heat  
Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds [1110  
At loopholes cut thro' thickest shade. Those leaves

<sup>1</sup> The Indian fig, called *Ficus Indica* by botanists, or **Banyan**. The largest known nearly covers an island on the Nerbudda. It is 2000 feet round, and has 1300 trunks.



## Paradise Lost

They gathered, broad as Amazonian targe,  
And with what skill they had together sewed,  
To gird their waist. Vain covering, if to hide  
Their guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike  
To that first naked glory! Such of late  
Columbus found th' American so girt  
With feathered cincture, naked else and wild  
Among the trees on isles and woody shores.  
Thus fenced, and as they thought, their shame in part  
Covered, but not at rest or ease of mind, 1120  
They sat them down to weep; nor only tears  
Rained at their eyes, but high winds worse within  
Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore  
Their inward state of mind, calm region once  
And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:  
For understanding ruled not, and the will  
Heard not her lore, both in subjection now  
To sensual appetite, who from beneath  
Usurping over sov'reign reason claimed 1130  
Superior sway: from thus distempered breast  
Adam, estranged in look and altered style,  
Speech intermitted thus to Eve renewed:

“Would thou hadst hearkened to my words, and  
stayed  
With me, as I besought thee, when that strange  
Desire of wandering this unhappy morn  
I know not whence possessed thee; we had then  
Remained still happy, not, as now, despoiled  
Of all our good, shamed, naked, miserable.  
Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve  
The faith they owe; when earnestly they seek [1140  
Such proof, conclude they then begin to fail.”

To whom, soon moved with touch of blame, thus Eve:  
What words have passed thy lips, Adam severe?  
Imput'st thou that to my default, or will  
Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows.  
But might as ill have happened thou being by,  
Or to thyself perhaps? hadst thou been there,  
Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discerned

## Paradise Lost

Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake ; 1150  
No ground of enmity between us known,  
Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
Was I to have never parted from thy side ?  
As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.  
Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,  
Command me absolutely not to go,  
Going into such danger, as thou said'st ?  
Too facile, then thou didst not much gainsay,  
Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
Hadst thou been firm and fixed in thy dissent, 1160  
Neither had I transgressed, nor thou with me."

To whom then first incensed Adam replied :  
"Is this the love, is this the recompense  
Of mine to thee, ungrateful Eve, expressed  
Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,  
Who might have lived and joyed immortal bliss,  
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee ?  
And am I now upbraided, as the cause  
Of thy transgressing ? not enough severe,  
It seems, in thy restraint : what could I more ? 1170  
I warned thee, I admonished thee, foretold  
The danger, and the lurking enemy  
That lay in wait : beyond this had been force,  
And force upon free will hath here no place.  
But confidence then bore thee on, secure  
Either to meet no danger, or to find  
Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps  
I also erred in overmuch admiring  
What seemed in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee ; but I rue 1180  
The error now, which is become my crime,  
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall  
Him who to worth in woman overtrusting  
Lets her will rule ; restraint she will not brook,  
And left to herself, if evil thence ensue,  
She first his weak indulgence will accuse."

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,  
And of their vain contest appeared no end.

# Paradise Lost

## BOOK X.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the guardian angels forsake Paradise, and return up to heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends His Son to judge the transgressors; who descends, and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man: to make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway, or bridge, over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to hell: their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandæmonium, in full assembly relate, with boasting his success against man; instead of applause, is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed, with himself also, suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretells the final victory of His Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands His angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEANWHILE the heinous and despicable act  
Of Satan done in Paradise, and how  
He in the serpent had perverted Eve,  
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
Was known in heav'n; for what can scape the eye  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive His heart  
Omniscient, who, in all things wise and just,  
Hindered not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of man, with strength entire, and free will armed,  
Complete to have discovered and repulsed 10  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend?  
For still they knew, and ought to have still remembered,  
The high injunction not to taste that fruit,  
Whoever tempted; which they not obeying  
Incur'd, what could they less? the penalty,  
And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.

Up into heaven from Paradise in haste  
Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad

# Paradise Lost

For man ; for of his state by this they knew,  
Much wondering how the subtle fiend had stol'n 20  
Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news  
From earth arrived at heaven gate, displeased  
All were who heard ; dim sadness did not spare  
That time celestial visages, yet mixed  
With pity, violated not their bliss.  
About the new-arrived in multitudes  
Th' ethereal people ran, to hear and know  
How all befell : they towards the throne supreme  
Accountable made haste to make appear  
With righteous plea their utmost vigilance, 30  
And easily approved ; when the most high  
Eternal Father from His secret cloud  
Amidst, in thunder, uttered thus His voice :  
" Assembled angels, and ye powers returned  
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismayed,  
Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this tempter crossed the gulf from hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail and speed 40  
On his bad errand, man should be seduced  
And flattered out of all, believing lies  
Against his Maker ; no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free will, to her own inclining left  
In even scale. But fall'n he is, and now  
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
On his transgression—death denounced that day—  
Which he presumes already vain and void, 50  
Because not yet inflicted, as he feared,  
By some immediate stroke ; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.  
Justice shall not return as bounty scorned.  
But whom send I to judge them ? whom but thee,  
Vicegerent Son ; to thee I have transferred <sup>1</sup>  
All judgment, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell.

<sup>1</sup> John v. 22.

# Paradise Lost

Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice,<sup>1</sup> sending thee  
Man's friend, his Mediator, his designed  
Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntary,  
And destined Man himself to judge man fall'n." 60

So spake the Father, and, unfolding bright  
Toward the right hand His glory, on the Son  
Blazed forth unclouded Deity; He full  
Resplendent all His Father manifest  
Expressed, and thus divinely answered mild:

"Father Eternal, thine is to decree,  
Mine both in heav'n and earth to do thy will  
Supreme, that thou in me thy Son beloved 70  
May'st ever rest well pleased. I go to judge  
On earth these thy transgressors, but thou know'st  
Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,  
When time shall be; for so I undertook  
Before thee, and not repenting this obtain  
Of right, that I may mitigate their doom  
On me derived; yet I shall temper so  
Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most  
Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none 80  
Are to behold the judgment, but the judged,  
Those two; the third best absent is condemned,  
Convict by flight, and rebel to all law;  
Conviction to the serpent none belongs."

'Thus saying, from His radiant seat He rose  
Of high collateral glory: Him Thrones and Powers,  
Princedoms and Dominations ministrant  
Accompanied to heaven gate, from whence  
Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.  
Down He descended straight; the speed of gods 90  
Time counts not, tho' with swiftest minutes winged.  
Now was the sun in western cadence low<sup>2</sup>  
From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour  
'To fan the earth now waked, and usher in  
The ev'ning cool, when He from wrath more cool  
Came, the mild Judge and Intercessor both,

<sup>1</sup> Psalm lxxxv. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. iii. 8.

## Paradise Lost

To sentence man : the voice of God they heard  
Now walking in the garden, by soft winds  
Brought to their ears, while day declined, they heard,  
And from His presence hid themselves among 100  
The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God  
Approaching thus to Adam called aloud :

“Where art thou, Adam,<sup>1</sup> went with joy to meet  
My coming seen far off? I miss thee here ;  
Not pleased, thus entertained with solitude,  
Where obvious duty erewhile appeared unsought :  
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.”

He came, and with him Eve, more loth, though  
first

To offend, discountenanced both, and discomposed. 110  
Love was not in their looks, either to God  
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.  
Whence Adam, falt’ring long, thus answered brief :

“I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice  
Afraid, being naked, hid myself.” To whom  
The gracious Judge without revile replied :

“My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not feared,  
But still rejoiced ; how is it now become 120  
So dreadful to thee ? that thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee ? hast thou eaten of the tree  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat ?”

To whom thus Adam sore beset replied :  
“O heav’n ! in evil strait this day I stand  
Before my Judge, either to undergo  
Myself the total crime, or to accuse  
My other self, the partner of my life ;  
Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
By my complaint ; but strict necessity  
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,  
Lest on my head both sin and punishment,  
However insupportable, be all

<sup>1</sup> Gen. iii. 9 and following verses.

## Paradise Lost

Devolved : though should I hold my peace, yet thou  
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.

This woman, whom thou madest to be my help  
And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140  
And what she did, whatever in itself,  
Her doing seemed to justify the deed ;  
She gave me of the tree, and I did eat."

To whom the sov'reign Presence thus replied :  
"Was she thy GOD, that her thou didst obey  
Before His voice? or was she made thy guide,  
Superior, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
Wherein GOD set thee above her, made of thee  
And for thee, whose perfection far excelled 150  
Hers in all real dignity? adorned  
She was indeed, and lovely to attract  
Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts  
Were such as under government well seemed,  
Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part  
And person, hadst thou known thyself aright."

So having said, He thus to Eve in few :  
"Say, woman, what is this which thou hast done?"

To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelmed,  
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160  
Bold or loquacious, thus abashed replied :  
"The serpent me beguiled, and I did eat."

Which when the Lord GOD heard, without delay  
To judgment He proceeded on th' accused  
Serpent though brute, unable to transfer  
The guilt on him who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his creation ; justly then accursed,  
As vitiated in nature : more to know  
Concerned not man, since he no further knew, 170  
Nor altered his offence : yet GOD at last  
To Satan, first in sin, his doom applied,  
Though in mysterious terms, judged as then best :  
And on the serpent thus His curse let fall :

## Paradise Lost

"Because thou hast done this, thou art accursed  
Above all cattle, each beast of the field ;  
Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,  
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.  
Between thee and the woman I will put  
Enmity, and between thine and her seed ; 180  
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel."

So spake this oracle, then verified  
When Jesus, son of Mary, second Eve,  
Saw Satan fall like lightning down from heav'n,<sup>1</sup>  
Prince of the air ;<sup>2</sup> then rising from His grave  
Spoiled principalities and powers, triumphed  
In open show, and with ascension bright  
Captivity led captive through the air,  
The realm itself of Satan long usurped,  
Whom He shall tread at last under our feet ; 190  
Ev'n He who now foretold his fatal bruise ;  
And to the woman thus His sentence turned :

"Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
By thy conception ; children thou shalt bring  
In sorrow forth, and to thy husband's will  
Thine shall submit ; he over thee shall rule."

On Adam last thus judgment He pronounced :  
"Because thou hast hearkened to the voice of thy wife,  
And eaten of the tree concerning which  
I charged thee, saying : Thou shalt not eat thereof, 200  
Cursed is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow  
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life ;  
Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid, and thou shalt eat the herb of the field ;  
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground, for thou  
Out of the ground wast taken ; know thy birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return."

So judged he man, both Judge and Saviour sent ;  
And th' instant stroke of death denounced that day 210  
Removed far off ; then pitying how they stood  
Before Him naked to the air, that now  
Must suffer change, disdained not to begin

<sup>1</sup> I uke x. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Ephes. ii. 2, iv. 8 ; Colos. ii. 15.



## Paradise Lost

Thenceforth the form of servant<sup>1</sup> to assume,  
As when He washed His servants' feet,<sup>2</sup> so now  
As father of His family He clad  
Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,  
Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid ;  
And thought not much to clothe His enemies.  
Nor He their outward only with the skins 220  
Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more  
Opprobrious, with His robe of righteousness,  
Arraying, covered from His Father's sight.  
To Him with swift ascent He up returned,  
Into His blissful bosom reassumed  
In glory as of old ; to Him appeased  
All, though all-knowing, what had passed with man  
Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinned and judged on  
earth,  
Within the gates of hell sat Sin and Death, 230  
In counterview within the gates, that now  
Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
Far into Chaos, since the fiend passed through,  
Sin opening, who thus now to Death began :

“ O son, why sit we here, each other viewing  
Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives  
In other worlds, and happier seat provides  
For us his offspring dear ? It cannot be  
But that success attends him ; if mishap,  
Ere this he had returned, with fury driven 240  
By his avengers, since no place like this  
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.  
Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large  
Beyond this deep ; whatever draws me on,  
Or sympathy, or some connatural force,  
Powerful at greatest distance to unite  
With secret amity things of like kind  
By secretest conveyance. Thou my shade  
Inseparable must with me along ; 250  
For Death from Sin no power can separate.

<sup>1</sup> Philip. ii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> John xiii. 5.

## Paradise Lost

But lest the difficulty of passing back  
Stay his return perhaps over this gulf  
Impassable, impervious, let us try  
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine  
Not unagreeable, to found a path  
Over this main from hell to that new world  
Where Satan now prevails; a monument  
Of merit high to all th' infernal host,  
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260  
Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.  
Nor can I miss the way so strongly drawn  
By this new felt attraction and instinct."

Whom thus the meagre Shadow answered soon :  
"Go whither fate and inclination strong  
Leads thee ; I shall not lag behind, nor err,  
The way thou leading, such a scent I draw  
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
The savour of death from all things there that live :  
Nor shall I to the work thou enterprised 270  
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid."

So saying, with delight he snuffed the smell  
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
Against the day of battle, to a field,  
Where armies lie encamped, come flying, lured  
With scent of living carcasses designed  
For death, the following day, in bloody fight :  
So scented the grim feature, and upturned  
His nostril wide into the murky air, 280  
Sagacious of his quarry from so far.  
Then both from out hell gates into the waste  
Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark  
Flew diverse, and with power, their power was great,  
Hovering upon the waters ; what they met  
Solid or slimy, as in raging sea  
Tost up and down, together crowded drove  
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of hell.  
As when the two polar winds, blowing adverse  
Upon the Cronian sea,<sup>1</sup> together drive 290

<sup>1</sup> Northern frozen sea, --NEWTON.

## Paradise Lost

Mountains of ice, that stop th' imagined way<sup>1</sup>  
Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich  
Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil  
Death with his mace petrific, cold and dry,  
As with a trident smote, and fixed as firm  
As Delos floating once ; the rest his look  
Bound with Gorgonian rigour<sup>2</sup> not to move,  
And with asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,  
Deep to the roots of hell the gathered beach  
They fastened, and the mole immense wrought on 300  
Over the foaming deep high arched, a bridge  
Of length prodigious joining to the wall  
Immovable of this now fenceless world  
Forfeit to death ; from hence a passage broad,  
Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to hell.  
So, if great things to small may be compared,  
Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,  
From Susa his Memnonian palace high  
Came to the Sea, and over Hellespont  
Bridging his way, Europe with Asia joined, 310  
And scourged with many a stroke th' indignant waves.  
Now had they brought the work by wondrous art  
Pontifical,<sup>3</sup> a ridge of pendent rock  
Over the vexed abyss, following the track  
Of Satan, to the self-same place where he  
First lighted from his wing, and landed safe  
From out of Chaos, to the outside bare  
Of this round world : with pins of adamant  
And chains they made all fast—too fast they made  
And durable—and now in little space 320  
The confines met of empyréan heav'n  
And of this world, and on the left hand hell  
With long reach interposed ; three sev'ral ways  
In sight to each of these three places led.  
And now their way to earth they had descried,  
To Paradise first tending, when behold

<sup>1</sup> The north-east passage to China, *i.e.* Cathay.

<sup>2</sup> Alluding to Medusa's power of turning people into stone.

<sup>3</sup> Pontifical, *i.e.* the art of making bridges. The high priest of Rome derived his title, *Pontifex*, from *pons*, a bridge, and *facere*, to make ; perhaps because religious rites of great importance inaugurated these highly-valued works, which he always superintended.

# Paradise Lost

Satan in likeness of an angel bright  
Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering  
His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose :<sup>1</sup>  
Disguised he came, but those his children dear 330  
Their parent soon discerned, though in disguise.  
He, after Eve seduced, unminded slunk  
Into the wood fast by, and, changing shape  
To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act  
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded  
Upon her husband, saw their shame that sought  
Vain covertures : but when he saw descend  
The Son of God to judge them, terrified  
He fled ; not hoping to escape, but shun  
The present, fearing, guilty, what His wrath 340  
Might suddenly inflict : that past, returned  
By night, and listening where the hapless pair  
Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,  
Thence gathered his own doom, which understood  
Not instant, but of future time, with joy  
And tidings fraught, to hell he now returned,  
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot  
Of this new wondrous pontifice,<sup>2</sup> unhop'd  
Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.  
Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350  
Of that stupendous bridge his joy increased.  
Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair  
Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke :  
“ O parent, these are thy magnific deeds,  
Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own :  
Thou art their author and prime architect :  
For I no sooner in my heart divined,  
—My heart which by a secret harmony  
Still moves with thine, joined in connexion sweet,—  
That thou on earth hadst prospered, which thy looks  
Now also evidence, but straight I felt, [360  
Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt  
That I must after thee with this thy son,

<sup>1</sup> To avoid being seen by Uriel. Centaur and Scorpion are constellations in a different part of the heavens to Aries on the equator.—NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> Bridge.

## Paradise Lost

Such fatal consequence unites us three.  
Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,  
Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure  
Detain from following thy illustrious track.  
Thou hast achieved our liberty, confined  
Within hell gates till now ; thou us empowered  
To fortify thus far, and ovelay 370  
With this portentous bridge the dark abyss.  
Thine now is all this world, thy virtue hath won  
What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gained  
With odds what war hath lost, and fully avenged  
Our foil in heav'n ; here thou shalt monarch reign,  
There didst not ; there let Him still victor sway,  
As battle hath adjudged, from this new world  
Retiring, by His own doom alienated,  
And henceforth monarchy with thee divide  
Of all things, parted by th' empyreal bounds, 380  
His quadrature, from thy orbicular world,  
Or try thee now more dang'rous to His throne."

Whom thus the prince of darkness answered glad :  
" Fair daughter, and thou son and grandchild both,  
High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race  
Of Satan, (for I glory in the name,  
Antagonist of heav'n's Almighty King,)  
AmPLY have merited of me, of all  
Th' infernal empire, that so near heav'n's door  
Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390  
Mine with this glorious work, and made one realm  
Hell and this world, one realm, one continent  
Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I  
Descend through darkness on your road with ease  
To my associate powers, them to acquaint  
With these successes, and with them rejoice,  
You two this way, among these numerous orbs  
All yours, right down to Paradise descend ;  
There dwell and reign in bliss, thence on the earth  
Dominion exercise and in the air, 400  
Chiefly on man, sole lord of all declared ;  
Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
My substitutes I send ye, and create

# Paradise Lost

Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might  
Issuing from me : on your joint vigour now  
My hold of this new kingdom all depends,  
Through Sin to Death exposed by my exploit.  
If your joint power prevail, th' affairs of hell  
No detriment need fear ; go and be strong."

So saying he dismissed them ; they with speed 410  
Their course through thickest constellations held,  
Spreading their bane ; the blasted stars looked wan,  
And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
Then suffered. The other way Satan went down  
The causeway to hell gate : on either side  
Disparted Chaos over built exclaimed,  
And with rebounding surge the bars assailed,  
That scorned his indignation. Through the gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, Satan passed,  
And all about found desolate ; for those 420  
Appointed to sit there had left their charge,  
Flown to the upper world ; the rest were all  
Far to the inland retired, about the walls  
Of Pandæmonium, city and proud seat  
Of Lucifer, so by allusion called,  
Of that bright star to Satan paragoned.  
There kept their watch the legions, while the grand  
In council sat, solicitous what chance  
Might intercept their emperor sent, so he  
Departing gave command, and they observed. 430  
As when the Tartar from his Russian foe  
By Astracan over the snowy plains  
Retires, or Bactrian Sophy<sup>1</sup> from the horns  
Of Turkish crescent leaves all waste beyond  
The realm of Aladule<sup>2</sup> in his retreat  
To Tauris or Casbeen : so these, the late

<sup>1</sup> The Persian monarch, thus named from Bactria, one of the greatest provinces of Persia.

<sup>2</sup> "Aladule," the greater Armenia, called by the Turks<sup>1</sup> (under whom the greater part of it is) Aladule, of its last king, Aladules, slain by Selymus I. ; "in his retreat to Tauris," a great city in the kingdom of Persia, now called Ecbatana, some time in the hands of the Turks, but in 1603 retaken by Abas, King of Persia ; "or Casbeen," one of the greatest cities of Persia, where the Persian monarchs made their residence after the loss of Tauris, from which it is distant sixty-five German miles to the south-east.—HUME.

## Paradise Lost

Heav'n-banished host, left desert utmost hell  
Many a dark league, reduced in careful watch  
Round their metropolis, and now expecting  
Each hour their great adventurer from the search 440  
Of foreign world : he through the midst unmarked,  
In show plebeian angel militant  
Of lowest order, passed ; and from the door  
Of that Plutonian hall invisible  
Ascended his high throne, which, under state  
Of richest texture spread, at the upper end  
Was placed in regal lustre. Down awhile  
He sat, and round about him saw unseen :  
At last as from a cloud his fulgent head  
And shape star-bright appeared, or brighter, clad 450  
With what permissive glory since his fall  
Was left him, or false glitter. All amazed  
At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng  
Bent their aspect, and whom they wished beheld,  
Their mighty chief returned ; loud was th' acclaim.  
Forth rushed in haste the great consulting peers,  
Raised from their dark divan, and with like joy,  
Congratulant approached him, who with hand  
Silence, and with these words, attention won :  
"Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
For in possession such, not only of right, [460  
I call ye and declare ye now, returned  
Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
Abominable, accursed, the house of woe,  
And dungeon of our tyrant : now possess,  
As lords, a spacious world, to our native heaven  
Little inferior, by my adventure hard  
With peril great achieved. Long were to tell  
What I have done, what suffered, with what pain 470  
Voyaged the unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
Of horrible confusion, over which  
By Sin and Death a broad way now is paved  
To expedite your glorious march : but I  
Toiled out my uncouth passage, forced to ride  
The untractable abyss, plunged in the womb

## Paradise Lost

Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild,  
That jealous of their secrets fiercely opposed  
My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
Protesting fate supreme ; thence how I found 480  
The new created world, which fame in heav'n  
Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful,  
Of absolute perfection, therein man  
Placed in a paradise, by our exile  
Made happy : him by fraud I have seduced  
From his Creator, and, the more to increase  
Your wonder, with an apple. He thereat  
Offended, worth your laughter ! hath giv'n up  
Both His belovèd man and all His world  
To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490  
Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,  
To range in, and to dwell, and over man  
To rule, as over all he should have ruled.  
True is, me also He hath judged, or rather  
Me not, but the brute serpent, in whose shape  
Man I deceived : that which to me belongs  
Is enmity, which He will put between  
Me and mankind : I am to bruise his heel ;  
His seed, *when* is not set,<sup>1</sup> shall bruise my head.  
A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
Or much more grievous pain ? Ye have th' account  
Of my performance : what remains, ye gods,  
But up and enter now into full bliss ? ”

So having said, awhile he stood, expecting  
Their universal shout and high applause  
To fill his ear, when contrary he hears  
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,  
A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
Of public scorn ; he wondered, but not long  
Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more : 510  
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,  
His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining  
Each other, till supplanted down he fell  
A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,  
Reluctant, but in vain, a greater power

<sup>1</sup> The time (when) is not declared.



# Paradise Lost

Now ruled him, punished in the shape he sinned,  
 According to his doom. He would have spoke,  
 But hiss for hiss returned with forkèd tongue  
 To forkèd tongue, for now were all transformed  
 Alike, to serpents all as accessories 520  
 To his bold riot: dreadful was the din  
 Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now  
 With complicated monsters head and tail,  
 Scorpion, and asp, and amphisbæna<sup>1</sup> dire,  
 Cerastes<sup>2</sup> horned, hydus,<sup>3</sup> and ellops<sup>4</sup> drcar,  
 And dipsas;<sup>5</sup> not so thick swarmed once the soil  
 Bedropped with blood of Gorgon<sup>6</sup> or the isle  
 Ophiusa;<sup>7</sup> but still greatest he the midst,  
 Now dragon grown, larger than whom the sun  
 Ingendered in the Pythian vale on slime, 530  
 Huge Python,<sup>8</sup> and his power no less he seemed  
 Above the rest still to retain. They all  
 Him followed issuing forth to th' open field,  
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout  
 Heav'n-fall'n in station stood or just array,  
 Sublime with expectation when to see  
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief.  
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd  
 Of ugly serpents; horror on them fell,  
 And horrid sympathy; for what they saw, 540  
 They felt themselves now changing; down their arms,  
 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,  
 And the dire hiss renewed, and the dire form  
 Caught by contagion, like in punishment,  
 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant  
 Turned to exploding hiss, triumph to shame,  
 Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood  
 A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate

<sup>1</sup> A serpent said to have a head at both ends of its body

<sup>2</sup> A horned snake

<sup>3</sup> A water snake.

<sup>4</sup> A water serpent.

<sup>5</sup> A snake the bite of which produces feverish thirst.

<sup>6</sup> Libya, where the blood which dropped from Medusa's head produced serpents.

<sup>7</sup> An island in the Mediterranean, which was deserted on account of its serpents from which it derived its name.

<sup>8</sup> A huge serpent, sprung from the slime left after the Deucalion deluge. It was slain by Apollo.

## Paradise Lost

Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550  
Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve  
Used by the tempter : on that prospect strange  
Their earnest eyes they fixed, imagining  
For one forbidden tree a multitude  
Now ris'n, to work them further woe or shame :  
Yet parched with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,  
But on they rolled in heaps, and up the trees  
Climbing sat thicker than the snaky locks  
That curled Megæra : <sup>1</sup> greedily they plucked 560  
The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew  
Near that bituminous lake <sup>2</sup> where Sodom flamed ;  
This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
Deceived ; they, fondly thinking to allay  
Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit  
Chewed bitter ashes, which th' offended taste  
With spattering noise rejected : oft they assayed,  
Hunger and thirst constraining, drugged as oft,  
With hatefullest disrelish writhed their jaws  
With soot and cinders filled ; so oft they fell 570  
Into the same illusion, not as man  
Whom they triumphed once lapsed. Thus were they  
plagued  
And worn with famine long and ceaseless hiss,  
Till their lost shape, permitted, they resumed ;  
Yearly enjoined, some say, to undergo  
This annual humbling certain numbered days,  
To dash their pride and joy for man seduced.  
However, some tradition they dispersed  
Among the heathen of their purchase got,  
And fabled how the serpent, whom they called 580  
Ophion, with Eurynome, the wide  
Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn driv'n  
And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.  
Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair

<sup>1</sup> One of the Furies.

<sup>2</sup> Lake Asphaltites, or Dead Sea. Milton alludes to Josephus's account of the apples of Sodom, said to have a lovely exterior, but within to be full of ashes. It is not true.

## Paradise Lost

Too soon arrived, Sin there in power before  
Once actual, now in body, and to dwell  
Habitual habitant ; behind her Death  
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
On his pale horse ; to whom Sin thus began : 590

“Second of Satan sprung, all-conquering Death,  
What think'st thou of our empire now, though earned  
With travail difficult, not better far  
Than still at hell's dark threshold to have sate watch,  
Unnamed, undreaded, and thyself half starved ?”

Whom thus the sin-born monster answered soon :

“To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
Alike is hell, or paradise, or heaven,  
There best, where most with ravin I may meet ;  
Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems<sup>1</sup> 600  
To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corps.”

To whom th' incestuous mother thus replied :

“Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers  
Feed first ; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl ;  
No homely morsels ; and whatever thing  
The scythe of Time mows down, devour unspared,  
Till I in man residing through the race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect ;  
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.”

This said, they both betook them several ways, 610  
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
Sooner or later ; which the Almighty seeing,  
From His transcendent seat the saints among,  
To those bright orders uttered thus His voice :

“See with what heat these dogs of hell advance  
To waste and havoc yonder world, which I  
So fair and good created, and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of man  
Let in these wasteful furies, who impute 620  
Folly to me,—so doth the prince of hell  
And his adherents,—that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heavenly, and conniving seem

<sup>1</sup> Prov. xxvii. 20.

## Paradise Lost

To gratify my scornful enemies,  
That laugh, as if, transported with some fit  
Of passion, I to them had quitted all,  
At random yielded up to their misrule ;  
And know not that I called and drew them thither,  
My hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth, 630  
Which man's polluting sin with taint hath shed  
On what was pure ! till crammed and gorged, nigh burst  
With sucked and glutted offal, at one sling  
Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,  
Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave, at last  
Through Chaos hurled, obstruct the mouth of hell  
For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.<sup>1</sup>  
Then heav'n and earth renewed shall be made pure  
To sanctity that shall receive no stain :  
Till then the curse pronounced on both precedes." 640

He ended, and the heav'nly audience loud  
Sung Hallelujah, as the sound of seas,  
Through multitude that sung : " Just are thy ways,<sup>2</sup>  
Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works ;  
Who can extenuate thee ? Next, to the Son,  
Destined restorer of mankind, by whom  
New heav'n and earth shall to the ages rise,  
Or down from heav'n descend." Such was their song,  
While the Creator calling forth by name  
His mighty angels gave them several charge, 650  
As sorted best with present things. The sun  
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
As might affect the earth with cold and heat  
Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call  
Decrepit winter ; from the south to bring  
Solstitial summer's heat. To the blank moon<sup>3</sup>  
Her office they prescribed, to th' other five  
Their planetary motions and aspects  
In Sextile, Square, and Trine, and Opposite,<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Dante's *Inferno*, cant. xviii.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xv. 3, xvi. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Some editions printed blanc moon, *i.e.* white.

<sup>4</sup> Terms made use of by the astrologers, and signifying the positions or aspects of the five (then known) planets. Sextile means a planet situated at a distance of two signs (the sixth of twelve) from another planet. Square, separated by four signs. Trine, separated by three

# Paradise Lost

Of noxious efficacy, and when to join 660  
 In synod unbenign, and taught the fixed  
 Their influence malignant when to show'r,  
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,  
 Should prove tempestuous. To the winds they set  
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound  
 Sea, air, and shore ; the thunder when to roll  
 With terror through the dark æreal hall.  
 Some say, He bid His angels turn askance  
 The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more  
 From the sun's axle ; they with labour pushed 670  
 Oblique the centric globe : some say, the sun  
 Was bid turn reins from th' equinoctial road  
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the sev'n  
 Atlantic sisters,<sup>1</sup> and the Spartan twins,  
 Up to the Tropic Crab ; thence down amain  
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,  
 As deep as Capricorn, to bring in change  
 Of seasons to each clime ; else had the spring  
 Perpetual smiled on earth with vernal flow'rs,  
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680  
 Beyond the polar circles ; to them day  
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun  
 To recompense his distance in their sight  
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known  
 Or east or west, which had forbid the snow  
 From cold Estotiland,<sup>2</sup> and south as far  
 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit

signs. *Opposite* was considered a position of noxious efficacy. The period in which Milton lived explains the fact of his countenancing these superstitions, as they were universally believed. After the great Fire of London, the House of Commons called the astrologer Lilly before them, to examine him as to his foreknowledge of that calamity, and gravely received his explanation of how he obtained his foresight from the art he practised. He had foretold the fire in a hieroglyphic resembling those formerly published in Old Moore's Almanack, which might be interpreted in any manner the reader pleased. "Did you foresee the year?" asked one of the committee. "I did not," replied Lilly, "nor was desirous of that ; I made no scrutiny." The astrologer then told them, very wisely, that the fire was not of man, but of God. It was believed to have been caused by incendiaries.

<sup>1</sup> The Pleiades, daughters of Atlas. This constellation is in the neck of Taurus.

<sup>2</sup> A tract of land north of America, near the Arctic Ocean and Hudson's Bay.

# Paradise Lost

The sun, as from Thyéstean banquet,<sup>1</sup> turned  
 His course intended ; else how had the world  
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now 690  
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ?  
 These changes in the heav'ns, though slow, produced  
 Like change on sea and land, sidereal blast,  
 Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,  
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north  
 Of Norumbega<sup>2</sup> and the Samoed shore,  
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, armed with ice,  
 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust, and flaw,  
 Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,  
 And Thrascias<sup>3</sup> rend the woods, and seas upturn. 700  
 With adverse blast upturns them from the south  
 Notus, and Afer black with thund'rous clouds  
 From Serrationa,<sup>4</sup> thwart of these as fierce  
 Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,  
 Eurus and Zephyr<sup>5</sup> with their lateral noise  
 Sirocco and Libeccio. Thus began  
 Outrage from lifeless things ; but Discord first,  
 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational  
 Death introduced through fierce antipathy :  
 Beast now with beast gan war, and fowl with fowl, 710  
 And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving  
 Devoured each other ; nor stood much in awe  
 Of man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim  
 Glared on him passing. These were from without  
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw  
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow abandoned, but worse felt within,  
 And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,  
 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint :

<sup>1</sup> Atræus, to avenge an injury, invited his brother Thyestes to a banquet, and served up for his food the flesh of his murdered children. This horrid revenge was visited on the family of Atræus for generations.

<sup>2</sup> A province of the northern Armenia. Samoieda, in the north-east of Muscovy, upon the Frozen Sea.

<sup>3</sup> Names of the winds. Boreas, the north : Cæcias, north-west ; Argestes, north-east. Thrascias, from Thrace. Notus, the south wind. Afer, from Africa.—FROM RICHARDSON.

<sup>4</sup> The Lion Mountains, south-west of Africa, famous for storms.

<sup>5</sup> Levant and Ponent are Italian names for the east and west winds, called by the Greeks Eurus and Zephyr. \* Sirocco and Libeccio are the south-east and south-west winds.

## Paradise Lost

“O miserable of happy ! is this the end  
Of this new glorious world, and me so late  
The glory of that glory, who now become  
Accursed of blessèd, hide me from the face  
Of GOD, whom to behold was then my highth  
Of happiness : yet well, if here would end  
The misery. I deserved it, and would bear  
My own deservings ; but this will not serve ;  
All that I eat, or drink, or shall beget,  
Is propagated curse. O voice once heard  
Delightfully, ‘ Encrease and multiply,’  
Now death to hear ! for what can I encrease  
Or multiply, but curses on my head ?  
Who of all ages to succeed, but feeling  
The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
My head ? Ill fare our ancestor impure,  
For this we may thank Adam ; but his thanks  
Shall be the execration ; so besides  
Mine own that bide upon me, all from me  
Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound ;  
On me, as on their natural centre light,  
Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys  
Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !  
Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay,  
To mould me man ? Did I solicit thee  
From darkness to promote me, or here place  
In this delicious garden ? As my will  
Concurred not to my being, it were but right  
And equal to reduce me to my dust,  
Desirous to resign, and render back  
All I received, unable to perform  
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes ? Inexplicable  
Thy justice seems ; yet, to say truth, too late  
I thus contest : then should have been refused  
These terms, whatever, when they were proposed.  
Thou didst accept them ; wilt thou enjoy the  
good,

# Paradise Lost

Then cavil the conditions?<sup>1</sup> and though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760  
Prove disobedient, and reprov'd retort,  
Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not :  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
But natural necessity begot.  
God made thee of choice His own, and of His own  
To serve Him, thy reward was of His grace,  
Thy punishment then justly is at His will.  
Be it so, for I submit, His doom is fair,  
That dust I am, and shall to dust return : 770  
O welcome hour whenever ! why delays  
His hand to execute what His decree  
Fixed on this day? why do I overlive?  
Why am I mocked with death, and lengthen'd out  
To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet  
Mortality my sentence, and be earth  
Insensible ! how glad would lay me down  
As in my mother's lap ! there I should rest  
And sleep secure ; His dreadful voice no more  
Would thunder in my ears ; no fear of worse 780  
To me and to my offspring would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die ;  
Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of man<sup>2</sup>  
Which God inspired, cannot together perish  
With this corporeal clod ; then in the grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death? O thought  
Horrid, if true ! yet why? it was but breath  
Of life that sinned ; what dies but what had life 790  
And sin? the body properly hath neither.  
All of me then shall die ; let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
Is His wrath also? be it, man is not so,  
But mortal doomed. How can He exercise  
Wrath without end on man whom death must end?

<sup>1</sup> Job ii. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. ii. 7.



## Paradise Lost

Can He make deathless death? that were to make  
Strange contradiction, which to God Himself  
Impossible is held, as argument 800  
Of weakness, not of power. Will He draw out,  
For anger's sake, finite to infinite  
In punished man, to satisfy His rigour  
Satisfied never? that were to extend  
His sentence beyond dust and nature's law,  
By which all causes else, according still  
To the reception of their matter, act,  
Not to th' extent of their own sphere. But say,  
That death be not one stroke, as I supposed,  
Bereaving sense, but endless misery 810  
From this day onward, which I feel begun  
Both in me, and without me, and so last  
To perpetuity. Ay me! that fear  
Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution  
On my defenceless head; both death and I  
Are found eternal, and incorporate both;  
Nor I on my part single, in me all  
Posterity stands cursed. Fair patrimony  
That I must leave ye, sons! O were I able  
To waste it all myself, and leave ye none! 820  
So disinherited, how would ye bless  
Me, now your curse! Ah! why should all mankind  
For one man's fault thus guiltless be condemned  
If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,  
But all corrupt, both mind and will depraved,  
Not to do only, but to will the same  
With me? how can they then acquitted stand  
In sight of God? Him, after all disputes,  
Forced I absolve: all my evasions vain,  
And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still  
But to my own conviction: first and last [830  
On me, me only, as the source and spring  
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;  
So might the wrath! Fond wish! couldst thou support  
That burden heavier than the earth to bear,  
Than all the world much heavier, though divided  
With that bad woman? Thus what thou desir'st,

## Paradise Lost

And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
Beyond all past example and future, 840  
To Satan only like both crime and doom.  
O Conscience, into what abyss of fears  
And horrors hast thou driv'n me, out of which  
I find no way from deep to deeper plunged !”

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud  
Through the still night ; not now, as ere man fell,  
Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air  
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,  
Which to his evil conscience represented  
All things with double terror. On the ground 850  
Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft  
Cursed his creation, death as oft accused  
Of tardy execution, since denounced  
The day of his offence. “Why comes not death,”  
Said he, “with one thrice acceptable stroke  
To end me? Shall truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice divine not hasten to be just?  
But death comes not at call ; justice divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.  
O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bow'rs, 860  
With other echo late I taught your shades  
To answer, and resound far other song.”  
Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,  
Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,  
Soft words to his fierce passion she assayed :  
But her with stern regard he thus repelled :

“Out of my sight, thou serpent ! that name best  
Befits thee with him leagued, thyself as false  
And hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour serpentine may show 870  
Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee  
Henceforth ; lest that too heav'nly form, pretended  
To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee  
I had persisted happy, had not thy pride  
And wand'ring vanity, when least was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdained  
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen

## Paradise Lost

Though by the devil himself, him overweening  
To over-reach ; but with the serpent meeting,  
Fooled and beguiled ; by him thou, I by thee. 880  
To trust thee from my side, imagined wise,  
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults  
And understood not all was but a show  
Rather than solid virtue, all but a rib  
Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,  
More to the part sinister, from me drawn,  
Well if thrown out, as supernumerary  
To my just number found. Oh ! why did God,  
Creator wise, that peopled highest heav'n  
With spirits masculine, create at last 890  
This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
Of nature, and not fill the world at once  
With men as angels without feminine,  
Or find some other way to generate  
Mankind ? This mischief had not then befall'n,  
And more that shall befall ; innumerable  
Disturbances on earth through female snares,  
And straight conjunction with this sex : for either  
He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake, 900  
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
Through her perverseness ; but shall see her gained  
By a far worse ; or if she love, withheld  
By parents ; or his happiest choice too late  
Shall meet, already linked and wedlock-bound  
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame ;  
Which infinite calamity shall cause  
To human life, and household peace confound."

He added not, and from her turned ; but Eve,  
Not so repulsed, with tears that ceased not flowing, 910  
And tresses all disordered, at his feet  
Fell humble, and, embracing them, besought  
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint :

" Forsake me not thus, Adam ! witness Heav'n  
What love sincere and reverence in my heart  
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,  
Unhappily deceived. Thy suppliant

## Paradise Lost

I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not  
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
Thy counsel in this uttermost distress, 920  
My only strength and stay : forlorn of thee,  
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?  
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
Between us two let there be peace, both joining,  
As joined in injuries, one enmity  
Against a foe by doom express assigned us,  
That cruel serpent. On me exercise not  
Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,  
On me already lost, me than thyself  
More miserable ; both have sinned, but thou 930  
Against God only, I against God and thee,  
And to the place of judgment will return,  
There with my cries importune Heaven, that all  
The sentence, from thy head removed, may light  
On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,  
Me, me only, just object of His ire."

She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,  
Immoveable till peace obtained from fault  
Acknowledged and deplored, in Adam wrought  
Commiseration ; soon his heart relented 940  
Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,  
Now at his feet submissive in distress ;  
Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,  
His counsel, whom she had displeased, his aid ;  
As one disarmed, his anger all he lost,  
And thus with peaceful words upraised her soon :

"Unwary and too desirous as before,  
So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st  
The punishment all on thyself ; alas !  
Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain 950  
His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part  
And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers  
Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard  
That on my head all might be visited,  
Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiv'n,  
To me committed, and by me exposed.

## Paradise Lost

But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame  
Each other, blamed enough elsewhere, but strive  
In offices of love how we may lighten 960  
Each other's burden in our share of woe ;  
Since this day's death denounced, if aught I see,  
Will prove no sudden, but a slow-paced evil,  
A long day's dying to augment our pain,  
And to our seed, O hapless seed ! derived."

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied .  
" Adam, by sad experiment I know  
How little weight my words with thee can find,  
Found so erroneous, thence by just event 970  
Found so unfortunate ; nevertheless,  
Restored by thee, vile as I am, to place  
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain  
Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart  
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide  
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are ris'n,  
Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,  
As in our evils, and of easier choice.  
If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devoured 980  
By Death at last, (and miserable it is  
To be to others cause of misery,)  
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring  
Into this cursed world a woful race,  
That after wretched life must be at last  
Food for so foul a monster, in thy power  
It lies, yet ere conception to prevent  
The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.  
Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death  
Shall be deceived his glut, and with us two 990  
Be forced to satisfy his rav'nous maw.  
But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,  
And with desire to languish without hope,  
Before the present object languishing  
With like desire, which would be misery,

## Paradise Lost

And torment less than none of what we dread,  
Then both ourselves and seed at once to free  
From what we fear for both, let us make short ; 1000  
Let us seek Death, or, he not found, supply  
With our own hands his office on ourselves ;  
Why stand we longer shivering under fears,  
That show no end but death, and have the power  
Of many ways to die, the shortest choosing,  
Destruction with destruction to destroy ? ”

She ended here, or vehement despair  
Broke off the rest ; so much of death her thoughts  
Had entertained, as dyed her cheeks with pale.  
But Adam, with such counsel nothing swayed, 1010  
To better hopes his more attentive mind  
Labouring had raised, and thus to Eve replied :

“ Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee something more sublime  
And excellent than what thy mind contemns ;  
But self-destruction therefore sought refutes  
That excellence thought in thee, and implies,  
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
For loss of life and pleasure overloved.  
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020  
Of misery, so thinking to evade  
The penalty pronounced, doubt not but God  
Hath wiselier armed His vengeful ire than so  
To be forestalled : much more I fear lest death  
So snatched will not exempt us from the pain  
We are by doom to pay : rather such acts  
Of contumacy will provoke the Highest  
To make death in us live ; then let us seek  
Some safer resolution, which methinks  
I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030  
Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise  
The serpent’s head : piteous amends, unless  
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe  
Satan, who in the serpent hath contrived  
Against us this deceit. To crush his head  
Would be revenge indeed ; which will be lost  
By death brought on ourselves, or childless days

## Paradise Lost

Resolved, as thou proposest ; so our foe  
Shall scape his punishment ordained, and we  
Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040  
No more be mentioned then of violence  
Against ourselves, and wilful barrenness,  
That cuts us off from hope, and savours only  
Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,  
Reluctance against God and His just yoke  
Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
And gracious temper He both heard and judged  
Without wrath or reviling ; we expected  
Immediate dissolution, which we thought  
Was meant by death that day, when, lo ! to thee 1050  
Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,  
And bringing forth ; soon recompensed with joy,  
Fruit of thy womb : on me the curse aslope  
Glanced on the ground, with labour I must earn  
My bread ; what harm ? idleness had been worse ;  
My labour will sustain me ; and lest cold  
Or heat should injure us, His timely care  
Hath unbesought provided, and His hands  
Clothed us unworthy, pitying while He judged.  
How much more, if we pray Him, will His ear 1060  
Be open, and His heart to pity incline,  
And teach us further by what means to shun  
Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow,  
Which now the sky with various face begins  
To show us in this mountain, while the winds  
Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
Of these fair spreading trees ; which bids us seek  
Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish  
Our limbs benumbed, ere this diurnal star  
Leave cold the night, how we his gathered beams 1070  
Reflected may with matter sere foment,  
Or by collision of two bodies grind  
The air attrite <sup>1</sup> to fire, as late the clouds  
Justling or pushed with winds rude in their shock  
Tine <sup>2</sup> the slant lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n  
down

<sup>1</sup> Worn by rubbing or friction.

<sup>2</sup> To kindle.

## Paradise Lost

Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,  
And sends a comfortable heat from far,  
Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,  
And what may else be remedy or cure  
To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought ; 1080  
He will instruct us praying, and of grace  
Beseeching Him, so as we need not fear  
To pass commodiously this life, sustained  
By Him with many comforts, till we end  
In dust, our final rest and native home.  
What better can we do, than, to the place  
Repairing where He judged us, prostrate fall  
Before Him reverent, and there confess  
Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeigned and humiliation meek ?  
Undoubtedly He will relent and turn  
From His displeasure, in whose look serene,  
When angry most He seemed and most severe,  
What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone ?”

So spake our father penitent, nor Eve  
Felt less remorse ; they forthwith to the place  
Repairing where He judged them prostrate fell  
Before Him reverent, and both confessed 1100  
Humbly their faults, and pardon begged, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air  
Frequenting,<sup>1</sup> sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeigned and humiliation meek.

<sup>1</sup> Beating the air.



# Paradise Lost

## BOOK XI.

### THE ARGUMENT

The Son of God presents to His Father the prayers of our first parents, now repenting, and intercedes for them; God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things; Michael's coming down. Adam shows to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach; goes out to meet him; the angel denounces their approaching departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits; the angel leads him up to a high hill; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

Thus they in lowliest plight repentant stood, 1  
Praying, for from the mercy-seat above  
Prevenient grace descending had removed  
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh,  
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breathed  
Unutterable,<sup>1</sup> which the spirit of prayer  
Inspired, and winged for heav'n with speedier flight  
Than loudest oratory: yet their port  
Not of mean suitors, nor important less  
Seemed their petition, than when the ancient pair 10  
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,  
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha to restore  
The race of mankind drowned, before the shrine  
Of Themis stood devout.<sup>2</sup> To heav'n their prayers  
Flew up, nor missed the way, by envious winds  
Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they passed  
Dimensionless through heav'nly doors; then clad  
With incense,<sup>3</sup> where the golden altar fumed,  
By their great Intercessor, came in sight  
Before the Father's throne; them the glad Son 20  
Presenting, thus to intercede began:  
"See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung  
From thy implanted grace in man, these sighs  
And prayers, which in this golden censer mixed

<sup>1</sup> Romans viii. 26.

<sup>2</sup> Themis, the goddess of justice. The fable of Deucalion and Pyrrha (evidently founded on a heathen tradition of Noah's flood) is told by Ovid, *Met.* l. fab. 8

<sup>3</sup> Psalm cxli. 2.

## Paradise Lost

With incense, I thy Priest before thee bring,  
Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed  
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
Which his own hand manuring all the trees  
Of Paradise could have produced, ere fall'n  
From innocence. Now therefore bend Thine ear 30  
To supplication, hear his sighs though mute;  
Unskilful with what words to pray; let me  
Interpret for him, me his advocate<sup>1</sup>  
And propitiation: all his works on me  
Good or not good ingraft, my merit those  
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.  
Accept me, and in me from these receive  
The smell of peace toward mankind; let him live  
Before thee reconciled, at least his days  
Numbered, though sad, till death his doom, (which I  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse,) [40  
To better life shall yield him, where with me  
All my redeemed may dwell in joy and bliss;  
Made one with me as I with thee am one.”<sup>2</sup>

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene:  
“All thy request for man, accepted Son,  
Obtain; all thy request was my decree:  
But longer in that Paradise to dwell  
The law I gave to nature him forbids:  
Those pure immortal elements, that know 50  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,  
Eject him tainted now, and purge him off  
As a distemper gross, to air as gross,  
And mortal food, as may dispose him best  
For dissolution wrought by sin, that first  
Distempered all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted. I, at first, with two fair gifts  
Created him endowed, with happiness  
And immortality: that fondly lost,  
This other served but to eternise woe, 60  
Till I provided death; so death becomes  
His final remedy, and after life  
Tried in sharp tribulation, and refined

<sup>1</sup> 1 John ii. 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> John xvii. 21, 22.

## Paradise Lost

By faith and faithful works, to second life,  
Waked in the renovation of the just,  
Resigns him up with heav'n and earth renewed.  
But let us call to synod all the blest  
Through heav'n's wide bounds ; from them I will not  
hide

My judgments ; how with mankind I proceed,  
As how with peccant angels late they saw ; 70  
And in their state, though firm, stood more confirmed."

He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
To the bright minister that watched ; he blew  
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps  
When God descended, and perhaps once more  
To sound at general doom. The angelic blast  
Filled all the regions : from their blissful bow'rs  
Of amaranthine shade, fountain or spring,  
By the waters of life, where'er they sat  
In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 80  
Hasted, resorting to the summons high,  
And took their seats ; till from His throne supreme  
Th' Almighty thus pronounced His sov'reign will :

"O Sons, like one of us man is become  
To know both good and evil, since his taste  
Of that defended<sup>1</sup> fruit ; but let him boast  
His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;  
Happier, had it sufficed him to have known  
Good by itself, and evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite, 90  
My motions in him, longer than they move,  
His heart I know how variable and vain  
Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand  
Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,  
And live for ever,—dream at least to live  
For ever,—to remove him I decree,  
And send him from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.  
Michael, this my behest have thou in charge.  
Take to thee from among the Cherubim 100  
Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the fiend,

<sup>1</sup> Forbidden.

## Paradise Lost

Or in behalf of man, or to invade  
Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :  
Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God  
Without remorse drive out the sinful pair,  
From hallowed ground th' unholy, and denounce  
To them and to their progeny from thence  
Perpetual banishment. Yet lest they faint  
At the sad sentence rigorously urged,  
For I behold them softened and with tears 110  
Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.  
If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal  
To Adam what shall come in future days,  
As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix  
My cov'nant in the woman's seed renewed ;  
So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :  
And on the east side of the garden place,  
Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,  
Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame 120  
Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,  
And guard all passage to the Tree of Life :  
Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
To spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,  
With whose stol'n fruit man once more to delude."  
He ceased ; and the Archangelic pow'r prepared  
For swift descent ; with him the cohort bright  
Of watchful Cherubim ; four faces each  
Had, like a double Janus ;<sup>1</sup> all their shape  
Spangled with eyes more numerous than those 130  
Of Argus,<sup>2</sup> and more wakeful than to drowse,  
Charmed with Arcadian Pipe, the pastoral reed  
Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile,  
To resalute the world with sacred light  
Leucothea<sup>3</sup> waked, and with fresh dews imbalmed  
The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. x. 12, 14.

<sup>2</sup> Argus, the spy of Juno, who had a hundred eyes, was lulled to sleep and killed by Mercury (or Hermes), by the command of Jupiter. The Caduceus of Mercury is called an "opiate rod," because with it he could charm sleep on any eyelids he pleased.

<sup>3</sup> "The white goddess," or Dawn. The same with *Matuta*, or early morning, in Latin. She preceded *Aurora*.

## Paradise Lost

Had ended now their orisons, and found  
Strength added from above, new hope to spring  
Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet linked ;  
Which thus to Eve his welcome words renewed : 140

“ Eve, easily may faith admit, that all  
The good which we enjoy from heav’n descends ;  
But that from us aught should ascend to heav’n  
So prevalent as to concern the mind  
Of God high-blessed, or to incline His will,  
Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer,  
Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne  
Ev’n to the seat of God. For since I sought  
By prayer th’ offended Deity to appease,  
Kneeled and before Him humbled all my heart, 150  
Methought I saw Him placable and mild,  
Bending His ear : persuasion in me grew  
That I was heard with favour ; peace returned  
Home to my breast, and to my memory  
His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ;  
Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now  
Assures me that the bitterness of death  
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,  
Eve<sup>1</sup> rightly called, Mother of all mankind,  
Mother of all things living, since by thee 160  
Man is to live, and all things live for man.”

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek :  
“ Ill worthy I such title should belong  
To me transgressor, who, for thee ordained  
A help, became thy snare : to me reproach  
Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise :  
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
That I, who first brought death on all, am graced  
The source of life ; next favourable thou,  
Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsafest, 170  
Far other name deserving. But the field  
To labour calls us now with sweat imposed,  
Though after sleepless night ; for see, the Morn,  
All unconcerned with our unrest, begins  
Her rosy progress smiling ; let us forth,

<sup>1</sup> Eve signifies Life.

## Paradise Lost

I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoined  
Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,  
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?  
Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content." 180

So spake, so wished much-humbled Eve ; but fate  
Subscribed not ; nature first gave signs, impressed  
On bird, beast, air ; air suddenly eclipsed  
After short blush of morn : nigh in her sight  
The bird of Jove, stooped from his acry tow'r,  
Two birds of gayest plume before him drove :  
Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,  
First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,  
Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;  
Direct to th' eastern gate was bent their flight. 190  
Adam observed, and, with his eye the chase  
Pursuing, not unmoved to Eve thus spake :

"O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,  
Which heav'n by these mute signs in nature shows  
Forerunners of His purpose, or to warn  
Us haply too secure of our discharge  
From penalty, because from death released  
Some days ; how long, and what till then our life,  
Who knows, or more than this, that we are dust,  
And thither must return and be no more ? 200  
Why else this double object in our sight  
Of flight pursued in th' air, and o'er the ground,  
One way the selfsame hour ? Why in the east  
Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning light  
More orient in yon western cloud, that draws  
O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,  
And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught ? "

He erred not, for by this the heav'nly bands  
Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
In Paradise, and on a hill made halt, 210  
A glorious apparition, had not doubt  
And carnal fear that day dimmed Adam's eye.  
Not that more glorious, when the angels met  
Jacob in Mahanaim,<sup>1</sup> where he saw

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xxxii. 1, 2.

## Paradise Lost

the field pavilioned with his guardians bright ;  
Nor that which on the flaming mount appeared  
In Dothan, covered with a camp of fire,<sup>1</sup>  
Against the Syrian king, who to surprise  
One man assassin-like had levyed war,  
War unproclaimed. The princely hierarch 220  
In their bright stand there left his powers to seize  
Possession of the garden ; he alone,  
To find where Adam sheltered, took his way,  
Not unperceived of Adam, who to Eve,  
While the great visitant approached, thus spake :

“ Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
Of us will soon determine, or impose  
New laws to be observed ; for I descry  
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill  
One of the heav’nly host, and by his gait 230  
None of the meanest, some great Potentate,  
Or of the Thrones above, such majesty  
Invests him coming ; yet not terrible,  
That I should fear, nor sociably mild,  
As Raphael, that I should much confide,  
But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend  
With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.”

He ended ; and the Archangel soon drew nigh,  
Not in his shape celestial, but as man  
Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms 240  
A military vest of purple flowed,  
Livelier than Melibœan,<sup>2</sup> or the grain  
Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old  
In time of truce ; Iris<sup>3</sup> had dipped the woof ;  
His starry helin unbuckled showed him prime  
In manhood where youth ended ; by his side  
As in a glistering zodiac hung the sword,  
Satan’s dire dread, and in his hand the spear.  
Adam bowed low, he kingly from his state  
Inclined not, but his coming thus declared : 250

<sup>1</sup> 2 Kings vi. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Melibœa, a city of Thessaly, was famous for dyeing the noblest purple. Sarra, the dye of Tyre. Sar was the name of the fish from which the Tyrian purple dye was extracted.

<sup>3</sup> The rainbow hues are meant.

## Paradise Lost

“Adam, heav’n’s high behest no preface needs :  
Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and death,  
Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
Defeated of his seizure many days  
Giv’n thee of grace, wherein thou may’st repent,  
And one bad act with many deeds well done  
May’st cover : well may then thy Lord appeased  
Redeem thee quite from death’s rapacious claim ;  
But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
Permits not : to remove thee I am come, 260  
And send thee from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence thou was taken, fitter soil.”

He added not, for Adam at the news  
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen  
Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
Discovered soon the place of her retire :

“O unexpected stroke, worse than of death !  
Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave  
Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades, 270  
Fit haunt of Gods ? where I had hope to spend,  
Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
That must be mortal to us both. O flow’rs,  
That never will in other climate grow,  
My early visitation, and my last  
At ev’n, which I bred up with tender hand  
From the first op’ning bud, and gave ye names,  
Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank  
Your tribes, and water from th’ ambrosial fount ?  
Thee lastly, nuptial bow’r, by me adorned 280  
With what to sight or smell was sweet ; from thee  
How shall I part, and whither wander down  
Into a lower world, to this obscure  
And wild ? how shall we breathe in other air  
Less pure, accustomed to immortal fruits ?”

Whom thus the angel interrupted mild :  
“Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign  
What justly thou hast lost ; nor set thy heart,  
Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine :  
Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes 290



## Paradise Lost

Thy husband, him to follow thou art bound ;  
Where he abides, think there thy native soil."

Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp  
Recovering, and his scattered spirits returned,  
To Michael thus his humble words addressed :

"Celestial, whether among the thrones, or named  
Of them the highest, for such of shape may seem  
Prince above princes, gently hast thou told  
Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
And in performing end us ; what besides 300  
Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,  
Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
Recess, and only consolation left  
Familiar to our eyes, all places else  
Inhospitable appear and desolate,  
Nor knowing us nor known ; and if by prayer  
Incessant I could hope to change the will  
Of Him who all things can, I would not cease  
To weary Him with my assiduous cries. 310  
But prayer against His absolute decree  
No more avails than breath against the wind,  
Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth :  
Therefore to His great bidding I submit.  
This most afflicts me, that departing hence  
As from His face I shall be hid, deprived  
His blessed count'nance ; here I could frequent,  
With worship, place by place, where He vouchsafed  
Presence divine, and to my sons relate ;  
On this mount He appeared, under this tree 320  
Stood visible, among these pines His voice  
I heard, here with Him at this fountain talked :  
So many grateful altars I would rear  
Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memory,  
Or monument to ages, and thereon  
Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flow'rs :  
In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?  
For though I fled Him angry, yet, recalled 330

## Paradise Lost

To life prolonged and promised race, I now  
Gladly behold though but His utmost skirts  
Of glory, and far off His steps adore."

To whom thus Michael with regard benign :  
"Adam, thou know'st heav'n His, and all the earth,  
Not this rock only ; His omnipresence fills  
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,<sup>1</sup>  
Fomented by His virtual power and warmed :  
All the earth He gave thee to possess and rule,  
No despicable gift ; surmise not then 340  
His presence to these narrow bounds confined  
Of Paradise or Eden : this had been  
Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
All generations, and had hither come  
From all the ends of the earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee, their great progenitor.  
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :  
Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain  
God is as here, and will be found alike 350  
Present, and of His presence many a sign  
Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
With goodness and paternal love, His face  
Express, and of His steps the track divine.  
Which that thou may'st believe and be confirmed  
Ere thou from hence depart, know, I am sent  
To show thee what shall come in future days  
To thee and to thy offspring ; good with bad  
Expect to hear, supernal grace contending  
With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360  
True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
And pious sorrow, equally inured  
By moderation either state to bear,  
Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead  
Safest thy life, and best prepared endure  
Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
This hill ; let Eve, for I have drenched her eyes,  
Here sleep below, while thou to foresight wakest,  
As once thou slept'st, while she to life was formed."

<sup>1</sup> Jeremiah xliii. 24.

# Paradise Lost

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied : 370  
 "Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide, the path  
 Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of heav'n submit,  
 However chast'ning, to the evil turn  
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome  
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,  
 If so I may attain." So both ascend  
 In the visions of GOD. It was a hill  
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top  
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken  
 Stretched out to the amplest reach of prospect lay 380  
 Not higher than hill nor wider looking round,  
 Whereon for different cause the tempter set  
 Our second Adam<sup>1</sup> in the wilderness,  
 To show him all earth's kingdoms and their glory.  
 His eye might there command wherever stood  
 City of old or modern fame, the seat  
 Of mightiest empire, from the destined walls  
 Of Cambalu,<sup>2</sup> seat of Cathaian Can,  
 And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,<sup>3</sup>  
 To Paquin of Sinæan kings,<sup>4</sup> and thence 390  
 To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul,  
 Down to the golden Chersonese,<sup>5</sup> or where  
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since  
 In Hispahan, or where the Russian Czar  
 In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance,<sup>6</sup>  
 Turchestan-born ; nor could his eye not ken  
 The empire of Negus<sup>7</sup> to his utmost port  
 Ercoco, and the less maritime kings,  
 Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,<sup>8</sup>  
 And Sofala thought Ophir, to the realm 400  
 Of Congo, and Angola farthest south ;

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 45 ; Matt. iv. 8.

<sup>2</sup> The principal city of Cathay.

<sup>3</sup> The chief city of Zagathian Tartary. It was the royal residence of the great conqueror Tamerlane, or "Temir."

<sup>4</sup> Paquin, or Pekin, in China, the country of the ancient Sinæ.—  
 NEWTON.

<sup>5</sup> The golden Chersonese is Malacca.

<sup>6</sup> Byzantium, or Constantinople. The Turks came from Turkestan, in Tartary.

<sup>7</sup> Upper Ethiopia, or Abyssinia, whose king is still styled the *Negus*.  
 Ercoco, or Erquico, on the Red Sea.

<sup>8</sup> All on the eastern coast of Africa.

# Paradise Lost

Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount  
 The kingdoms of Almansor,<sup>1</sup> Fez, and Sus,  
 Marocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen ;  
 Or Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway  
 The world : in spirit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich Mexico the seat of Moteczume,  
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat  
 Of Atabalipa,<sup>2</sup> and yet unspoiled  
 Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons<sup>3</sup> 410  
 Call El Dorado ; but to nobler sights  
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed,  
 Which that false fruit that promised clearer sight  
 Had bred ; then purged with euphrasy<sup>4</sup> and rue  
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see ;  
 And from the well of life three drops instilled.  
 So deep the power of these ingredients pierced,  
 Ev'n to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
 That Adam, now enforced to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down, and all his spirits became intranced : 420  
 But him the gentle angel by the hand  
 Soon raised, and his attention thus recalled :  
 " Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold  
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought  
 In some to spring from thee, who never touched  
 Th' excepted tree, nor with the snake conspired,  
 Nor sinned thy sin ; yet from that sin derive  
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds."  
 His eyes he opened, and beheld a field,  
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 430  
 New reaped, the other part sheep-walks and folds :  
 I' th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood,  
 Rustic, of grassy sord ;<sup>5</sup> thither anon

<sup>1</sup> Almansor was King of Barbary, where these states lie.

<sup>2</sup> Atahualpa, the last native Emperor or Inca, subdued by Pizarro.

<sup>3</sup> The Spaniards, so called from Geryon, an ancient King of Spain. El Dorado revives the memory of the explorers and navigators of Elizabeth's days. The whole inhabited world is summed up in this sweeping and glorious description which resembles the vision of our Lord on the Mount.

<sup>4</sup> The herb called in English eyebright. Both it and rue were thought to have great medicinal power.

<sup>5</sup> Sward. See green-sord for green-sward in early editions of Shakespeare.

## Paradise Lost

A sweaty reaper<sup>1</sup> from his tillage brought  
First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,  
Unculled, as came to hand ; a shepherd next  
More meek came with the firstlings of his flock  
Choicest and best ; then sacrificing laid  
The inwards and their fat, with incense strewed,  
On the cleft wood, and all due rites performed. 440  
His off'ring soon propitious fire from heav'n  
Consumed with nimble glance, and grateful steam ;  
The other's not, for his was not sincere :  
Whereat he inly raged, and, as they talked,  
Smote him into the midriff with a stone  
That beat out life ; he fell, and deadly pale  
Groaned out his soul with gushing blood effused.  
Much at that sight was Adam in his heart  
Dismayed, and thus in haste to the angel cried :

“O teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n 450  
To that meek man, who well had sacrificed ;  
Is piety thus and pure devotion paid ?”

To whom Micháel thus, he also moved, replied :  
“These two are brethren, Adam, and to come  
Out of thy loins ; the unjust the just hath slain,  
For envy that his brother's offering found  
From heav'n acceptance ; but the bloody fact  
Will be avenged, and the other's faith approved  
Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,  
Rolling in dust and gore.” To which our sire : 460

“Alas, both for the deed and for the cause !  
But have I now seen Death ? is this the way  
I must return to native dust ? O sight  
Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,  
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !”

To whom thus Michael : “Death thou hast seen  
In his first shape on man ; but many shapes  
Of Death, and many are the ways that lead  
To his grim cave, all dismal ; yet to sense  
More terrible at the entrance than within. 470  
Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,  
By fire, flood, famine, by intemperance more

<sup>1</sup> Gen. iv. 2.

## Paradise Lost

In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring  
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
Before thee shall appear ; that thou may'st know  
What misery th' inabstinence of Eve  
Shall bring on men." Immediately a place  
Before his eyes appeared, sad, noisome, dark,  
A lazar-house it seemed, wherein were laid  
Numbers of all diseased, all maladies 480  
Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms  
Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,  
Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
Intestine stone and ulcer, colic pangs,  
Dæmoniac frenzy, moping melancholy,  
And moon-struck madness ; pining atrophy,  
Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,  
Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.  
Dire was the tossing, deep the groans ; despair  
Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch ; 490  
And over them triumphant Death his dart  
Shook, but delayed to strike, though oft invoked  
With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.  
Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
Dry-eyed behold ? Adam could not, but wept,  
Though not of woman born ; compassion quelled  
His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
A space, till firmer thoughts restrained excess,  
And scarce recovering words his plaint renewed :  
" O miserable mankind, to what fall 500  
Degraded, to what wretched state reserved !  
Better end here unborn. Why is life giv'n  
To be thus wrested from us ? rather why  
Obtruded on us thus ? who, if we knew  
What we receive, would either not accept  
Life offered, or soon beg to lay it down,  
Glad to be so dismissed in peace. Can thus  
Th' image of God in man, created once  
So goodly and erect, though faulty since,  
To such unsightly sufferings be debased 510  
Under inhuman pains ? Why should not man,  
Retaining still divine similitude

## Paradise Lost

In part, from such deformities be free,  
And for his Maker's image sake exempt?"

"Their Maker's image," answered Michael, "then  
Forsook them, when themselves they vilified  
To serve ungoverned appetite, and took  
His image whom they served, a brutish vice,  
Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.  
Therefore so abject is their punishment, 520  
Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own,  
Or if His likeness, by themselves defaced,  
While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules  
To loathsome sickness, worthily, since they  
God's image did not reverence in themselves."

"I yield it just," said Adam, "and submit.  
But is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To death, and mix with our connatural dust?"

"There is," said Michael, "if thou well observe 530  
The rule of not too much, by temperance taught  
In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence  
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight.  
Till many years over thy head return,  
So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop  
Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease  
Gathered, not harshly plucked, for death mature.  
This is old age; but then thou must outlive  
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
To withered, weak, and gray: thy senses then 540  
Obtuse all taste of pleasure must forego  
To what thou hast, and for the air of youth,  
Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
A melancholy damp of cold and dry  
To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
The balm of life." To whom our ancestor: "

"Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong  
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit  
Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge,  
Which I must keep till my appointed day 550  
Of rend'ring up, and patiently attend  
My dissolution." Michael replied:

## Paradise Lost

“Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but what thou livest  
Live well, how long or short permit to Heav’n :  
And now prepare thee for another sight.”

He looked, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds  
Of cattle grazing :<sup>1</sup> others, whence the sound  
Of instruments that made melodious chime  
Was heard, of harp and organ ; and who moved 560  
Their stops and chords was seen : his volant touch  
Instinct through all proportions low and high  
Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue,<sup>2</sup>  
In other part stood one who, at the forge<sup>3</sup>  
Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass  
Had melted, whether found where casual fire  
Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,  
Down to the veins of earth, thence gliding hot  
To some cave’s mouth, or whether washed by stream  
From underground ; the liquid ore he drained 570  
Into fit moulds prepared ; from which he formed  
First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought  
Fusil or grav’n in metal. After these,  
But on the hither side, a different sort  
From the high neighbouring hills, which was their seat,  
Down to the plain descended : by their guise  
Just men they seemed,<sup>4</sup> and all their study bent  
To worship God aright, and know His works  
Not hid ; nor those things last, which might preserve  
Freedom and peace to men : they on the plain 580  
Long had not walked, when from the tents behold  
A bevy of fair women, richly gay  
In gems and wanton dress ; to the harp they sung  
Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on :  
The men, though grave, eyed them, and let their eyes  
Rove without rein, till, in the amorous net  
Fast caught, they liked, and each his liking chose :  
And now of love they treat, till the ev’ning star,  
Love’s harbinger, appeared ; then all in heat  
They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke 590

<sup>1</sup> Jabal. See Gen. iv. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Tubal-cain. Gen. iv. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Jubal. See Gen. iv. 21.

<sup>4</sup> The descendants of Seth.



## Paradise Lost

Hymen, then first to marriage rites invoked ;  
With feast and music all the tents resound.  
Such happy interview and fair event  
Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flow'rs,  
And charming symphonies attached the heart  
Of Adam, soon inclined to admit delight,  
'The bent of nature, which he thus expressed :  
    " True opener of mine eyes, prime angel blest,  
Much better seems this vision, and more hope  
Of peaceful days portends, than those two past : 600  
'Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse ;  
Here nature seems fulfilled in all her ends."

To whom thus Michael : " Judge not what is best  
By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end  
Holy and pure, conformity divine.  
Those tents, thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race  
Who slew his brother ; studious they appear  
Of arts that polish life, inventors rare, 610  
Unmindful of their Maker, though His Spirit  
Taught them, but they His gifts acknowledged none.  
Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ;  
For that fair female troupe thou saw'st, that seemed  
Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all good wherein consists  
Woman's domestic honour and chief praise ;  
Bred only and completed to the taste  
Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and troll the tongue, and roll the eye. 620  
To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
Religious titled them the sons of GOD,  
Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame  
Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles  
Of these fair atheists ; and now swim in joy,  
Erelong to swim at large, and laugh ; for which  
The world erelong a world of tears must weep."

To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft :  
" O pity and shame, that they, who to live well  
Entered so fair, should turn aside to tread 630

# Paradise Lost

Paths indirect, or in the midway faint !

But still I see the tenor of man's woe

Holds on the same, from woman to begin."

"From man's effeminate slackness it begins,"  
Said the Archangel, "who should better hold his place  
By wisdom and superior gifts received.

But now prepare thee for another scene."

He looked, and saw wide territory spread  
Before him, towns, and rural works between,  
Cities of men with lofty gates and tow'rs, 640

Concourse in arms, fierce faces threat'ning war,

Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise ;

Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,

Single, or in array of battle ranged

Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring stood :

One way a band select from forage drives

A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,

From a fat meadow ground ; or fleecy flock,

Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain,  
Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly, 650

But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray.

With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;

Where cattle pastured late, now scattered lies

With carcasses and arms th' ensanguined field

Deserted. Others to a city strong

Lay siege, encamped, by battery, scale, and mine,

Assaulting ; others from the wall defend

With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire ;

On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.

In other part the sceptred heralds call 660

To council in the city gates : anon

Gray-headed men and grave, with warriors mixed,

Assemble, and harangues are heard ; but soon

In factious opposition : till at last

Of middle age one rising,<sup>1</sup> eminent

In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,

Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,

And judgment from above : him old and young

<sup>1</sup> Enoch, said to be of middle age, because he was translated when he was only 365 years old, a middle age then. Gen. v. 23.

## Paradise Lost

Exploded, and had seized with violent hands,  
Had not a cloud descending snatched him thence, 670  
Unseen amid the throng : so violence  
Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
Lamenting turned full sad : " O ! what are these,  
Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death  
Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
Ten thousand-fold the sin of him who slew  
His brother ; for of whom such massacre  
Make they but of their brethren, men of men ? 680  
But who was that just man, whom had not heav'n  
Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost ? "

To whom thus Michael : " These are the product  
Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st ;  
Where good with bad were matched, who of themselves  
Abhor to join ; and by imprudence mixed  
Produce prodigious births of body or mind.  
Such were these giants, men of high renown ;  
For in those days might only shall be admired,  
And valour an heroic virtue called : 690  
To overcome in battle, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Manslaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human glory, and for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styled great conquerors,  
Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods,  
Destroyers rightlier called and plagues of men.  
Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on earth,  
And what most merits fame in silence hid.  
But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld'st  
The only righteous in a world perverse, [700  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With foes for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious truth, that God would come  
To judge them with His saints ; him the Most High  
Wrapt in a balmy cloud with wingèd steeds  
Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God  
High in salvation and the climes of bliss,

## Paradise Lost

Exempt from death : to show thee what reward  
Awaits the good, the rest what punishment : 710  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold."

He looked, and saw the face of things quite changed,  
The brazen throat of war had ceased to roar ;  
All now was turned to jollity and game,  
To luxury and riot, feast and dance,  
Marrying or prostituting as befell,  
Rape or adultery, where passing fair  
Allured them ; thence from cups to civil broils.  
At length a reverend sire<sup>1</sup> among them came,  
And of their doings great dislike declared, 720  
And testified against their ways ; he oft  
Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs, or festivals, and to them preached  
Conversion and repentance, as to souls  
In prison under judgments imminent :  
But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceased  
Contending, and removed his tents far off :<sup>2</sup>  
Then from the mountain hewing timber tall,  
Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,  
Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and highth, 730  
Smeared round with pitch, and in the side a door  
Contrived, and of provisions laid in large  
For man and beast : when lo, a wonder strange !  
Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,  
Came sevens, and pairs, and entered in, as taught  
Their order : last the sire and his three sons  
With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.  
Meanwhile the south wind rose, and, with black wings  
Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove  
From under heav'n ; the hills to their supply 740  
Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist  
Sent up amain : and now the thickened sky  
Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rushed the rain  
Impetuous, and continued till the earth  
No more was seen ; the floating vessel swum

<sup>1</sup> Noah. See 1 Peter iii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Noah's removal to another land is taken from Josephus. *Antiq. Jud.* lib. i. c. 3.

## Paradise Lost

Uplifted ; and secure with beakèd prow  
Rode tilting o'er the waves, all dwellings else  
Flood overwhelmed, and them with all their pomp  
Deep under water rolled ; sea covered sea,  
Sea without shore, and in their palaces, 750  
Where luxury late reigned, sea-monsters whelped  
And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,  
All left in one small bottom swum embarked.  
How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold  
The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,  
Depopulation ! thee another flood,  
Of tears and sorrow a flood thee also drowned,  
And sunk thee as thy sons ; till gently reared  
By the angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,  
Though comfortless, as when a father mourns 760  
His children, all in view destroyed at once ;  
And scarce to the angel utteredst thus thy plaint :  
“ O visions ill foreseen ! better had I  
Lived ignorant of future, so had borne  
My part of evil only, each day's lot  
Enough to bear ; those now, that were dispensed  
The burden of many ages, on me light  
At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth  
Abortive, to torment me ere their being,  
With thought that they must be. Let no man seek 770  
Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall  
Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,  
Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,  
And he the future evil shall no less  
In apprehension than in substance feel,  
Grievous to bear : but that care now is past,  
Man is not whom to warn ; those few escaped  
Famine and anguish will at last consume  
Wand'ring that wat'ry desert. I had hope,  
When violence was ceased, and war on earth, 780  
All would have then gone well ; peace would have  
crowned  
With length of happy days the race of man ;  
But I was far deceived ; for now I see  
Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.

## Paradise Lost

How comes it thus? unfold, celestial guide,  
And whether here the race of man will end."

To whom thus Michael: "Those whom last thou  
saw'st

In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
And great exploits, but of true virtue void ; 790  
Who having spilled much blood, and done much waste,  
Subduing nations, and achieved thereby  
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,  
Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride  
Raise, out of friendship, hostile deeds in peace.  
The conquered also and enslaved by war  
Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose  
And fear of God, from whom their piety feigned  
In sharp contest of battle found no aid 800  
Against invaders ; therefore cooled in zeal  
Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,  
Worldly, or dissolute, on what their lords  
Shall leave them to enjoy, for the earth shall bear  
More than enough, that temperance may be tried :  
So all shall turn degenerate, all depraved,  
Justice and temperance, truth and faith forgot ;  
One man except, the only son of light  
In a dark age, against example good,  
Against allurement, custom, and a world 810  
Offended ; fearless of reproach and scorn,  
Or violence, he of their wicked ways  
Shall them admonish, and before them set  
The paths of righteousness, how much more safe  
And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come  
On their impenitence ; and shall return  
Of them derided, but of God observed  
The one just man alive ; by His command  
Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,  
To save himself and household from amidst 820  
A world devote to universal wreck.  
No sooner he with them of man and beast  
Select for life shall in the ark be lodged

## Paradise Lost

And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts  
Of heav'n set open on the earth shall pour  
Rain day and night ; all fountains of the deep  
Broke up shall heave the ocean to usurp  
Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise  
Above the highest hills : then shall this mount  
Of Paradise by might of waves be moved 830  
Out of his place, pushed by the hornèd flood,  
With all his verdure spoiled, and trees adrift,  
Down the great river to the op'ning gulf,  
And there take root, an island salt and bare,  
The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews' clang ;  
'To teach thee that God attributes to place  
No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
And now what further shall ensue, behold."

He looked, and saw the ark hull on the flood, 840  
Which now abated, for the clouds were fled,  
Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry  
Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decayed ;  
And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass  
Gazed hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,  
As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink  
From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole  
With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopped  
His sluices, as the heav'n his windows shut.  
The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground 850  
Fast on the top of some high mountain fixed.  
And now the tops of hills as rocks appear ;  
With clamour thence the rapid currents drive  
Towards the retreating sea their furious tide.  
Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies,  
And after him, the surer messenger,  
A dove, sent forth once and again to spy  
Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light :  
The second time returning, in his bill  
An olive leaf he brings, pacific sign : 860  
Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark  
The ancient sire descends with all his train ;  
Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,

## Paradise Lost

Grateful to heav'n, over his head beholds  
A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow  
Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
Betok'ning peace from God, and cov'nant new.  
Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad  
Greatly rejoiced, and thus his joy broke forth :

“O thou, who future things canst represent 870  
As present, heav'nly Instructor, I revive  
At this last sight, assured that man shall live  
With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.  
Far less I now lament for one whole world  
Of wicked sons destroyed, than I rejoice  
For one man found so perfect and so just,  
That God vouchsafes to raise another world  
From him, and all His anger to forget.  
But say, what mean those coloured streaks in heav'n,  
Distended, as the brow of God appeared? 880  
Or serve they as a flow'ry verge to bind  
The fluid skirts of that same wat'ry cloud  
Lest it again dissolve and show'r the earth? ”

To whom the Archangel : “Dext'rously thou aim'st ;  
So willingly doth God remit His ire,  
Though late repenting Him of man depraved,  
Grieved at His heart, when looking down He saw  
The whole earth filled with violence, and all flesh  
Corrupting each their way ; yet, those removed,  
Such grace shall one just man find in His sight, 890  
That He relents, not to blot out mankind,  
And makes a covenant never to destroy  
The earth again by flood, nor let the sea  
Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world  
With man therein or beast ; but when He brings  
Over the earth a cloud, will therein set  
His triple-coloured bow, whereon to look,  
And call to mind His cov'nant : day and night,  
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,  
Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new, 900  
Both heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell.”



# Paradise Lost

## BOOK XII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed ; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall ; His incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension ; the state of the Church till His second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied, and recomfited by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael ; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in other hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

As one who in his journey bates at noon, 1  
Though bent on speed, so here the archangel paused  
Betwixt the world destroyed and world restored,  
If Adam aught perhaps might interpose ;  
Then with transition sweet new speech resumes :  
“ Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end ;  
And man as from a second stock proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive  
Thy mortal sight to fail : objects divine  
Must needs impair and weary human sense : 10  
Henceforth what is to come I will relate,  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.  
“ This second source of men, while yet but few,  
And while the dread of judgment past remains  
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,  
With some regard to what is just and right  
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,  
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,  
Corn, wine, and oil ; and from the herd, or flock,  
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid, 20  
With large wine-offerings poured, and sacred feast,  
Shall spend their days in joy unblamed, and dwell  
Long time in peace by families and tribes  
Under paternal rule ; till one shall rise  
Of proud ambitious heart, who not content  
With fair equality, fraternal state,  
Will arrogate dominion undeserved  
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
Concord and law of nature from the earth ;  
Hunting, and men not beasts shall be his game, 30  
With war and hostile snare such as refuse

# Paradise Lost

Subjection to his empire tyrannous.  
A mighty hunter thence he shall be styled<sup>1</sup>  
Before the Lord, as in despite of heav'n,  
Or from heav'n claiming second sov'reignty ;  
And from rebellion shall derive his name,<sup>2</sup>  
Though of rebellion others he accuse.  
He with a crew, whom like ambition joins  
With him or under him to tyrannise,  
Marching from Eden towards the west,<sup>3</sup> shall find 40  
The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell :  
Of brick and of that stuff they cast to build  
A city and tow'r, whose top may reach to heav'n,  
And get themselves a name, lest far disperst  
In foreign lands their memory be lost,  
Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
But God, who oft descends to visit men  
Unseen, and through their habitations walks  
To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50  
Comes down to see their city, ere the tower  
Obstruct Heav'n-tow'rs, and in derision sets  
Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase  
Quite out their native language, and instead  
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown.  
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud  
Among the builders, each to other calls  
Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,  
As mocked, they storm ; great laughter was in heav'n,  
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange 60  
And hear the din ; thus was the building left  
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion<sup>4</sup> named."

Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeased :

"O execrable son ! so to aspire  
Above his brethren, to himself assuming  
Authority usurped, from God not giv'n.

<sup>1</sup> Nimrod, who is supposed to have been the first who assumed kingly power. See Gen. x. 9.

<sup>2</sup> The name Nimrod is derived from a Hebrew word that signifies to rebel.

<sup>3</sup> "And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar." Gen. xi. 2, etc.

<sup>4</sup> Babel signifies *confusion* in Hebrew.

## Paradise Lost

He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,  
Dominion absolute ; that right we hold  
By His donation ; but man over men  
He made not lord ; such title to Himself 70  
Reserving, human left from human free.  
But this usurper his encroachment proud  
Stays not on man ; to God his tower intends  
Siege and defiance. Wretched man ! what food  
Will he convey up thither to sustain  
Himself and his rash army, where thin air  
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
And famish him of breath, if not of bread ? ”

To whom thus Michael : “ Justly thou abhorr’st  
That son, who on the quiet state of men 80  
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
Rational liberty ; yet know withal,  
Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
Twinned, and from her hath no dividual being :  
Reason in man obscured, or not obeyed,  
Immediately inordinate desires  
And upstart passions catch the government  
From reason, and to servitude reduce  
Man till then free. Therefore, since he permits 90  
Within himself unworthy powers to reign  
Over free reason, God in judgment just  
Subjects him from without to violent lords  
Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
His outward freedom. Tyranny must be,  
Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.  
Yet sometimes nations will decline so low  
From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
But justice, and some fatal curse annexed,  
Deprives them of their outward liberty, 100  
Their inward lost : witness the irreverent son  
Of him who built the ark, who for the shame  
Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,  
*Servant of servants*, on his vicious race.<sup>1</sup>  
Thus will this latter, as the former world,

<sup>1</sup> Gen. ix. 22-25.

## Paradise Lost

Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,  
Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
His presence from among them, and avert  
His holy eyes ; resolving from thenceforth  
To leave them to their own polluted ways ; 110  
And one peculiar nation to select  
From all the rest, of whom to be invoked,  
A nation from one faithful man <sup>1</sup> to spring :  
Him on this side Euphrates yet residing  
Bred up in idol-worship.<sup>2</sup> O that men,  
Canst thou believe ? should be so stupid grown,  
While yet the patriarch lived who scaped the flood,  
As to forsake the living God, and fall  
To worship their own work in wood and stone  
For gods ; yet him God the Most High vouchsafes 120  
To call by vision from his father's house,  
His kindred, and false gods, into a land  
Which He will show him, and from him will raise  
A mighty nation, and upon him show'r  
His benediction so, that in his seed  
All nations should be blessed ; he straight obeys,  
Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.  
I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith  
He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil,  
Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford 130  
'To Haran, after him a cumbrous train  
Of herds, and flocks, and numerous servitude ;  
Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth  
With God, who called him, in a land unknown.  
Canaan he now attains ; I see his tents  
Pitched about Sechem, and the neighbouring plain  
Of Moreh ; there by promise he receives  
Gift to his progeny of all that land ;  
From Hamath northward to the desert south ;  
Things by their names I call, though yet unnamed, 140  
From Hermon east to the great western sea ;  
Mount Hermon, yonder sea, each place behold

<sup>1</sup> Abraham.

<sup>2</sup> Terah, Abraham's father, was an idolater. See Josh. xxiv. 2. Jewish tradition represents the father and grandfather of Abraham to have been carvers of idols. Terah was born in Noah's lifetime.

## Paradise Lost

In prospect, as I point them ; on the shore  
Mount Carmel ; here the double-founted stream  
Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons  
Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.  
This ponder, that all nations of the earth  
Shall in his seed be blessèd ; by that seed  
Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise  
The serpent's head ; whereof to thee anon 150  
Plainlier shall be revealed. This patriarch blest,  
Whom 'faithful Abraham' due time shall call,  
A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves,  
Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.  
The grandchild, with twelve sons increased departs  
From Canaan, to a land hereafter called  
Egypt, divided by the river Nile ;  
See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths  
Into the sea. To sojourn in that land  
He comes, invited by a younger son 160  
In time of dearth ; a son, whose worthy deeds  
Raise him to be the second in that realm  
Of Pharaoh : there he dies, and leaves his race  
Growing into a nation ; and now grown  
Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks  
To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests  
Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
Inhospitably, and kills their infant males :  
Till by two brethren (those two brethren call  
Moses and Aaron), sent from GOD to claim 170  
His people from enthralment, they return  
With glory and spoil back to their promised land.  
But first the lawless tyrant, who denies  
To know their God, or message to regard,  
Must be compelled by signs and judgments dire ;  
To blood unshed the rivers must be turned ;  
Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill  
With loathed intrusion, and fill all the land :  
His cattle must of rot and murrain die ;  
Blotches and blains must all his flesh imboss, 180  
And all his people ; thunder mixed with hail,  
Hail mixed with fire, must rend the Egyptian sky,

## Paradise Lost

And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls ;  
What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,  
A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down  
Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green :  
Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
Palpable darkness, and blot out three days ;  
Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born  
Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds 190  
This river-dragon <sup>1</sup> tamed at length submits  
To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice  
More hardened after thaw, till, in his rage  
Pursuing whom he late dismissed, the sea  
Swallows him with his host, but them lets pass  
As on dry land between two crystal walls,  
Awed by the rod of Moses so to stand  
Divided, till his rescued gain their shore :  
Such wondrous power God to His saint will lend, 200  
Though present in His angel, who shall go  
Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire.  
By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire,  
To guide them in their journey, and remove  
Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues :  
All night he will pursue, but his approach  
Darkness defends between till morning watch ;  
Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud  
God looking forth will trouble all his host,  
And craze their chariot wheels : when by command  
Moses once more his potent rod extends [210  
Over the sea ; the sea his rod obeys ;  
On their imbattled ranks the waves return,  
And overwhelm their war. The race elect  
Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance  
Through the wild Desert ; not the readiest way,  
Lest ent'ring on the Canaanite alarmed,  
War terrify them inexpert, and fear  
Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather  
Inglorious life with servitude ; for life 220

<sup>1</sup> An allusion to the crocodile, the Egyptian animal. Ezekiel styles Pharaoh "the great dragon that lieth in the midst of his rivers."

## Paradise Lost

To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
Untrained in arms, where rashness leads not on.  
This also shall they gain by their delay  
In the wide wilderness, there they shall found  
Their government, and their great senate choose  
Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordained.  
God from the mount of Sinai, whose grey top  
Shall tremble, He descending, will Himself  
In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound  
Ordain them laws ; part, such as appertain 230  
To civil justice ; part, religious rites  
Of sacrifice, informing them by types  
And shadows of that destined Seed to bruise  
The serpent, by what means He shall achieve  
Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of GOD  
'To mortal ear is dreadful : they beseech  
'That Moses might report to them His will  
And terror cease ; he grants what they besought,  
Instructed that to God is no access  
Without Mediator, whose high office now 240  
Moses in figure bears, to introduce  
One greater, of whose day he shall foretell ;  
And all the prophets in their age the times  
Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus laws and rites  
Established, such delight hath God in men  
Obedient to His will, that He vouchsafes  
Among them to set up His tabernacle,  
The Holy One with mortal men to dwell.  
By His prescript a sanctuary is framed  
Of cedar, overlaid with gold, therein 250  
An ark, and in the ark His testimony,  
The records of His cov'nant, over these  
A mercy-seat of gold between the wings  
Of two bright Cherubim ; before Him burn  
Seven lamps, as in a zodiac representing  
The heav'nly fires ; over the tent a cloud  
Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night.  
Save when they journey, and at length they come  
Conducted by His angel to the land  
Promised to Abraham and his seed. The rest 260

## Paradise Lost

Were long to tell, how many battles fought,  
How many kings destroyed, and kingdoms won ;  
Or how the sun shall in mid heav'n stand still  
A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
Man's voice commanding : ' Sun, in Gibeon stand,  
And thou, Moon, in the vale of Aialon,  
Till Israel overcome ' ;—so call the third  
From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him  
His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win."

Here Adam interposed : " O sent from heav'n, 270  
Eulightener of my darkness, gracious things  
Thou hast revealed, those chiefly which concern  
Just Abraham and his seed : now first I find  
Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eased,  
Erewhile perplexed with thoughts what would become  
Of me and all mankind ; but now I see  
His day, in whom all nations shall be blessed ;  
Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.  
' This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280  
Among whom GOD will deign to dwell on earth  
So many and so various laws are giv'n :  
So many laws argue so many sins  
Among them ; how can GOD with such reside ? "

To whom thus Michael : " Doubt not but that sin  
Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;  
And therefore was law given them to evince  
Their natural pravity, by stirring up  
Sin against law to fight ; that when they see  
Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290  
Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude  
Some blood more precious must be paid for man,  
Just for unjust, that in such righteousness  
To them by faith imputed they may find  
Justification towards GOD, and peace  
Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies  
Cannot appease, nor man the moral part  
Perform, and not performing cannot live.  
So law appears imperfect, and but giv'n 300



## Paradise Lost

With purpose to resign them in full time  
Up to a better covenant, disciplined  
From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,  
From imposition of strict laws to free  
Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear  
To filial, works of law to works of faith.  
And therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
Highly beloved, being but the minister  
Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;  
But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, 310  
His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
The adversary serpent, and bring back  
Through the world's wilderness long wandered man  
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
Meanwhile they in their earthly Canaan placed  
Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
National interrupt their public peace,  
Provoking God to raise them enemies,  
From whom as oft He saves them penitent,  
By judges first, then under kings ; of whom 320  
The second, both for piety renowned  
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing  
All prophecy, that of the royal stock  
Of David (so I name this king), shall rise  
A son, the woman's seed to thee foretold,  
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust  
All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings  
The last, for of his reign shall be no end. 330  
But first a long succession must ensue,  
And his next son, for wealth and wisdom famed,  
The clouded ark of God, till then in tents  
Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.  
Such follow him, as shall be registered  
Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll ;  
Whose foul idolatries, and other faults  
Heaped to the popular sum, will so incense  
God, as to leave them, and expose their land,  
Their city, His temple, and His Holy ark, 340

## Paradise Lost

With all His sacred things, a scorn and prey  
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st  
 Left in confusion, Babylon thence called.  
 There in captivity He lets them dwell  
 The space of seventy years, then brings them back,  
 Rememb'ring mercy and His cov'nant sworn  
 To David stablished as the days of heav'n.  
 Returned from Babylon by leave of kings  
 Their lords, whom God disposed, the house of God  
 They first re-edify, and for a while 350  
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown  
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow :  
 But first among the priests dissension springs,<sup>1</sup>  
 Men who attend the altar, and should most  
 Endeavour peace : their strife pollution brings  
 Upon the temple itself : at last they seize  
 The sceptre, and regard not David's sons ;<sup>2</sup>  
 Then lose it to a stranger,<sup>3</sup> that the true  
 Anointed king Messiah might be born  
 Barred of His right ; yet at His birth a star 360  
 Unseen before in heav'n proclaims Him come ;  
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire  
 His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold :  
 His place of birth a solemn angel tells  
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night ;  
 They gladly thither haste, and by a choir  
 Of squadroned angels hear His carol sung.  
 A virgin is His mother, but His sire  
 The power of the Most High ; He shall ascend  
 The throne hereditary, and bound His reign 370  
 With earth's wide bounds, His glory with the heav'ns.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The murder of Jesus, or Joshua, in the Temple by his brother John, the high priest, is perhaps alluded to here. Bagoas, the general of Artaxerxes' army, had promised to procure Jesus the high priesthood. In confidence of the Persian's support, Jesus insulted his brother in the Temple, and so provoked him that the latter slew him. Thus the Temple was polluted by fratricide, committed by the high priest himself. The old commentators suppose, however, that the passage alludes to the quarrels between Jason and Menelaus for the high priesthood, which led to the profanation of the Temple by Antiochus Epiphanes.

<sup>2</sup> Aristobulus, a Maccabee, or Asmonean, erected the theocratic republic of the Jews into a kingdom 481 years after the return from the Babylonian captivity.

<sup>3</sup> Herod, an Idumean or Edomite.

<sup>4</sup> Psalm ii. 8 ; Isaiah ix. 7 ; Zech. ix. 9.

## Paradise Lost

He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy  
Surcharged, as had, like grief, been dewed in tears,  
Without the vent of words, which these he breathed ;

“ O prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand  
What oft my steadiest thoughts have searched in  
vain,

Why our great expectation should be called  
The seed of woman : Virgin Mother, hail !  
High in the love of heav’n, yet from my loins 380  
Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son  
Of GOD most high ; so GOD with man unites.  
Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise  
Expect with mortal pain : say where and when  
Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor’s heel.”

To whom thus Michael : “ Dream not of their fight,  
As of a duel, or the local wounds  
Of head or heel : not therefore joins the Son  
Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil  
The enemy ; nor so is overcome 390  
Satan, whose fall from heav’n, a deadlier bruise,  
Disabled not to give thee thy death’s wound ;  
Which He, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
Not by destroying Satan, but his works  
In thee and in thy seed : nor can this be,  
But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
Obedience to the law of GOD, imposed  
On penalty of death, and suffering death,  
The penalty to thy transgression due,  
And due to theirs which out of thine will grow : 400  
So only can high justice rest appaid.  
The law of GOD exact He shall fulfil,  
Both by obedience and by love, though love  
Alone fulfil the law ; thy punishment  
He shall endure by coming in the flesh  
To a reproachful life and cursèd death,  
Proclaiming life to all who shall believe  
In His redemption ; and that His obedience  
Imputed becomes theirs by faith ; His merits  
To save them, not their own, though legal, works. 410

## Paradise Lost

For this He shall live hated, be blasphemed,  
Seized on by force, judged, and to death condemned  
A shameful and accursed, nailed to the cross  
By His own nation, slain for bringing life :  
But to the cross He nails thy enemies,  
The law that is against thee, and the sins  
Of all mankind, with Him there crucified,  
Never to hurt them more who rightly trust  
In this His satisfaction : so He dies,  
But soon revives ; death over Him no power 420  
Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light  
Return, the stars of morn shall see Him rise  
Out of His grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,  
His death for man, as many as offered life  
Neglect not, and the benefit embrace  
By faith not void of works. This godlike act  
Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have died  
In sin, for ever lost from life ; this act  
Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength, 430  
Defeating sin and death, his two main arms,  
And fix far deeper in his head their stings,  
Than temporal death shall bruise the Victor's heel.  
Or theirs whom He redeems ; a death, like sleep,  
A gentle wafting to immortal life.  
Nor after resurrection shall He stay  
Longer on earth than certain times to appear  
To His disciples, men who in His life  
Still followed Him ; to them shall leave in charge  
To teach all nations what of Him they learned 440  
And His salvation ; them who shall believe,  
Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign  
Of washing them from guilt of sin to life  
Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,  
For death, like that which the Redeemer died.  
All nations they shall teach ; for from that day  
Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins  
Salvation shall be preached, but to the sons  
Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world ;  
So in His seed all nations shall be blessed. 450

## Paradise Lost

Then to the heav'n of heav'ns He shall ascend  
With victory, triumphing through the air  
Over His foes and thine : there shall surprise  
The serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains  
Through all his realm, and there confounded leave ;  
Then enter into glory, and resume  
His seat at GOD's right hand, exalted high  
Above all names in heav'n ; and thence shall come,  
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,  
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead, 460  
To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward  
His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
Whether in heav'n or earth ; for then the earth  
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
Than this of Eden, and far happier days."

So spake the Archangel Michaël, then paused,  
As at the world's great period ; and our sire,  
Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied :

"O goodness infinite, goodness immense !  
That all this good of evil shall produce, 470  
And evil turn to good ; more wonderful  
Than that which by creation first brought forth  
Light out of darkness ! full of doubt I stand,  
Whether I should repent me now of sin  
By me done and occasioned, or rejoice  
Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring.  
'To GOD more glory, more good will to men  
From GOD, and over wrath grace shall abound.

But say, if our Deliverer up to heav'n  
Must reascend, what will betide the few 480  
His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,  
The enemies of truth ? who then shall guide  
His people, who defend ? will they not deal  
Worse with His followers than with Him they dealt?"

"Be sure they will," said the angel ; "but from heav'n  
He to His own a Comforter will send,  
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
His Spirit within them, and the law of faith  
Working through love upon their hearts shall write,  
To guide them in all truth, and also arm 490

# Paradise Lost

With spiritual armour, able to resist  
Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,  
What man can do against them, not afraid,  
Though to the death, against such cruelties  
With inward consolations recompensed,  
And oft supported so as shall amaze  
Their proudest persecutors : for the Spirit  
Poured first on His apostles, whom He sends  
To evangelise the nations, then on all  
Baptized, shall them with wondrous gifts indue, 500  
To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,  
As did their Lord before them. Thus they win  
Great numbers of each nation to receive  
With joy the tidings brought from heav'n : at length  
Their ministry performed, and race well run,  
Their doctrine and their story written left,  
They die ; but in their room, as they forewarn,  
Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,  
Who all the sacred mysteries of heav'n  
To their own vile advantages shall turn 510  
Of lucre and ambition, and the truth  
With superstitions and traditions taint,  
Left only in those written records pure,  
Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,  
Places, and titles, and with these to join  
Secular power, though feigning still to act  
By spiritual, to themselves appropriating  
The Spirit of God, promised alike and giv'n  
To all believers ; and from that pretence 520  
Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force  
On every conscience ; laws which none shall find  
Left them enrolled, or what the Spirit within  
Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind  
His consort Liberty ? what, but unbuild  
His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
Their own faith, not another's ? for on earth  
Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
Infallible ? yet many will presume : 530

## Paradise Lost

Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
On all who in the worship persevere  
Of spirit and truth ; the rest, far greater part,  
Will deem in outward rites and specious forms  
Religion satisfied ; truth shall retire  
Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith  
Rarely be found : so shall the world go on,  
To good malignant, to bad men benign,  
Under her own weight groaning, till the day  
Appear of respiration to the just, 540  
And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
Of Him so lately promised to thy aid,  
The Woman's Seed, obscurely then foretold,  
Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord,  
Last in the clouds from heav'n to be revealed  
In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
Satan with his perverted world, then raise  
From the conflagrant mass, purged and refined,  
New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date  
Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love, 550  
To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss."

He ended ; and thus Adam last replied :  
" How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blessed,  
Measured this transient world, the race of time,  
Till time stand fixed ! beyond is all abyss,  
Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.  
Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,  
Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill  
Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain ;  
Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560  
Henceforth I learn that to obey is best,  
And love with fear the only GOD, to walk  
As in His presence, ever to observe  
His providence, and on Him sole depend,  
Merciful over all His works, with good  
Still overcoming evil ; and by small  
Accomplishing great things, by things deemed weak  
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
By simply meek ; that suffering for truth's sake  
Is fortitude to highest victory, 570

## Paradise Lost

And to the faithful death the gate of life ;  
Taught this by His example, whom I now  
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blessed."

To whom thus also the angel last replied :  
" This having learned, thou hast attained the sum  
Of wisdom ; hope no higher, though all the stars  
Thou knew'st by name, and all th' ethereal powers,  
All secrets of the deep, all nature's works,  
Or works of GOD in heav'n, air, earth, or sea,  
And all the riches of the world enjoyedst, 580  
And all the rule, one empire ; only add  
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable ; add faith ;  
Add virtue, patience, temperance ; add love,  
By name to come called charity, the soul  
Of all the rest ; then wilt thou not be loth  
To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
A Paradise within thee, happier far.  
Let us descend now, therefore, from this top  
Of speculation, for the hour precise  
Exacts our parting hence ; and see, the guards, 590  
By me encamped on yonder hill, expect  
Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,  
In signal of remove, waves fiercely round ;  
We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ;  
Her also I with gentle dreams have calmed,  
Portending good, and all her spirits composed  
To meek submission : thou at season fit  
Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,  
Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,  
The great deliverance by her seed to come, 600  
For by the Woman's Seed, on all mankind ;  
That ye may live, which will be many days,  
Both in one faith unanimous, though sad,  
With cause, for evils past ; yet much more cheered  
With meditation on the happy end."

He ended, and they both descend the hill :  
Descended, Adam to the bower, where Eve  
Lay sleeping, ran before, but found her waked ;  
And thus with words not sad she him received ; [610  
" Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know ;



## Paradise Lost

For GOD is also in sleep, and dreams advise,  
Which He hath sent propitious, some great good  
Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress  
Wearied I fell asleep : but now lead on ;  
In me is no delay ; with thee to go  
Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay  
Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me  
Art all things under heav'n, all places thou,  
Who for my wilful crime art banished hence.  
This further consolation yet secure 620  
I carry hence : though all by me is lost,  
Such favour I unworthy am vouchsafed,  
By me the Promised Seed shall all restore.”  
So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard  
Well pleased, but answered not ; for now too nigh  
The Archangel stood, and from the other hill  
To their fixed station all in bright array  
The Cherubim descended ; on the ground  
Gilding meteorous, as ev'ning mist  
Ris'n from a river o'er the marish<sup>1</sup> glides, 630  
And gathers ground fast at the labourer's heel  
Homeward returning. High in front advanced,  
The brandished sword of GOD before them blazed  
Fierce as a comet ; which with torrid heat,  
And vapour as the Libyan air adust,  
Began to parch that temperate clime : whereat  
In either hand the hast'ning angel caught  
Our ling'ring parents, and to the eastern gate  
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast  
To the subjected plain ; then disappeared. 640  
They looking back all th' eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,  
Waved over by that flaming brand ; the gate  
With dreadful faces thronged and fiery arms :  
Some natural tears they dropped, but wiped them soon ;  
The world was all before them, where to choose  
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.  
They, hand in hand, with wand'ring steps and slow,  
Through Eden took their solitary way.

<sup>1</sup> An old word for marsh.

# Paradise Regained

## BOOK I.

### ARGUMENT.

The subject proposed. Invocation of the Holy Spirit. John is baptizing at the river Jordan; Jesus coming is there baptized; and is attested by the descent of the Holy Ghost, and by a voice from heaven, to be the Son of God. Satan, who is present, flies up into the regions of the air, where, summoning his infernal council, he acquaints them with his apprehensions that Jesus is the Seed of the Woman destined to destroy all their power, and points out to them the necessity of bringing the matter to proof, and of attempting to counteract and defeat the persons from whom they have so much to dread. This office he undertakes, and sets out on his enterprise. In the meantime, God, in the assembly of Holy Angels, declares that He has given up His Son to be tempted by Satan; but foretells that the Tempter shall be completely defeated by Him; upon which the angels sing a hymn of triumph. Jesus is led by the Spirit into the wilderness, while He is meditating on the commencement of His great office of Saviour of mankind. He narrates, in a soliloquy, what divine and philanthropic impulses He had felt from His early youth, and how His mother Mary had acquainted Him with the circumstances of His birth, and informed Him that He was no less a person than the Son of God; to which He adds what His own reflections and enquiries had supplied, in confirmation of this great truth, and particularly dwells on the recent attestation of it at the river Jordan. Our Lord passes forty days fasting in the wilderness; where the wild beasts become harmless in His presence. Satan now appears under the form of an old peasant, and enters into discourse with our Lord. Jesus replies. Satan rejoins with a description of the difficulty of supporting life in the wilderness; and entreats Jesus, if He be really the Son of God, to prove His divine power by changing some of the stones into bread. Jesus reproves him, and, at the same time, tells him that He knows who he is. Satan avows himself, and offers an artful apology. Our Blessed Lord severely reprimands him, and confutes every part of his justification. Satan still endeavours to justify himself; and, professing his admiration of Jesus, and his regard for virtue, requests to be permitted at a future time to hear more of His conversation; but is answered, that this must be as he shall find permission from above. Satan then disappears, and the book closes with a short description of night coming on the desert.

I, who erewhile the happy garden sung,  
By one man's disobedience lost, now sing  
Recovered Paradise to all mankind,  
By one Man's firm obedience fully tried  
Through all temptation, and the Tempter foiled  
In all his wiles, defeated, and repulsed,  
And Eden raised in the waste wilderness.

## Paradise Regained

Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite  
Into the desert, His victorious field,  
Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st Him thence 10  
By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire,  
As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,  
And bear through highth or depth of nature's bounds  
With prosperous wing full summed <sup>1</sup> to tell of deeds  
Above heroic, though in secret done,  
And unrecorded left through many an age,  
Worthy to have not remained so long unsung.

Now had the great Proclaimer,<sup>2</sup> with a voice  
More awful than the sound of trumpet, cried  
Repentance, and heaven's kingdom nigh at hand 20  
To all baptized : to his great baptism flocked  
With awe the regions round, and with them came  
From Nazareth the Son of Joseph deemed  
To the flood Jordan, came, as then obscure,  
Unmarked, unknown ; but Him the Baptist soon  
Descried, divinely warned, and witness bore  
As to his worthier, and would have resigned  
To Him his heavenly office, nor was long  
His witness unconfirmed : on Him baptized 30  
Heav'n opened, and in likeness of a dove  
The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice  
From heav'n pronounced Him His belovèd Son.  
That heard the adversary, who, roving still  
About the world, at that assembly famed  
Would not be last, and, with the voice divine  
Nigh thunder-struck, th' exalted Man, to whom  
Such high attest was given, a while surveyed  
With wonder ; then, with envy fraught and rage,  
Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air 40  
To council summons all his mighty peers,  
Within thick clouds and dark ten-fold involved,  
A gloomy consistory ; and them amidst  
With looks aghast and sad he thus bespake :  
"O ancient Powers of air<sup>3</sup> and this wide world,  
—For much more willingly I mention air,

<sup>1</sup> Full feathered, a term used in falconry.

<sup>2</sup> John the Baptist.

<sup>3</sup> See Ephes. ii. 2, vi. 12.

## Paradise Regained

This our old conquest, than remember Hell,  
Our hated habitation,—well ye know  
How many ages, as the years of men,  
This universe we have possest, and ruled  
In manner at our will th' affairs of earth, 50  
Since Adam and his facile consort Eve  
Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since  
With dread attending when that fatal wound  
Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve  
Upon my head ; long the decrees of heav'n  
Delay, for longest time to Him is short ;  
And now too soon for us the circling hours  
This dreaded time have compast, wherein we  
Must bide the stroke of that long threatened wound,  
At least if so we can, and by the head 60  
Broken be not intended all our power  
To be infringed, our freedom, and our being,  
In this fair empire won of earth and air.  
For this ill news I bring, the Woman's Seed,  
Destined to this, is late of woman born ;  
His birth to our just fear gave no small cause,  
But His growth now to youth's full flow'r, displaying  
All virtue, grace, and wisdom to achieve  
Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.  
Before Him a great prophet to proclaim 70  
His coming is sent harbinger, who all  
Invites, and in the consecrated stream  
Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so  
Purified to receive Him pure, or rather  
To do Him honour as their King : all come,  
And He Himself among them was baptized,  
Not thence to be more pure, but to receive  
The testimony of heav'n, that who He is  
Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw  
The prophet do Him reverence ; on Him rising 80  
Out of the water, heav'n above the clouds  
Unfold her crystal doors, thence on His head  
A perfect dove descend, whate'er it meant,  
And out of heav'n the sov'ran voice I heard,  
—'This is my Son beloved, in Him am pleased.'

## Paradise Regained

His mother then is mortal, but His sire  
He who obtains the monarchy of heav'n ;  
And what will He not do to advance His Son ?  
His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,  
When His fierce thunder drove us to the deep ;      90  
Who this is we must learn,<sup>1</sup> for man He seems  
In all His lineaments, though in His face  
The glimpses of His Father's glory shine.  
Ye see our danger on the utmost edge  
Of hazard, which admits no long debate,  
But must with something sudden be opposed,  
Not force, but well-couched fraud, well-woven snares,  
Ere in the head of nations He appear  
Their King, their leader, and supreme on earth.  
I, when no other durst, sole undertook      100  
The dismal expedition to find out  
And ruin Adam, and the exploit performed  
Successfully ; a calmer voyage now  
Will waft me ; and the way found prosp'rous once  
Induces best to hope of like success."

He ended, and his words impression left  
Of much amazement to th' infernal crew,  
Distracted and surprised with deep dismay  
At these sad tidings ; but no time was then  
For long indulgence to their fears or grief.      110  
Unanimous they all commit the care  
And management of this main enterprise  
To him their great dictator, whose attempt  
At first against mankind so well had thrived  
In Adam's overthrow, and led their march  
From hell's deep-vaulted den to dwell in light,  
Regents, and potentates, and kings, yea gods,  
Of many a pleasant realm and province wide.  
So to the coast of Jordan he directs  
His easy steps, girded with snaky wiles,<sup>2</sup>      120  
Where he might likeliest find this new-declared,

<sup>1</sup> Milton's idea that Satan did not know that the wondrous Man baptized was the Messiah, originated probably by the opinions of Ignatius, Beza, etc., who believed that the devil did not recognise in mortal form the Son of God.—*From* NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> Alluding to the habits of pretended sorcerers, who wore a girdle of snake's skin.—NEWTON. Milton also alluded to the temptation of Eve.

## Paradise Regained

This Man of men, attested Son of God,  
Temptation and all guile on Him to try;  
So to subvert whom he suspected raised  
To end his reign on earth so long enjoyed :  
But contrary unweeting he fulfilled  
The purposed counsel pre-ordained and fixed  
Of the Most High, who, in full frequency bright  
Of angels, thus to Gabriel<sup>1</sup> smiling spake :

“Gabriel, this day by proof thou shalt behold, 130  
Thou and all angels conversant on earth  
With man or men’s affairs, how I begin  
To verify that solemn message late,  
On which I sent thee to the Virgin pure  
In Galilee, that she should bear a son  
Great in renown, and called the Son of God ;  
Thou told’st her, doubting how these things could  
be

To her a virgin, that on her should come  
The Holy Ghost, and the power of the Highest  
O’ershadow her. This Man, born, and now up-grown,  
To show Him worthy of His birth divine [140  
And high prediction, henceforth I expose  
To Satan ; let him tempt and now assay  
His utmost subtlety, because he boasts  
And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng  
Of his apostasy ; he might have learnt  
Less overweening, since he failed in Job,  
Whose constant perseverance overcame  
Whate’er his cruel malice could invent.  
He now shall know I can produce a Man 150  
Of female seed, far abler to resist  
All his solicitations, and at length  
All his vast force, and drive him back to hell,  
Winning by conquest what the first man lost  
By fallacy surprised. But first I mean  
To exercise Him in the wilderness ;  
There He shall first lay down the rudiments  
Of His great warfare, ere I send Him forth

<sup>1</sup> The rabbis say that Gabriel was the angel of mercy ; Michael, of justice.

## Paradise Regained

To conquer Sin and Death, the two grand foes,  
By humiliation and strong sufferance. 160  
His weakness shall o'ercome Satanic strength,  
And all the world, and mass of sinful flesh ;  
That all the angels and ethereal powers  
(They now, and men hereafter,) may discern,  
From what consummate virtue I have chose  
This perfect Man, by merit called my Son,  
To earn salvation for the sons of men."

So spake th' eternal Father, and all heav'n  
Admiring stood a space, then into hymns  
Burst forth, and in celestial measures moved, 170  
Circling the throne and singing, while the hand  
Sung with the voice, and this the argument :

" Victory and triumph to the Son of GOD,  
Now ent'ring His great duel, not of arms,  
But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles.  
The Father knows the Son ; therefore secure  
Ventures His filial virtue, though untried,  
Against whate'er may tempt, whate'er seduce,  
Allure, or terrify, or undermine.  
Be frustrate, all ye stratagems of hell, 180  
And, devilish machinations, come to nought !"

So they in heav'n their odes and vigils tuned :  
Meanwhile the Son of GOD, who yet some days  
Lodged in Bethabara, where John baptized,  
Musing and much revolving in His breast,  
How best the mighty work He might begin  
Of Saviour to mankind, and which way first  
Publish His godlike office now mature,  
One day forth walked alone, the Spirit leading,  
And His deep thoughts, the better to converse 190  
With solitude, till far from track of men,  
'Thought following thought, and step by step led on,  
He entered now the bordering desert wild,<sup>1</sup>  
And, with dark shades and rocks environed round,  
His holy meditations thus pursued :

<sup>1</sup> The wilderness of Judea, or Ziph. It extends from the Jordan along the western side of the Dead Sea. But this locality has been disputed.

## Paradise Regained

“ O what a multitude of thoughts at once  
Awakened in me swarm, while I consider  
What from within I feel myself, and hear  
What from without comes often to my ears,  
Ill sorting with my present state compared. 200  
When I was yet a child, no childish play  
To me was pleasing, all my mind was set  
Serious to learn and know, and thence to do  
What might be public good ; myself I thought  
Born to that end, born to promote all truth,  
All righteous things : therefore, above my years,  
The law of God I read, and found it sweet,  
Made it my whole delight, and in it grew  
To such perfection, that, ere yet my age  
Had measured twice six years, at our great feast 210  
I went into the Temple, there to hear  
The teachers of our law, and to propose  
What might improve my knowledge or their own,  
And was admired by all ; yet this not all  
To which my spirit aspired ; victorious deeds  
Flamed in my heart, heroic acts ; one while  
To rescue Israel from the Roman yoke,  
Then to subdue and quell o’er all the earth  
Brute violence and proud tyrannic pow’r,  
Till truth were freed, and equity restored : 220  
Yet held it more humane, more heav’nly, first  
By winning words to conquer willing hearts,  
And make persuasion do the work of fear ;  
At least to try, and teach the erring soul,  
Not wilfully misdoing, but unaware  
Misled ; the stubborn only to subdue.  
These growing thoughts my Mother soon perceiving,  
By words at times cast forth, inly rejoiced,  
And said to me apart : ‘ High are thy thoughts,  
O Son ; but nourish them, and let them soar 230  
To what highth sacred virtue and true worth  
Can raise them, though above example high ;  
By matchless deeds express thy matchless Sire.  
For know, thou art no son of mortal man,  
Though men esteem thee low of parentage,



## Paradise Regained

Thy Father is the eternal King who rules  
All heav'n and earth, angels and sons of men.  
A messenger from God foretold thy birth  
Conceived in me a virgin ;<sup>1</sup> he foretold  
'Thou should'st be great, and sit on David's throne, 240  
And of thy kingdom there should be no end.  
At thy nativity a glorious quire  
Of angels in the fields of Bethlehem sung  
'To shepherds watching at their folds by night,<sup>2</sup>  
And told them the Messiah now was born,  
Where they might see Him ; and to thee they came,  
Directed to the manger where thou lay'st,  
For in the inn was left no better room.  
A star, not seen before, in heav'n appearing,  
Guided the wise men thither from the east<sup>3</sup> 250  
'To honour thee with incense, myrrh, and gold ;  
By whose bright course led on, they found the place,  
Affirming it thy star new grav'n in heav'n,  
By which they knew the King of Israel born.  
Just Simeon and prophetic Anna, warned  
By vision, found thee in the temple, and spake  
Before the altar and the vested priest,  
Like things of thee to all that present stood.'  
This having heard, straight I again revolved  
'The law and prophets, searching what was writ 260  
Concerning the Messiah, to our scribes  
Known partly, and soon found of whom they spake  
I am ; this chiefly, that my way must lie  
Through many a hard assay, even to the death,  
Ere I the promised kingdom can attain,  
Or work redemption for mankind, whose sins'  
Full weight must be transferred upon my head.  
Yet, neither thus disheartened or dismayed,  
'The time prefixed I waited, when, behold !  
The Baptist, of whose birth I oft had heard, 270  
Not knew by sight,<sup>4</sup> now come, who was to come  
Before Messiah, and His way prepare.

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 30-35.

<sup>2</sup> Luke ii. 8 and following verses.

<sup>3</sup> Matt ii.

<sup>4</sup> St. John was brought up in a different part of the country from Jesus, and first saw his divine cousin at His baptism. John i. 31, 32 :  
" I knew Him not "

## Paradise Regained

I, as all others, to his baptism came,  
Which I believed was from above ; but he  
Straight knew me, and with loudest voice proclaimed  
Me Him, (for it was shown him so from heav'n,)  
Me Him whose harbinger he was ; and first  
Refused on me his baptism to confer,  
As much his greater, and was hardly won :  
But as I rose out of the laving stream, 280  
Heaven opened her eternal doors, from whence  
The Spirit descended on me like a dove ;  
And last, the sum of all, my Father's voice,  
Audibly heard from heav'n, pronounced me His,  
Me His belovèd Son, in whom alone  
He was well pleased ; by which I knew the time  
Now full, that I no more should live obscure,  
But openly begin, as best becomes  
The authority which I derived from heav'n.  
And now by some strong motion I am led 290  
Into this wilderness, to what intent  
I learn not yet ; perhaps I need not know ;  
For what concerns my knowledge GOD reveals.”  
So spake our Morning Star, then in His rise,  
And, looking round, on every side beheld  
A pathless desert, dusk with horrid shades ;  
The way He came not having marked, return  
Was difficult, by human steps untrod ;  
And He still on was led, but with such thoughts  
Accompanied of things past and to come 300  
Lodged in His breast, as well might recommend  
Such solitude before choicest society.  
Full forty days He passed, whether on hill  
Sometimes, anon in shady vale, each night  
Under the covert of some ancient oak  
Or cedar, to defend Him from the dew,  
Or harboured in one cave, is not revealed ;  
Nor tasted human food, nor hunger felt,  
Till those days ended ; hungered then at last  
Among wild beasts : they at His sight grew mild, 310  
Nor sleeping Him nor waking harmed ; His  
walk

## Paradise Regained

The fiery serpent fled and noxious worm,  
The lion and fierce tiger glared aloof.  
But now an aged man in rural weeds,  
Following, as seemed, the quest of some stray ewe,  
Or withered sticks to gather, which might serve  
Against a winter's day, when winds blow keen,  
To warm him wet returned from field at eve,  
He saw approach, who first with curious eye  
Perused Him, then with words thus uttered spake : 320

"Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place,  
So far from path or road of men, who pass  
In troop or caravan, for single none  
Durst ever, who returned, and dropt not here  
His carcass, pined with hunger and with drouth ?  
I ask the rather, and the more admire,  
For that to me thou seem'st the Man, whom late  
Our new baptizing prophet at the ford  
Of Jordan honoured so, and called thee Son  
Of God : I saw and heard, for we sometimes, 330  
Who dwell this wild, constrained by want, come forth  
To town or village nigh, (nighest is far,)  
Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,  
What happens new ; fame also finds us out."

To whom the Son of God : "Who brought me  
hither  
Will bring me hence ; no other guide I seek."

"By miracle he may," replied the swain ;  
"What other way I see not, for we here  
Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inured  
More than the camel, and to drink go far, 340  
Men to much misery and hardship born.  
But if thou be the Son of God, command  
That out of these hard stones be made thee bread,  
So shalt thou save thyself and us relieve  
With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste."

He ended, and the Son of God replied :  
"Think'st thou such force in bread ? is it not written,  
(For I discern thee other than thou seem'st,)  
Man lives not by bread only, but each word  
Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed 350

## Paradise Regained

Our fathers here with manna? in the mount  
Moses was forty days, nor eat, nor drank ;  
And forty days Elijah without food  
Wandered this barren waste, the same I now.  
Why dost thou then suggest to me distrust,  
Knowing Who I am, as I know who thou art ? ”

Whom thus answered the Arch-fiend, now undis-  
guised :

“ ’Tis true, I am that spirit unfortunate,  
Who, leagued with millions more in rash revolt,  
Kept not my happy station, but was driv’n 360  
With them from bliss to the bottomless deep ;  
Yet to that hideous place not so confined  
By rigour unconniving, but that oft,  
Leaving my dolorous prison, I enjoy  
Large liberty, to round this globe of earth,  
Or range in the air ; nor from the Heav’n of Heav’ns  
Hath He excluded my resort sometimes.  
I came among the sons of God, when He  
Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job  
To prove him, and illustrate his high worth ; • 370  
And when to all His angels He proposed  
To draw the proud king Ahab into fraud,  
That he might fall in Ramoth, they demurring,  
I undertook that office, and the tongues  
Of all his flattering prophets glibbed with lies <sup>1</sup>  
To his destruction, as I had in charge ;  
For what He bids I do. Though I have lost  
Much lustre of my native brightness, lost  
To be beloved of God, I have not lost  
To love, at least contemplate and admire, 380  
What I see excellent in good, or fair,  
Or virtuous ; I should so have lost all sense.  
What can be then less in me than desire  
To see thee and approach thee, whom I know  
Declared the Son of God, to hear attent  
Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds ?  
Men generally think me much a foe  
To all mankind : why should I ? they to me

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings xxii. 19 and following verses.

## Paradise Regained

Never did wrong or violence. By them  
I lost not what I lost ; rather by them 390  
I gained what I have gained, and with them dwell,  
Copartner in these regions of the world,  
If not disposer ; lend them oft my aid,  
Oft my advice by presages, and signs,  
And answers, oracles, portents, and dreams,  
Whereby they may direct their future life.  
Envy, they say, excites me, thus to gain  
Companions of my misery and woe.  
At first it may be ; but, long since with woe  
Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof 400  
That fellowship in pain divides not smart,  
Nor lightens aught each man's peculiar load.  
Small consolation then, were man adjoined :  
This wounds me most, what can it less? that  
man,

Man fall'n, shall be restored, I never more."

To whom our Saviour sternly thus replied :  
"Deservedly thou griev'st, composed of lies  
From the beginning, and in lies wilt end,  
Who boast'st release from hell, and leave to come  
Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns. Thou comest, indeed, 410  
As a poor miserable captive thrall  
Comes to the place where he before had sat  
Among the prime in splendour, now deposed,  
Ejected, emptied, gazed, unpitied, shunned,  
A spectacle of ruin or of scorn  
To all the host of heav'n. The happy place  
Imports to thee no happiness, no joy ;  
Rather inflames thy torment, representing  
Lost bliss to thee no more communicable,  
So never more in hell than when in heav'n. 420  
But thou art serviceable to heav'n's King !  
Wilt thou impute to obedience what thy fear  
Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites ?  
What but thy malice moved thee to misdeem  
Of righteous Job, then cruelly to afflict him  
With all inflictions? but his patience won.  
The other service was thy chosen task,

## Paradise Regained

To be a liar in four hundred mouths ;  
 For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.  
 Yet thou pretend'st to truth ! All oracles 430  
 By thee are giv'n, and what confessed more true  
 Among the nations ? that hath been thy craft,  
 By mixing somewhat true to vent more lies.  
 But what have been thy answers ? what but dark,  
 Ambiguous, and with double sense deluding,  
 Which they who asked have seldom understood,  
 And not well understood as good not known ?  
 Who ever by consulting at thy shrine  
 Returned the wiser, or the more instruct  
 To fly or follow what concerned him most, 440  
 And run not sooner to his fatal snare ?  
 For GOD hath justly given the nations up  
 To thy delusions ; justly, since they fell  
 Idolatrous. But when His purpose is  
 Among them to declare His providence  
 To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy  
     truth,  
 But from Him or His angels president  
 In ev'ry province ? who, themselves disdaining  
 To approach thy temples, give thee in command  
 What to the smallest tittle thou shalt say 450  
 To thy adorers ; thou with trembling fear,  
 Or like a fawning parasite, obey'st ;  
 Then to thyself ascribest the truth foretold.  
 But this thy glory shall be soon retrenched ;  
 No more shalt thou by oracling abuse  
 The Gentiles ; henceforth oracles are ceased,<sup>1</sup>  
 And thou no more with pomp and sacrifice  
 Shall be inquired at Delphos or elsewhere ;  
 At least in vain, for they shall find thee mute.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ceased. *Juv. Sat. VI. 554.*

"Delphis oracula cessant"

<sup>2</sup> Thus the priestess tells Appius when he wishes to consult the oracle at Delphi, and finds it dumb :

"Muto Parnassus hiatu  
 Conticuit pressitque Deum ; seu spiritus istas  
 Destituit fauces mundique in devia versum.  
 Duxit iter."

LUCAN, quoted by DUNSTER.

## Paradise Regained

GOD hath now sent His living Oracle 460  
Into the world to teach His final will,  
And sends His Spirit of Truth henceforth to dwell  
In pious hearts, an inward oracle  
To all truth requisite for men to know."

So spake our Saviour ; but the subtle fiend,  
Though inly stung with anger and disdain,  
Dissembled, and this answer smooth returned :

"Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke,  
And urged me hard with doings, which not will,  
But misery, hath wrested from me ; where 470  
Easily canst thou find one miserable,  
And not enforced oftentimes to part from truth ;  
If it may stand him more in stead to lie,  
Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure ?  
But thou art placed above me, thou art Lord ;  
From thee I can, and must, submiss endure  
Check or reproof, and glad to 'scape so quit.  
Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk,  
Smooth on the tongue discoursed, pleasing to the  
ear,

And tuneable as sylvan pipe or song ; 480  
What wonder then if I delight to hear  
Her dictates from thy mouth ? most men admire  
Virtue, who follow not her lore : permit me  
To hear thee when I come, since no man comes,  
And talk at least, though I despair to attain.  
Thy Father, who is holy, wise, and pure,  
Suffers the hypocrite or atheous priest  
To tread His sacred courts, and minister  
About His altar, handling holy things,  
Praying or vowing, and vouchsafed His voice 490  
To Balaam reprobate, a prophet yet  
Inspired : disdain not such access to me."

To whom our Saviour with unaltered brow :  
"Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,  
I bid not nor forbid : do as thou find'st  
Permission from above ; thou canst not more."

He added not ; and Satan, bowing low  
His gray dissimulation, disappeared

## Paradise Regained

Into thin air diffused :<sup>1</sup> for now began  
Night with her sullen wing to double-shade 50c  
The desert ; fowls in their clay nests were couched ;  
And now wild beasts came forth the woods to roam.

1 "These our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and  
Are melted into air, into *thin air*."  
SHAKSPEARE, *Tempest*, Act IV. Sc. 2.



# Paradise Regained

## BOOK II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The disciples of Jesus, uneasy at His long absence, reason among themselves concerning it. Mary also gives vent to her maternal anxiety; in the expression of which she recapitulates many circumstances of the birth and early life of her Son. Satan again meets his infernal counsellors, recounts the bad success of his first temptation of our Blessed Lord, and calls upon them for counsel and assistance. Belial proposes the tempting of Jesus with women. Satan rebukes Belial for his dissoluteness, charging on him all the profligacy of that kind ascribed by the poets to the heathen gods, and rejects his proposal as in no respect likely to succeed. Satan then suggests other modes of temptation, particularly proposing to avail himself of the circumstance of our Lord's hungering; and, taking a band of chosen spirits with him, returns to resume his enterprise. Jesus hungered in the desert. Night comes on; the manner in which our Saviour passes the night is described. Morning advances. Satan again appears to Jesus, and, after expressing wonder that He should be so entirely neglected in the wilderness, where others had been miraculously fed, tempts Him with a sumptuous banquet of the most luxurious kind. This our Lord rejects, and the banquet vanishes. Satan, finding our Lord not to be assailed on the ground of appetite, tempts Him again by offering Him riches, as the means of acquiring power; this Jesus also rejects, producing many instances of great actions performed by persons under virtuous poverty, and specifying the danger of riches, and the cares and pains inseparable from power and greatness.

MEANWHILE the new-baptized, who yet remained I  
At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen  
Him whom they heard so late expressly called  
Jesus, Messiah, Son of GOD declared,  
And on that high authority had believed,  
And with Him talked, and with Him lodged,<sup>1</sup> I mean  
Andrew and Simon, famous after known,  
With others, though in holy writ not named,  
Now missing Him, their joy so lately found,  
So lately found, and so abruptly gone, 10  
Began to doubt, and doubted many days,  
And, as the days increased, increased their doubt:  
Sometimes they thought He might be only shown,  
And for a time caught up to GOD, as once  
Moses was in the Mount, and missing long;  
And the great Thibbite,<sup>2</sup> who on fiery wheels  
Rode up to heav'n, yet once again to come.  
Therefore, as those young prophets then with care  
Sought lost Elijah,<sup>3</sup> so in each place these  
Nigh to Bethabara; in Jericho 20

<sup>1</sup> See John i. 35-40.

<sup>2</sup> Elijah.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Kings ii. 17.

## Paradise Regained

The city of palms,<sup>1</sup> Ænon, and Salem old,  
Machærus,<sup>2</sup> and each town or city walled  
On this side the broad lake Genezaret,  
Or in Peræa : but returned in vain.  
Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek,  
Where winds with reeds and osiers whisp'ring play,  
Plain fishermen—no greater men them call—  
Close in a cottage low together got,  
Their unexpected loss and complaints outbreathed :  
    " Alas, from what high hope to what relapse      30  
Unlooked for are we fall'n ! our eyes beheld  
Messiah certainly now come, so long  
Expected of our fathers ; we have heard  
His words, His wisdom full of grace and truth :  
' Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand,  
The kingdom shall to Israel be restored : '  
Thus we rejoiced, but soon our joy is turned  
Into perplexity and new amaze :  
For whither is He gone, what accident  
Hath rapt Him from us ? will He now retire      40  
After appearance, and again prolong  
Our expectation ? God of Israel,  
Send thy Messiah forth, the time is come.  
Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress  
Thy chosen, to what highth their power unjust  
They have exalted, and behind them cast  
All fear of thee. Arise and vindicate  
Thy glory, free thy people from their yoke.  
But let us wait : thus far He hath performed,  
Sent His Anointed, and to us revealed Him,      50  
By His great prophet, pointed at and shown  
In public, and with Him we have conversed ;  
Let us be glad of this, and all our fears  
Lay on His providence ; He will not fail,  
Nor will withdraw Him now, nor will recall—  
Mock us with His blest sight, then snatch Him hence ;  
Soon we shall see our hope, our joy return."

Thus they out of their complaints new hope resume

<sup>1</sup> Jericho is called the city of palm trees in Deut. xxxiv. 3.

<sup>2</sup> A stronghold fortified by Herod Antipas.

## Paradise Regained

To find whom at the first they found unsought :  
But to His mother Mary, when she saw 60  
Others returned from baptism, not her Son,  
Nor left at Jordan, tidings of Him none,  
Within her breast though calm, her breast though pure,  
Motherly cares and fears got head, and raised  
Some troubled thoughts, which she in sighs thus clad :  
“ O what avails me now that honour high  
To have conceived of God, or that salute,  
‘ Hail, highly favoured, among women blest ! ’  
While I to sorrows am no less advanced,  
And fears as eminent, above the lot 70  
Of other women, by the birth I bore ;  
In such a season born, when scarce a shed  
Could be obtained to shelter Him or me  
From the bleak air ! a stable was our warmth,  
A manger His : yet soon enforced to fly  
Thence into Egypt, till the murd’rous king  
Were dead, who sought His life, and missing, filled  
With infant blood the streets of Bethlehem.  
From Egypt home returned, in Nazareth  
Hath been our dwelling many years ; His life 80  
Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,  
Little suspicious to any king ; but now  
Full grown to man, acknowledged, as I hear,  
By John the Baptist, and in public shown,  
Son owned from heav’n by His Father’s voice ;  
I looked for some great change : to honour ? no,  
But trouble, as old Simeon plain foretold,  
That to the fall and rising He should be  
Of many in Israel, and to a sign  
Spoken against, that through my very soul 90  
A sword shall pierce. This is my favoured lot,  
My exaltation to afflictions high !  
Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest.  
I will not argue that, nor will repine.  
But where delays He now ? some great intent  
Conceals Him. When twelve years He scarce had seen,  
I lost Him, but so found, as well I saw  
He could not lose Himself, but went about

## Paradise Regained

His Father's business. What He meant I mused,  
Since understand. Much more His absence now 100  
Thus long to some great purpose He obscures.  
But I to wait with patience am inured ;  
My heart hath been a store-house long of things  
And sayings laid up, portending strange events."

Thus Mary pond'ring oft, and oft to mind  
Recalling what remarkably had passed  
Since first her salutation heard, with thoughts  
Meekly composed awaited the fulfilling :  
The while her Son, tracing the desert wild,  
Sole but with holiest meditations fed, 110  
Into Himself descended, and at once  
All His great work to come before Him set :  
How to begin, how to accomplish best  
His end of being on earth, and mission high :  
For Satan, with sly preface to return,  
Had left Him vacant, and with speed was gone  
Up to the middle region of thick air,  
Where all his Potentates in council sat ;  
There, without sign of boast, or sign of joy,  
Solicitous and blank he thus began : 120

" Princes, heav'n's ancient sons, ethereal thrones,  
Demonian spirits now, from the element  
Each of his reign allotted, rightlier called  
Pow'rs of Fire, Air, Water, and Earth beneath,  
So may we hold our place and these mild seats  
Without new trouble ; such an enemy  
Is risen to invade us, who no less  
Threatens, than our expulsion down to hell.  
I, as I undertook, and with the vote  
Consenting in full frequency was empowered, 130  
Have found Him, viewed Him, tasted Him,<sup>1</sup> but find  
Far other labour to be undergone  
Than when I dealt with Adam, first of men,  
Though Adam by his wife's allurements fell,  
However to this Man inferior far,  
If He be man by mother's side, at least

<sup>1</sup> A Grecism. See also Psalm xxxiv. 8: "O taste and see how gracious the Lord is!"

## Paradise Regained

With more than human gifts from heav'n adorned,  
Perfections absolute, graces divine,  
And amplitude of mind to greatest deeds.  
Therefore I am returned, lest confidence 140  
Of my success with Eve in Paradise  
Deceive ye to persuasion oversure  
Of like succeeding here : I summon all  
Rather to be in readiness, with hand  
Or counsel to assist, lest I, who erst  
'Thought none my equal, now be overmatched."

So spoke the old Serpent doubting, and from all  
With clamour was assured their utmost aid  
At his command ; when from amidst them rose  
Belial, the dissolutes spirit that fell, 150  
The sensualest, and after Asmodai<sup>1</sup>  
The fleshliest Incubus, and thus advised :

"Set women in His eye, and in His walk,  
Among daughters of men the fairest found ;  
Many are in each region passing fair  
As the noon sky ; more like to goddesses  
Than mortal creatures, graceful and discreet,  
Expert in amorous arts, enchanting tongues  
Persuasive, virgin majesty with mild  
And sweet allayed, yet terrible to approach, 160  
Skilled to retire, and in retiring draw  
Hearts after them tangled in amorous nets.  
Such object hath the power to soften and tame  
Severest temper, smooth the rugged'st brow,  
Enerve, and with voluptuous hope dissolve,  
Draw out with credulous desire, and lead  
At will the manliest, resolute breast,  
As the magnetic<sup>2</sup> hardest iron draws.  
Women, when nothing else, beguiled the heart  
Of wisest Solomon, and made him build, 170  
And made him bow to the gods of his wives."

To whom quick answer Satan thus returned :  
"Belial, in much uneven scale thou weigh'st

<sup>1</sup> Or Asmodeus, the angel who persecuted Sana, the daughter of Raguel, and slew her husbands. See Tobit.

<sup>2</sup> The loadstone, or magnet.

## Paradise Regained

All others by thyself ; because of old  
Thou thyself doated'st on woman-kind, admiring  
Their shape, their colour, and attractive grace,  
None are, thou think'st, but taken with such toys.  
Before the flood, thou with thy lusty crew,  
False titled sons of God, roaming the earth,  
Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men, 180  
And coupled with them, and begot a race.  
Have we not seen, or by relation heard,  
In courts and regal chambers how thou lurk'st,  
In wood or grove by mossy fountain side,  
In valley or green meadow, to waylay  
Some beauty rare, Calisto, Clymene,  
Daphne, or Semele, Antiopa,<sup>1</sup>  
Or Amymone, Syrinx, many more  
Too long ; then lay'st thy 'scapes on names adored,  
Apollo, Neptune, Jupiter, or Pan, 190  
Satyr, or Fawn, or Silvan ? But these haunts  
Delight not all ; among the sons of men,  
How many have with a smile made small account  
Of beauty and her lures, easily scorned  
All her assaults, on worthier things intent !  
Remember that Pellean conqueror,<sup>2</sup>  
A youth, how all the beauties of the East  
He slightly viewed, and slightly overpassed ;  
How he surnamed of Africa<sup>3</sup> dismissed  
In his prime youth the fair Iberian maid. 200  
For Solomon, he lived at ease, and full  
Of honour, wealth, high fare, aimed not beyond  
Higher design than to enjoy his state ;  
Thence to the bait of women lay exposed :  
But He whom we attempt is wiser far  
Than Solomon, of more exalted mind,  
Made and set wholly on the accomplishment  
Of greatest things ; what woman will you find,  
Though of this age the wonder and the fame,

<sup>1</sup> Women beloved by the heathen deities. Ovid relates these fables. Calisto, Semele, and Antiopa were the loves of Jupiter ; Clymene and Daphne, of Apollo ; Syrinx, of Pan.

<sup>2</sup> Alexander the Great. He was born at Pella, in Macedonia

<sup>3</sup> Scipio Africanus. His generous treatment of his Spanish captive is well known.

## Paradise Regained

On whom His leisure will vouchsafe an eye                   210  
Of fond desire? or should she, confident,  
As sitting queen adored on beauty's throne,  
Descend with all her winning charms begirt  
To enamour, as the zone of Venus once  
Wrought that effect on Jove, so fables tell,  
How would one look from His majestic brow,  
Seated as on the top of virtue's hill,  
Discount'nance her despised, and put to rout  
All her array; her female pride deject,  
Or turn to reverent awe! For beauty stands                   220  
In the admiration only of weak minds  
Led captive. Cease to admire, and all her plumes  
Fall flat and shrink into a trivial toy,  
At every sudden slighting quite abashed.  
Therefore with manlier objects we must try  
His constancy, with such as have more show  
Of worth, of honour, glory, and popular praise;  
Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wrecked;  
Or that which only seems to satisfy  
Lawful desires of nature, not beyond.                   230  
And now I know He hungers, where no food  
Is to be found, in the wide wilderness;  
The rest commit to me, I shall let pass  
No advantage, and His strength as oft assay."

He ceased, and heard their grant in loud acclaim: .  
Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band  
Of spirits, likest to himself in guile,  
To be at hand, and at his beck appear,  
If cause were to unfold some active scene  
Of various persons each to know his part;                   240  
Then to the desert takes with these his flight,  
Where still from shade to shade the Son of God,  
After forty days' fasting, had remained,  
Now hung'ring first, and to Himself thus said:  
"Where will this end? Four times ten days I've passed  
Wand'ring this woody maze, and human food  
Nor tasted, nor had appetite: that fast  
To virtue I impute not, or count part  
Of what I suffer here. If nature need not,

## Paradise Regained

Or GOD support nature without repast 250  
Though needing, what praise is it to endure ?  
But now I feel I hunger, which declares  
Nature hath need of what she asks ; yet GOD  
Can satisfy that need some other way,  
Though hunger still remain : so it remain  
Without this body's wasting, I content me,  
And from the sting of famine fear no harm,  
Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts, that feed  
Me hungering more to do my Father's will."

It was the hour of night, when thus the Son 260  
Communed in silent walk, then laid Him down  
Under the hospitable covert nigh  
Of trees thick interwoven ; there He slept,  
And dreamed, as appetite is wont to dream,  
Of meats and drinks, nature's refreshment sweet.  
Him thought He by the brook of Cherith stood,  
And saw the ravens with their horny beaks<sup>1</sup>  
Food to Elijah bringing even and morn ;  
Though ravenous, taught to abstain from what they  
brought :

He saw the prophet also how he fled 270  
Into the desert, and how there he slept  
Under a juniper : then how, awaked,  
He found his supper on the coals prepared,  
And by the angel was bid rise and eat,  
And eat the second time after repose,  
The strength whereof sufficed him forty days ;  
Sometimes that with Elijah He partook,  
Or as a guest with Daniel at his pulse.<sup>2</sup>  
Thus wore out night, and now the herald lark  
Left his ground-nest, high tow'ring to descry 280  
The Morn's approach, and greet her with his song.  
As lightly from His grassy couch up rose  
Our Saviour, and found all was but a dream ;  
Fasting He went to sleep, and fasting waked.  
Up to a hill anon His steps He reared,  
From whose high top to ken the prospect round,  
If cottage were in view, sheep-cote, or herd ;

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings xvii. 5, 6.

<sup>2</sup> Daniel i. 12.



## Paradise Regained

But cottage, herd, or sheep-cote none He saw,  
Only in a bottom saw a pleasant grove,  
With chaunt of tuncful birds resounding loud. 290  
Thither He bent His way, determin'd there  
To rest at noon, and enter'd soon the shade  
High roofed, and walks beneath, and alleys brown,  
That opened in the midst a woody scene ;  
Nature's own work it seem'd, nature taught art,  
And to a superstitious eye the haunt  
Of wood-gods and wood-nymphs ; He view'd it round,  
When suddenly a man before Him stood,  
Not rustic as before, but seemlier clad,  
As one in city, court, or palace bred, 300  
And with fair speech these words to Him address'd :

“With granted leave officious I return,  
But much more wonder that the Son of God  
In this wild solitude so long should bide,  
Of all things destitute, and well I know,  
Not without hunger. Others of some note,  
As story tells, have trod this wilderness ;  
The fugitive bond-woman with her son,  
Outcast Nebaioth, yet found here relief  
By a providing angel ;<sup>1</sup> all the race 310  
Of Israel here had famished, had not God  
Rained from heav'n manna ; and that prophet bold,  
Native of Thebez,<sup>2</sup> wand'ring here was fed  
Twice by a voice inviting him to eat.<sup>3</sup>  
Of thee these forty days none hath regard,  
Forty and more deserted here indeed.”

To whom thus Jesus : “What conclud'st thou  
hence ?

They all had need ; I, as thou seest, have none.”

“How hast thou hunger then ?” Satan replied.  
“Tell me, if food were now before thee set, 320

<sup>1</sup> Hagar and Ishmael. See Gen. xvi. 14-21. Nebaioth was Ishmael's eldest son, who gave their name to the nation descended from him, the Nebatheans.

<sup>2</sup> Thebez was the birthplace of Elijah.

<sup>3</sup> Hagar, the Israelites, and Elijah did not suffer hunger on the identical spot where our Lord fasted ; but Milton takes in the *whole desert* at one view, not caring to distinguish different spots in one wide tract.—*from* NEWTON.

## Paradise Regained

Would'st thou not eat?" "Thereafter as I like  
The giver," answered Jesus. "Why should that  
Cause thy refusal?" said the subtle fiend.  
"Hast thou not right to all created things?  
Owe not all creatures by just right to thee  
Duty and service, nor to stay till bid,  
But tender all their power? Nor mention I  
Meats by the law unclean, or offered first  
To idols, those young Daniel could refuse;  
Nor proffered by an enemy, though who 330  
Would scruple that, with want oppress? behold  
Nature ashamed, or, better to express,  
Troubled that thou should'st hunger, hath purveyed  
From all the elements her choicest store  
To treat thee as beseems, and as her Lord  
With honour, only deign to sit and eat."

He spake no dream, for, as his words had end,  
Our Saviour, lifting up His eyes, beheld  
In ample space under the broadest shade  
A table richly spread, in regal mode, 340  
With dishes piled, and meats of noblest sort  
And savour; beasts of chase, or fowl of game,  
In pastry built,<sup>1</sup> or from the spit, or boiled,  
Gris-amber<sup>2</sup> steamed; all fish from sea or shore,  
Freshet<sup>3</sup> or purling brook, of shell or fin,  
And exquisitest name, for which was drained  
Pontus, and Lucrine bay,<sup>4</sup> and Afric coast.  
Alas, how simple, to these cates compared,  
Was that crude apple that diverted<sup>5</sup> Eve!  
And at a stately side-board by the wine, 350  
That fragrant smell diffused, in order stood  
Tall stripling youths rich clad, of fairer hue  
Than Ganymed or Hylas,<sup>6</sup> distant more,

<sup>1</sup> Milton alludes to the culinary feats called "subtilties," or "cotillies"—wonderful pastry built in the shape of embattled towers, etc., to a great height.

<sup>2</sup> Ambergris, which was used in Milton's day in cookery.

<sup>3</sup> A stream of fresh water.

<sup>4</sup> Pontus is the Black Sea; the Lucrine bay in Italy

<sup>5</sup> Diverted here means "turned aside," from the Latin *diverto*, to turn aside.

<sup>6</sup> Ganymede was the cupbearer of Jupiter; Hylas drew water for Hercules.

## Paradise Regained

Under the trees now tripped, now solemn stood,  
Nymphs of Diana's train, and Naiades  
With fruits and flowers from Amalthea's horn,  
And ladies of the Hesperides,<sup>1</sup> that seemed  
Fairer than feigned of old, or fabled since  
Of fairy damsels met in forest wide  
By knights of Logres,<sup>2</sup> or of Lyones,<sup>3</sup> 360  
Lancelot, or Pelleas, or Pellenore,<sup>4</sup>  
And all the while harmonious airs were heard  
Of chiming strings or charming pipes, and winds  
Of gentlest gale Arabian odours fanned  
From their soft wings, and Flora's earliest smells.  
Such was the splendour; and the tempter now  
His invitation earnestly renewed:

"What doubts the Son of God to sit and eat?  
These are not fruits forbidden; no interdict  
Defends the touching of these viands pure; 370  
Their taste no knowledge works, at least of evil,  
But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,  
Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.  
All these are spirits of air, and woods, and springs,  
Thy gentle ministers, who come to pay  
Thee homage, and acknowledge thee their Lord:  
What doubt'st thou, Son of God? sit down and eat."

To whom thus Jesus temperately replied:  
"Said'st thou not that to all things I had right?  
And who withholds my pow'r that right to use? 380  
Shall I receive by gift what of my own,  
When and where likes me best, I can command?  
I can at will, doubt not, as soon as thou,

<sup>1</sup> The "ladies of the Hesperides" were famed for their lovely singing. The nymphs of the chase and of the water (the Naiades) appropriately attend such a feast.

<sup>2</sup> Logres, or Logris, is the same as *Loegria*, an ancient name for England. See Holinshed's *History of England*, B. II. 4, 5. Spenser uses this name in his "*Faerie Queene*":—

"And Camber did possess the western quart  
Which Severn now from Logris doth depart."

From DUNSTON'S Note.

<sup>3</sup> Lyones, or Lionesse, was an ancient part of Cornwall between the land and the Scilly Isles, which was submerged by the sea.

<sup>4</sup> Lancelot's name has again become a "household word," through Tennyson's exquisite "*Idylls*." It is scarcely necessary to say that he, Pelleas, and Pellenore were three of Arthur's knights.

## Paradise Regained

Command a table in this wilderness,  
And call swift flights of angels ministrant,  
Arrayed in glory, on my cup to attend :  
Why should'st thou then obtrude this diligence  
In vain, where no acceptance it can find ?  
And with my hunger what hast thou to do ?  
Thy pompous delicacies I contemn, 390  
And count thy specious gifts no gifts, but guiles."

To whom thus answered Satan, malecontent :  
"That I have also power to give, thou seest :  
If of that power I bring thee voluntary  
What I might have bestowed on whom I pleased,  
And rather opportunely in this place  
Chose to impart to thy apparent need,  
Why should'st thou not accept it ? but I see  
What I can do or offer is suspect ;  
Of these things others quickly will dispose, 400  
Whose pains have earned the far-fet<sup>1</sup> spoil." With that  
Both table and provision vanished quite,  
With sound of harpies' wings and talons heard ;  
Only the importune Tempter still remained,  
And with these words his temptation pursued :

"By hunger, that each other creature tames,  
Thou art not to be harmed, therefore not moved ;  
Thy temperance invincible besides,  
For no allurement yields to appetite,  
And all thy heart is set on high designs, 410  
High actions ; but wherewith to be achieved ?  
Great acts require great means of enterprise ;  
Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,  
A carpenter thy father known, thyself  
Bred up in poverty and straits at home,  
Lost in a desert here and hunger-bit.  
Which way, or from what hope, dost thou aspire  
To greatness ? whence authority derivest ?  
What followers, what retinue canst thou gain ?  
Or at thy heels the dizzy multitude, 420  
Longer than thou canst feed them on thy cost ?  
Money brings honour, friends, conquest, and realms.

<sup>1</sup> Far-fetched. "Far-fet" is used by Chaucer and Spenser.

## Paradise Regained

What raised Antipater the Edomite,  
And his son Herod placed on Judah's throne,<sup>1</sup>  
—Thy throne—but gold that got him puissant friends?  
Therefore, if at great things Thou would'st arrive,  
Get riches first, get wealth, and treasure heap,  
Not difficult, if thou hearken to me :  
Riches are mine, fortune is in my hand ;  
They whom I favour thrive in wealth amain, 430  
While virtue, valour, wisdom, sit in want."

To whom thus Jesus patiently replied :  
" Yet wealth without these three is impotent  
To gain dominion, or to keep it gained.  
Witness those ancient empires of the earth,  
In highth of all their flowing wealth dissolved.  
But men endued with these have oft attained  
In lowest poverty to highest deeds :  
Gideon<sup>2</sup> and Jephtha,<sup>3</sup> and the shepherd lad,  
Whose offspring on the throne of Judah sat 440  
So many ages, and shall yet regain  
That scat, and reign in Israel without end.  
Among the heathen (for throughout the world  
To me is not unknown what hath been done  
Worthy of memorial) canst thou not remember  
Quintius,<sup>4</sup> Fabricius,<sup>5</sup> Curius,<sup>6</sup> Regulus?<sup>7</sup>  
For I esteem those names of men so poor,  
Who could do mighty things, and could contemn  
Riches though offered from the hand of kings.  
And what in me seems wanting, but that I 450  
May also in this poverty as soon

<sup>1</sup> See Josephus, B. IV. 26.

<sup>2</sup> Judges vi. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Judges xi. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Quintius Cincinnatus, twice taken from the plough to be Consul and Dictator of Rome. After subduing the enemies of his country, he refused the wealth the people would have lavished on him, and returned to his cottage and humble life.

<sup>5</sup> Fabricius refused to be bribed by all the wealth of Pyrrhus of Epirus to negotiate a peace for that King with the Romans, and died so poor that he was obliged to be buried at the public expense.

<sup>6</sup> Curius Dentatus, when offered a large sum of money by the Samnites, as he sat by the fire roasting turnips with his own hands, refused it, saying that it was not his ambition to be rich, but to command those who were so.

<sup>7</sup> The story of how Regulus kept his word to the Carthaginians, and returned to die in torture rather than break his pledged promise, is well known.

## Paradise Regained

Accomplish what they did, perhaps, and more ?  
Extol not riches then, the toil of fools,  
The wise man's cumbrance, if not snare ; more apt  
To slacken Virtue, and abate her edge,  
Than prompt her to do aught may merit praise.  
What if with like aversion I reject  
Riches and realms ? yet not, for that a crown,  
Golden in show, is but a wreath of thorns,  
Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights 460  
To him who wears the regal diadem,  
When on his shoulders each man's burden lies ;  
For therein stands the office of a king,  
His honour, virtue, merit, and chief praise,  
That for the public all this weight he bears.  
Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules  
Passions, desires, and fears, is more a king ;  
Which ev'ry wise and virtuous man attains :  
And who attains not, ill aspires to rule  
Cities of men, or head-strong multitudes, 470  
Subject himself to anarchy within,  
Or lawless passions in him, which he serves.  
But to guide nations in the way of truth  
By saving doctrine, and from error lead  
To know, and knowing worship God aright,  
Is yet more kingly ; this attracts the soul,  
Governs the inner man, the nobler part ;  
That other o'er the body only reigns,  
And oft by force, which to a gen'rous mind,  
So reigning, can be no sincere delight. 480  
Besides, to give a kingdom hath been thought  
Greater and nobler done, and to lay down  
Far more magnanimous than to assume.  
Riches are needless then, both for themselves,  
And for thy reason why they should be sought—  
To gain a sceptre, ofttest better missed."

# Paradise Regained

## BOOK III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan endeavours to awaken in Jesus a passion for glory, by particularising various great actions performed by persons at an early period of life. Our Lord replies, by showing the vanity of worldly fame, and contrasts with it the true glory of religious patience and virtuous wisdom. Satan justifies the love of glory from the example of God Himself, who requires it from all His creatures. Jesus detects the fallacy of this argument, by showing that as goodness is the true ground on which glory is due to the Great Creator, sinful man can have no right to it. Satan then urges our Lord respecting His claim to the throne of David; he tells Him that the kingdom of Judea, being at that time a province of Rome, cannot be got possession of without much personal exertion on His part, and presses Him to lose no time in beginning to reign. Jesus refers him to the time allotted for this, as for all other things; and, after intimating somewhat respecting His own previous sufferings, asks Satan why he should be solicitous for the exaltation of one whose rising was destined to be his fall. Satan replies that his own desperate state, by excluding all hope, leaves little room for fear; and that as his own punishment was equally doomed, he is not interested in preventing the reign of one from whose apparent benevolence he might rather hope for some interference in his favour. Satan, still supposing that the seeming reluctance of Jesus to be thus advanced might arise from His being unacquainted with the world and its glories, conveys Him to the summit of a high mountain, and from thence shows Him most of the kingdoms of Asia, pointing out to His notice some extraordinary military preparations of the Parthians to resist the incursions of the Scythians. He then informs our Lord that he showed Him this purposely that He might see how necessary military exertions are to retain the possession of kingdoms, as well as to subdue them at first; and advises Him to consider how impossible it was to maintain Judea against two such powerful neighbours as the Romans and Parthians, and how necessary it would be to form an alliance with one or other of them. At the same time he recommends, and engages to secure to Him, that of the Parthians, and tells Him that by this means His power will be defended from anything that Rome or Cæsar might attempt against it; and that He will be able to extend His glory wide, and especially to accomplish what was particularly necessary to make the throne of Judea really the throne of David, the deliverance and restoration of the Ten Tribes, still in a state of captivity. Jesus, having briefly noticed the vanity of military efforts, and the weakness of the arm of flesh, says that when the time comes for ascending His allotted throne, He shall not be slack; He remarks on Satan's extraordinary zeal for the deliverance of the Israelites, to whom he had always shown himself an enemy, and declares their servitude to be the consequence of their idolatry; but adds, that at a future time it may, perhaps, please God to recall them, and restore them to their liberty and native land.

So spake the Son of God, and Satan stood 1  
Awhile as mute, confounded what to say,  
What to reply, confuted, and convinced  
Of his weak arguing and fallacious drift;  
At length, collecting all his serpent wiles,  
With soothing words renewed, Him thus accosts:  
"I see thou know'st what is of use to know,  
What best to say canst say, to do canst do;  
Thy actions to thy words accord, thy words  
To thy large heart give utterance due, thy heart 10

## Paradise Regained

Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.  
Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult,  
Thy counsel would be as the oracle  
Urim and Thummim, those oraculous gems  
On Aaron's breast ; or tongue of seers old  
Infallible : or wert thou sought to deeds  
That might require the array of war, thy skill  
Of conduct would be such, that all the world  
Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist  
In battle, though against thy few in arms. 20  
These godlike virtues wherefore dost thou hide,  
Affecting private life, or more obscure  
In savage wilderness ? wherefore deprive  
All earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself  
The fame and glory, glory the reward  
That sole excites to high attempts, the flame  
Of most erected spirits, most tempered pure  
Ethereal, who all pleasures else despise,  
All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,  
And dignities and powers, all but the highest ? 30  
Thy years are ripe,<sup>1</sup> and over-ripe ; the son  
Of Macedonian Philip<sup>2</sup> had ere these  
Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus held  
At his dispose ; young Scipio<sup>3</sup> had brought down  
The Carthaginian pride ; young Pompey quelled  
The Pontic king, and in triumph had rode.<sup>4</sup>  
Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,  
Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.  
Great Julius, whom now all the world admires,  
The more he grew in years, the more inflamed 40  
With glory, wept that he had lived so long  
Inglorious,<sup>5</sup> but thou yet art not too late."

<sup>1</sup> Our Saviour was then "about thirty years of age." Luke iii. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Alexander the Great.

<sup>3</sup> Scipio was only twenty-nine years old when he conquered the Carthaginians.

<sup>4</sup> Pompey distinguished himself in his youth ; but when he conquered Mithridates he was forty years old.

<sup>5</sup> Julius Cæsar, whilst meditating over a Life of Alexander, was seen to weep by his friends. On being asked the reason of his tears, he replied, "Do you not think I have just cause to weep, when I consider that Alexander at my age had conquered so many nations, and I in all these years have done nothing memorable ?"—PLUTARCH.



## Paradise Regained

To whom our Saviour calmly thus replied :  
"Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth  
For empire's sake, nor empire to affect  
For glory's sake, by all thy argument.  
For what is glory but the blaze of fame,  
The people's praise, if always praise unmixed ?  
And what the people but a herd confused,  
A miscellaneous rabble, who extol 50  
Things vulgar, and, well weighed, scarce worth the  
praise ?  
They praise and they admire they know not what,  
And know not whom, but as one leads the other :  
And what delight to be by such extolled,  
To live upon their tongues and be their talk,  
Of whom to be dispraised were no small praise,  
His lot who dares be singularly good.  
Th' intelligent among them and the wise  
Are few, and glory scarce of few is raised.  
This is true glory and renown, when God, 60  
Looking on the earth, with approbation marks  
The just man, and divulges him through heaven  
To all His angels, who with true applause  
Recount his praises. Thus He did to Job,  
When, to extend his fame through heav'n and earth,  
As thou to thy reproach may'st well remember,  
He asked thee, 'Hast thou seen my servant Job ?'  
Famous he was in heav'n, on earth less known ;  
Where glory is false glory, attributed  
To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame. 70  
They err who count it glorious to subdue  
By conquest far and wide, to overrun  
Large countries, and in field great battles win,  
Great cities by assault. What do these worthies,  
But rob, and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave  
Peaceable nations, neighbouring or remote,  
Made captive, yet deserving freedom more  
Than those their conquerors, who leave behind  
Nothing but ruin wheresoe'er they rove,  
And all the flourishing works of peace destroy, 80  
Then swell with pride, and must be titled gods,

## Paradise Regained

Great benefactors of mankind, deliverers,  
Worshipped with temple, priest, and sacrifice?  
One is the son of Jove, of Mars the other ;  
Till conqueror death discover them scarce men,  
Rolling in brutish vices, and deformed,  
Violent or shameful death their due reward.  
But if there be in glory aught of good,  
It may by means far different be attained,  
Without ambition, war, or violence ; 90  
By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,  
By patience, temperance. I mention still  
Him whom thy wrongs, with saintly patience borne,  
Made famous in a land and times obscure ;  
Who names not now with honour patient Job ?  
Poor Socrates—who next more memorable ?—  
By what he taught and suffered for so doing,  
For truth's sake suffering death unjust, lives now  
Equal in fame to proudest conquerors.  
Yet if for fame and glory aught be done, 100  
Aught suffered ; if young African<sup>1</sup> for fame  
His wasted country freed from Punic rage,  
The deed becomes unpraised, the man at least,  
And loses, though but verbal, his reward.  
Shall I seek glory then, as vain men seek,  
Oft not deserved ? I seek not mine, but His  
Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am.”  
To whom the Tempter murmuring thus replied :  
“Think not so slight of glory, therein least  
Resembling thy great Father : He seeks glory, 110  
And for His glory all things made, all things  
Orders and governs ; nor content in heav'n,  
By all His angels glorified, requires  
Glory from men, from all men good or bad,  
Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption ;  
Above all sacrifice or hallowed gift  
Glory He requires, and glory He receives  
Promiscuous from all nations, Jew, or Greek,  
Or barbarous, nor exception hath declared :  
From us, His foes pronounced, glory He exacts.” 120

<sup>1</sup> Scipio Africanus.

## Paradise Regained

To whom our Saviour fervently replied :  
" And reason, since His Word all things produced,  
Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,  
But to show forth His goodness, and impart  
His good communicable to every soul  
Freely ; of whom what could He less expect  
Than glory and benediction, that is, thanks,  
The slightest, easiest, readiest recompense  
From them who could return Him nothing else,  
And not returning that would likeliest render 130  
Contempt instead, dishonour, obloquy ?  
Hard recompense, unsuitable return  
For so much good, so much beneficence.  
But why should man seek glory, who of his own  
Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs  
But condemnation, ignominy, and shame ?  
Who for so many benefits received  
Turned recreant to GOD, ingrate and false,  
And so of all true good himself despoiled,  
Yet, sacrilegious, to himself would take 140  
That which to GOD alone of right belongs :  
Yet so much bounty is in GOD, such grace,  
That who advance His glory, not their own,  
Them He Himself to glory will advance."  
So spake the Son of GOD ; and here again  
Satan had not to answer, but stood struck  
With guilt of his own sin, for he himself  
Insatiable of glory had lost all ;  
Yet of another plea bethought him soon.  
" Of glory, as thou wilt," said he, " so deem ; 150  
Worth or not worth the seeking, let it pass.  
But to a kingdom thou art born, ordained  
To sit upon thy father David's throne,  
By mother's side thy father ; though thy right  
Be now in powerful hands, that will not part  
Easily from possession won with arms.  
Judæa now and all the promised land,  
Reduced a province under Roman yoke,  
Obeys Tiberius ; nor is always ruled  
With temperate sway : oft have they violated 160

## Paradise Regained

The temple,<sup>1</sup> oft the law with foul affronts,  
Abominations rather, as did once  
Antiochus :<sup>2</sup> and think'st thou to regain  
Thy right by sitting still or thus retiring?  
So did not Machabeus :<sup>3</sup> he indeed  
Retired unto the desert, but with arms ;  
And o'er a mighty king so oft prevailed,  
That by strong hand his family obtained,  
Though priests, the crown, and David's throne  
usurped,  
With Modin and her suburbs once content. 170  
If kingdom move thee not, let move thee zeal  
And duty ; zeal and duty are not slow ;  
But on occasion's forelock watchful wait.  
They themselves rather are occasion best,  
Zeal of thy father's house, duty to free  
Thy country from her heathen servitude ;  
So shalt thou best fulfil, best verify  
The prophets old, who sung thy endless reign ;  
The happier reign the sooner it begins ;  
Reign then ; what canst thou better do the while ? ”  
To whom our Saviour answer thus returned : { 180  
“ All things are best fulfilled in their due time,  
And time there is for all things, Truth hath said :<sup>4</sup>  
If of my reign prophetic writ hath told  
That it shall never end, so when begin  
The Father in His purpose hath decreed,  
He in whose hands all times and seasons roll.<sup>5</sup>  
What if He hath decreed that I shall first  
Be tried in humble state and things adverse,  
By tribulations, injuries, insults, 190  
Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,  
Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting,  
Without distrust or doubt, that He may know  
What I can suffer, how obey ? Who best  
Can suffer, best can do ; best reign, who first

<sup>1</sup> Pompey, with several of his officers, entered the Holy of Holies, where none were allowed to step except the high priest once a year, on the great day of expiation.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Maccab. v.

<sup>3</sup> Judas Maccabæus. Modin was the inheritance of the Maccabees.

<sup>4</sup> Eccles. iii. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Acts i. 7 ; Mark xii. 32.

## Paradise Regained

Well hath obeyed : just trial, ere I merit  
My exaltation without change or end.  
But what concerns it thee when I begin  
My everlasting kingdom ? why art thou  
Solicitous ? what moves thy inquisition ? 200  
Know'st thou not that my rising is thy fall,  
And my promotion will be thy destruction ? ”

To whom the Tempter, inly racked, replied :  
“ Let that come when it comes ; all hope is lost  
Of my reception into grace : what worse ?  
For where no hope is left, is left no fear :  
If there be worse, the expectation more  
Of worse torments me than the feeling can ;  
I would be at the worst, worst is my port,  
My harbour, and my ultimate repose ; 210  
The end I would attain, my final good.

My error was my error, and my crime  
My crime ; whatever for itself condemned,  
And will alike be punished, whether thou  
Reign or reign not ; though to that gentle brow  
Willingly I could fly, and hope thy reign,  
From that placid aspect and meek regard,  
Rather than aggravate my evil state,  
Would stand between me and thy Father's ire,  
Whose ire I dread more than the fire of hell, 220  
A shelter, and a kind of shading cool  
Interposition, as a summer's cloud.

If I then to the worst that can be haste,  
Why move thy feet so slow to what is best ?  
Happiest both to thyself and all the world,  
That thou who worthiest art should'st be their King !  
Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detained  
Of the enterprise so hazardous and high :  
No wonder, for though in thee be united  
What of perfection can in Man be found, 230  
Or human nature can receive, consider  
Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent  
At home, scarce viewed the Galilean towns,  
And once a year Jerusalem,<sup>1</sup> few days’

<sup>1</sup> At the Passover.

## Paradise Regained

Short sojourn ; and what thence couldst thou observe ?  
The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,  
Empires, and monarchs, and their radiant courts,  
Best school of best experience, quickest insight  
In all things that to greatest actions lead.

'The wisest, unexperienced, will be ever 240  
'Timorous and loth, with novice modesty,  
As he who seeking asses found a kingdom,<sup>1</sup>  
Irresolute, unhardy, unadventurous :  
But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit  
Those rudiments, and see before thine eyes  
The monarchies of the earth, their pomp and state,  
Sufficient introduction to inform  
Thee, of thyself so apt, in regal arts  
And regal mysteries, that thou may'st know  
How best their opposition to withstand." 250

With that, (such power was given him then,) he took  
The Son of God up to a mountain high.  
It was a mountain at whose verdant feet  
A spacious plain outstretched in circuit wide  
Lay pleasant ; from his side two rivers flowed,  
The one winding, the other straight, and left between  
Fair champaign with less rivers interveined,  
'Then meeting joined their tribute to the sea :  
Fertile of corn the glebe, of oil, and wine ; [260  
With herds the pastures thronged, with flocks the hills ;  
Huge cities and high towered, that well might seem  
The seats of mightiest monarchs ; and so large  
The prospect was, that here and there was room  
For barren desert, fountainless and dry.  
To this high mountain top the Tempter brought  
Our Saviour, and new train of words began :

" Well have we speeded, and o'er hill and dale.  
Forest and field and flood, temples and towers,  
Cut shorter many a league ; here thou behold'st  
Assyria and her empire's ancient bounds, 270  
Araxes, and the Caspian lake, thence on  
As far as Indus east, Euphrates west,  
And oft beyond ; to south the Persian bay,

<sup>1</sup> Saul. See 1 Sam. ix. 20, 21.

# Paradise Regained

And inaccessible the Arabian drought :<sup>1</sup>  
 Here Nineveh, of length within her wall  
 Several days' journey, built by Ninus old,  
 Of that first golden monarchy the seat,  
 And seat of Salmanassar,<sup>2</sup> whose success  
 Israel in long captivity still mourns ;  
 There Babylon, the wonder of all tongues, 280  
 As ancient, but rebuilt by him<sup>3</sup> who twice  
 Judah and all thy father David's house  
 Led captive, and Jerusalem laid waste,  
 Till Cyrus set them free ; Persepolis  
 His city there thou seest, and Bactra there ;  
 Ecbatana her structure vast there shows,  
 And Hecatompylos<sup>4</sup> her hundred gates ;  
 There Susa by Choaspes, amber stream,  
 The drink of none but kings ;<sup>5</sup> of later fame,  
 Built by Emathian<sup>6</sup> or by Parthian hands, 290  
 The great Seleucia, Nisibis,<sup>7</sup> and there  
 Artaxata, Teredon, Ctesiphon,  
 Turning with easy eye thou may'st behold.  
 All these the Parthian, now some ages past,  
 By great Arsaces led, who founded first  
 That empire, under his dominion holds,  
 From the luxurious kings of Antioch won.  
 And just in time thou comest to have a view  
 Of his great power ; for now the Parthian king  
 In Ctesiphon hath gathered all his host<sup>8</sup> 300  
 Against the Scythian, whose incursions wild  
 Have wasted Sogdiana ; to her aid

<sup>1</sup> A figure of speech for the desert.

<sup>2</sup> Shalmaneser, in the reign of Hezekiah, king of Judah, carried away captive to Assyria the ten tribes of Israel.

<sup>3</sup> Nebuchadnezzar.

<sup>4</sup> Capital of Parthia, so called from its hundred gates.

<sup>5</sup> Modern research confirms this fact in a singular manner. "It is a fact worthy of remark," says Buckingham, "that at this moment, while all the inhabitants of Kermanshah drink of the stream of Aub Dedoong, and of the spring called Aubi-i-Hassan-Khan, the *King's son alone* has the water for himself and his harem brought from the stream of the Kara Soo (the Choaspes). We drank of it ourselves as we passed, and from its superiority to all the waters of which we had tasted since leaving the banks of the Tigris, the draught was delicious enough to be sweet even to the palsied taste of royalty itself."

<sup>6</sup> Macedonia.

<sup>7</sup> Also named Antiochus.

<sup>8</sup> Ctesiphon was the place at which the Parthian kings always assembled their forces.

## Paradise Regained

He marches now in haste ; see, though from far,  
His thousands, in what martial equipage  
They issue forth, steel bows and shafts their arms,  
Of equal dread in flight <sup>1</sup> or in pursuit ;  
All horsemen, in which fight they most excel :  
See how in warlike muster they appear,  
In rhombs, and wedges, and half-moons, and wings."

He looked, and saw what numbers numberless 310  
The city gates outpoured, light armèd troops  
In coats of mail and military pride ;  
In mail their horses clad, yet fleet and strong,  
Prancing their riders bore, the flower and choice  
Of many provinces from bound to bound ;  
From Arachosia, from Candaor east,  
And Margiana to the Hyrcanian cliffs  
Of Caucasus, and dark Iberian dales,<sup>2</sup>  
From Atropatia and the neighbouring plains  
Of Adiabene, Media, and the south 320  
Of Susiana, to Balsara's<sup>3</sup> haven.

He saw them in their forms of battle ranged,  
How quick they wheeled, and flying behind them shot  
Sharp sleet of arrowy showers against the face  
Of their pursuers, and overcame by flight ;  
The field all iron cast a gleaming brown :  
Nor wanted clouds of foot, nor on each horn  
Cuirassiers all in steel for standing fight,  
Chariots or elephants endorsed with towers  
Of archers ; nor of labouring pioneers 330  
A multitude, with spades and axes armed,  
To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,  
Or, where plain was, raise hill, or overlay  
With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke ;  
Mules after these, camels and dromedaries,  
And waggons fraught with utensils of war.  
Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,  
When Agrican<sup>4</sup> with all his northern powers

<sup>1</sup> They discharged their arrows as they fled.

<sup>2</sup> Said to be "dark" from their thick forests.

<sup>3</sup> The Persian Gulf, so called from Bussora, or Balsera, the port situated on it.

<sup>4</sup> Agricano, one of the heroes of Boiardo's "Orlando Innamorato"



# Paradise Regained

Besieged Albracca, as romances tell,  
 The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win 340  
 The fairest of her sex, Angelica,  
 His daughter, sought by many prowest<sup>1</sup> knights,  
 Both Paynim and the peers of Charlemain.  
 Such and so numerous was their chivalry ;  
 At sight whereof the fiend yet more presumed,  
 And to our Saviour thus his words renewed :  
 " That thou may'st know I seek not to engage  
 Thy virtue, and not every way secure  
 On no slight grounds thy safety, hear and mark  
 To what end I have brought thee hither, and shown  
 All this fair sight : thy kingdom, though foretold [350  
 By prophet or by angel, unless thou  
 Endeavour, as thy father David did,  
 Thou never shalt obtain ; prediction still  
 In all things, and all men, supposes means ;  
 Without means used, what it predicts revokes.  
 But say thou wert possessed of David's throne  
 By free consent of all, none opposite,  
 Samaritan or Jew ; how could'st thou hope  
 Long to enjoy it quiet and secure, 360  
 Between two such enclosing enemies,  
 Roman and Parthian ? therefore one of these  
 Thou must make sure thy own ; the Parthian first,  
 By my advice, as nearer, and of late  
 Found able by invasion to annoy  
 Thy country, and captive lead away her kings,  
 Antigonus and old Hyrcanus,<sup>2</sup> bound,  
 Maugre the Roman. It shall be my task  
 To render thee the Parthian at dispose : [370  
 Choose which thou wilt, by conquest or by league.

Angelica, his daughter was fabled to be the most beautiful woman of the age, and, like Helen of Troy, a fair mischief, who gave rise to continual strife. She reappears in Ariosto's "Orlando Furioso." Orlando goes mad for love of her. We must remember, when we marvel somewhat at this blending of truth and fiction, that the poems of Ariosto and Boiardo had probably been the delight of Milton's youth ; and that he is alluding to the greatest poets of his own age, not merely to romances.

<sup>1</sup> Prowest is the superlative of *prow*, from the old French *preux*, valiant.

<sup>2</sup> The Parthians led Hyrcanus away captive to Seleucia when he was seventy years old. See JOSEPHUS.

## Paradise Regained

By him thou shalt regain, without him not,  
That which alone can truly reinstall thee  
In David's royal seat, his true successor ;  
Deliverance of thy brethren, those ten tribes  
Whose offspring in his territory yet serve  
In Habor, and among the Medes dispersed ;  
Ten sons of Jacob, two of Joseph, lost  
Thus long from Israel, serving, as of old  
Their fathers in the land of Egypt served,  
This offer sets before thee to deliver. 380  
These, if from servitude thou shalt restore  
To their inheritance, then, nor till then,  
Thou on the throne of David in full glory,  
From Egypt to Euphrates and beyond,  
Shalt reign, and Rome or Cæsar not need fear."

To whom our Saviour answered thus, unmoved :  
" Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm  
And fragile arms, much instrument of war,  
Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,  
Before mine eyes thou hast set, and in my ear 390  
Vented much policy, and projects deep  
Of enemies, of aids, battles, and leagues,  
Plausible to the world, to me worth nought.  
Means I must use, thou say'st ; prediction else  
Will unpredict and fail me of the throne.  
My time, I told thee, and that time for thee  
Were better farthest off, is not yet come ;  
When that comes, think not thou to find me slack  
On my part aught endeavouring, or to need  
Thy politic maxims, or that cumbersome 400  
Luggage of war there shown me, argument  
Of human weakness rather than of strength.  
My brethren, as thou call'st them, those ten tribes,  
I must deliver, if I mean to reign  
David's true heir, and his full sceptre sway  
To just extent over all Israel's sons.  
But whence to thee this zeal, where was it then  
For Israel, or for David, or his throne,  
When thou stood'st up his tempter to the pride  
Of numb'ring Israel, which cost the lives 410

## Paradise Regained

Of threescore and ten thousand Israelites  
By three days' pestilence?<sup>1</sup> such was thy zeal  
To Israel then, the same that now to me.  
As for those captive tribes, themselves were they  
Who wrought their own captivity, fell off  
From God to worship calves, the deities  
Of Egypt, Baal next, and Ashtaroth,  
And all th' idolatries of heathen round,  
Besides their other worse than heathenish crimes;  
Nor in the land of their captivity 420  
Humbled themselves, or penitent besought  
The God of their forefathers; but so died  
Impenitent, and left a race behind  
Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce  
From Gentiles, but by circumcision vain,  
And God with idols in their worship joined.  
Should I of these the liberty regard,  
Who, freed as to their ancient patrimony,  
Unhumbled, unrepentant, unreformed,  
Headlong would follow; and to their gods perhaps 430  
Of Bethel and of Dan? no; let them serve  
Their enemies, who serve idols with God.  
Yet He at length, time to Himself best known,  
Rememb'ring Abraham, by some wondrous call  
May bring them back repentant and sincere,  
And at their passing cleave the Assyrian flood,  
While to their native land with joy they haste,  
As the Red Sea and Jordan once He cleft,  
When to the promised land their fathers passed;  
To His due time and providence I leave them." 440  
So spake Israel's true King, and to the fiend  
Made answer meet, that made void all his wiles.  
So fares it when with truth falsehood contends.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Chron. xxi. 1.

# Paradise Regained

## BOOK IV.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, persisting in the temptation of our Lord, shows Him Imperial Rome in its greatest splendour, and tells Him that He might with the greatest ease expel Tiberius, restore the Romans to their liberty, and make Himself master, not only of the Roman Empire, but, by so doing, of the whole world, and inclusively of the throne of David. Our Lord, in reply, expresses His contempt of grandeur and worldly power, and notices the luxury, vanity, and profligacy of the Romans, declaring how little they merited to be restored to that liberty which they had lost by their misconduct. Satan, now desperate to enhance the value of his proffered gifts, professes that the only terms on which he will bestow them, are our Saviour's falling down and worshipping him. Our Lord expresses a firm but temperate indignation at such a proposition, and rebukes the Tempter. Satan then assumes a new ground of temptation, and, proposing to Jesus the intellectual gratifications of wisdom and knowledge, points out to Him the celebrated seat of ancient learning, Athens; its schools, and other various resorts of learned teachers and their disciples. Jesus replies, by showing the vanity and insufficiency of the boasted heathen philosophy. Satan, irritated at the failure of all his attempts, upbraids the indiscretion of our Saviour in rejecting his offers; and, having foretold the sufferings that our Lord was to undergo, carries Him back to the wilderness, and leaves Him there. Night comes on; Satan raises a tremendous storm, and attempts farther to alarm Jesus with frightful dreams and terrific threatening spectres. A calm, bright, beautiful morning succeeds to the horrors of the night. Satan again presents himself to our Blessed Lord, and takes occasion once more to insult Him with an account of the sufferings which He was certainly to undergo. This only draws from our Lord a brief rebuke. Satan, now at the height of his desperation, confesses that he had frequently watched Jesus from His birth, purposely to discover if He was the Messiah, and assiduously followed Him, in hopes of gaining some advantage over Him, which would most effectually prove that He was not really that Divine Person destined to be his "fatal enemy." In this he acknowledges that he has hitherto failed; but still determines to make one more trial. Accordingly, he conveys Him to the Temple at Jerusalem; and, placing Him on a pointed eminence, requires Him to prove His divinity, either by standing there, or casting Himself down with safety. Our Lord reproves the Tempter, and manifests His own divinity by standing on this dangerous point. Satan, amazed and terrified, instantly falls, and repairs to his infernal compeers to relate the bad success of his enterprise. Angels convey our Blessed Lord to a beautiful valley, and, while they minister to Him a repast of celestial food, celebrate His victory in a triumphant hymn.

PERPLEXED and troubled at his bad success  
The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,  
Discovered in his fraud, thrown from his hope  
So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric  
That sleeked his tongue, and won so much on Eve,  
So little here, nay lost: but Eve was Eve;  
This far his over-match, who, self-deceived  
And rash, beforehand had no better weighed  
The strength he was to cope with, or his own:  
But as a man who had been matchless held  
In cunning, over-reached where least he thought,

## Paradise Regained

To salve his credit, and for very spite,  
Still will be tempting him who foils him still,  
And never cease, though to his shame the more ;  
Or as a swarm of flies in vintage time,  
About the wine-press where sweet must is poured,  
Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound ;  
Or surging waves against a solid rock,  
Though all to shivers dashed, the assault renew,  
Vain batt'ry, and in froth or bubbles end : 20  
So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse  
Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,  
Yet gives not o'er, though desperate of success,  
And his vain importunity pursues.  
He brought our Saviour to the western side  
Of that high mountain, whence He might behold  
Another plain,<sup>1</sup> long, but in breadth not wide,  
Washed by the southern sea, and on the north  
To equal length backed with a ridge of hills,<sup>2</sup>  
That screened the fruits of the earth and seats of men  
From cold Septentrion blasts, thence in the midst [30  
Divided by a river, of whose banks  
On each side an imperial city stood,  
With towers and temples proudly elevate  
On seven small hills, with palaces adorned,  
Porches and theatres, baths, aqueducts,  
Statues and trophies, and triumphal arcs,  
Gardens and groves, presented to His eyes,  
Above the highth of mountains interposed :  
By what strange parallax or optic skill 40  
Of vision, multiplied through air, or glass  
Of telescope, were curious to enquire :  
And now the Tempter thus his silence broke :  
"The city which thou seest no other deem  
Than great and glorious Rome, queen of the earth,  
So far renowned, and with the spoils enriched  
Of nations ; there the Capitol thou seest  
Above the rest lifting his stately head  
On the Tarpeian rock, her citadel  
Impregnable, and there mount Palatine, 50

<sup>1</sup> Italy, washed by the Mediterranean.

<sup>2</sup> The Apennines.

## Paradise Regained

Th' imperial palace, compass huge, and high  
 The structure, skill of noblest architects,  
 With gilded battlements conspicuous far,  
 Turrets, and terraces, and glittering spires.  
 Many a fair edifice besides, more like  
 Houses of gods, so well I have disposed  
 My aery microscope, thou mayst behold  
 Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs,  
 Carved work, the hand of famed artificers  
 In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold. 60  
 Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see  
 What conflux issuing forth, or ent'ring in,  
 Prætors, proconsuls to their provinces  
 Hasting, or on return, in robes of state ;  
 Lictors and rods, the ensigns of their power,  
 Legions and cohorts, turms<sup>1</sup> of horse and wings ;  
 Or embassies from regions far remote,  
 In various habits, on the Appian road,  
 Or on th' Emilian,<sup>2</sup> some from farthest south,  
 Syenc,<sup>3</sup> and where the shadow both way falls, 70  
 Meroë, Nilotic isle, and more to west,  
 The realm of Bocchus<sup>4</sup> to the Black-moor sea ;  
 From the Asian kings and Parthian, among these,  
 From India and the golden Chersonese,  
 And utmost Indian isle Taprobane,  
 Dusk facès with white silken turbans wreathed ;  
 From Gallia, Gades,<sup>5</sup> and the British west ;  
 Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians north  
 Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.<sup>6</sup>  
 All nations now to Rome obedience pay, 80  
 To Rome's great emperor, whose wide domain  
 In ample territory, wealth, and power,  
 Civility of manners, arts, and arms,  
 And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer

<sup>1</sup> Troops of horse, a word coined from the Latin *turma*. "Equitum turma."—VIRG. *Æn.* V. 360. - NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> The Appian road led towards the south of Italy, and the Emilian towards the north.

<sup>3</sup> Put for the farthest point of the Roman Empire.

<sup>4</sup> Mauritania.

<sup>5</sup> Cadiz, in Spain, the extreme west of the Roman Empire.

<sup>6</sup> Palus Mæotis, or Black Sea.

## Paradise Regained

Before the Parthian ; these two thrones except,  
The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,  
Shared among petty kings too far removed.  
These having shown thee, I have shown thee all  
The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.  
This emperor<sup>1</sup> hath no son, and now is old, 90  
Old and lascivious, and from Rome retired  
To Capreæ, an island small but strong  
On the Campanian shore, with purpose there  
His horrid lusts in private to enjoy,  
Committing to a wicked favourite<sup>2</sup>  
All public cares, and yet of him suspicious,  
Hated of all and hating : with what ease,  
Indued with regal virtues as thou art,  
Appearing and beginning noble deeds,  
Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne, 100  
Now made a sty, and, in his place ascending,  
A victor people free from servile yoke?  
And with my help thou may'st ; to me the power  
Is given, and by that right I give it thee.  
Aim therefore at no less than all the world ;  
Aim at the highest ; without the highest attained  
Will be for thee no sitting, or not long,  
On David's throne, be prophesied what will."

To whom the Son of GOD unmoved replied :  
" Nor doth this grandeur and majestic show 110  
Of luxury, though called magnificence,  
More than of arms before, allure mine eye,  
Much less my mind ; though thou should'st add to tell  
Their sumptuous gluttonies and gorgeous feasts  
On citron tables<sup>3</sup> or Atlantic stone,  
For I have also heard, perhaps have read,  
Their wines of Setia, Cales, and Falerne,<sup>4</sup>  
Chios, and Crete,<sup>5</sup> and how they quaff in gold,  
Crystal and myrrhine cups embossed with gems

<sup>1</sup> Tiberius.

<sup>2</sup> Sejanus.

<sup>3</sup> Tables of citron-wood were very highly valued by the Romans. It grew on Mount Atlas. Atlantic stone was probably marble from Numidia. Pliny, in his *Hist. Nat.* lib. v. c. i., says that the woods of Atlas were explored for citron-wood.

<sup>4</sup> These were famous Campanian wines. Falerian was the best wine they possessed

<sup>5</sup> Greek wines.

## Paradise Regained

And studs of pearl, to me should'st tell who thirst 120  
And hunger still. Then embassies thou show'st  
From nations far and nigh. What honour that,  
But tedious waste of time to sit and hear  
So many hollow compliments and lies,  
Outlandish flatteries? Then proceed'st to talk  
Of the emperor, how easily subdued,  
How gloriously! I shall, thou say'st, expel  
A brutish monster: what if I withal  
Expel a devil who first made him such?  
Let his tormentor conscience find him out; 130  
For him I was not sent, nor yet to free  
That people, victor once, now vile and base,  
Deservedly made vassal, who, once just,  
Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquered well,  
But govern ill the nations under yoke,  
Peeling their provinces; exhausted all  
By lust and rapine; first ambitious grown  
Of triumph, that insulting vanity;  
Then cruel, by their sports to blood inured  
Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts exposed; 140  
Luxurious by their wealth, and greedier still,  
And from the daily scene effeminate.  
What wise and valiant man would seek to free  
These thus degenerate, by themselves enslaved,  
Or could of inward slaves make outward free?  
Know therefore, when my season comes to sit  
On David's throne, it shall be like a tree  
Spreading and overshadowing all the earth,  
Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash  
All monarchies besides throughout the world, 150  
And of my kingdom there shall be no end.  
Means there shall be to this, but what the means,  
Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell."

To whom the Tempter impudent replied:  
"I see all offers made by me how slight  
Thou valu'st, because offered, and reject'st,  
Nothing will please the difficult and nice,  
Or nothing more than still to contradict.  
On the other side know also thou, that I



## Paradise Regained

On what I offer set as high esteem, 160  
Nor what I part with mean to give for nought ;  
All these which in a moment thou behold'st,  
The kingdoms of the world, to thee I give ;  
For, giv'n to me, I give to whom I please,  
No trifle ; yet with this reserve, not else,  
On this condition, if thou wilt fall down,  
And worship me as thy superior lord,  
Easily done, and hold them all of me :  
For what can less so great a gift deserve ?”

Whom thus our Saviour answered with disdain : 170  
“ I never liked thy talk, thy offers less ;  
Now both abhor, since thou hast dared to utter  
The abominable terms, impious condition ;  
But I endure the time, till which expired,  
Thou hast permission on me. It is written,  
The first of all commandments, ‘Thou shalt worship  
The Lord thy God, and only Him shalt serve’ ;  
And dar'st thou to the Son of God propound  
To worship thee, accurst ? now more accurst  
For this attempt, bolder than that on Eve, 180  
And more blasphemous ; which expect to rue.  
‘The kingdoms of the world to thee were giv'n,’  
Permitted rather, and by thee usurped,  
Other donation none thou canst produce :  
If giv'n, by whom but by the King of kings,  
God over all Supreme ? if given to thee,  
By thee how fairly is the Giver now  
Repaid ? but gratitude in thee is lost  
Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame,  
As offer them to me the Son of God, 190  
To me my own, on such abhorrèd pact,  
That I fall down and worship thee as God ?  
Get thee behind me ! plain thou now appear'st  
That evil one, Satan for ever damned.”

To whom the fiend with fear abashed replied :  
“ Be not so sore offended, Son of God,  
(Though sons of God both angels are and men,)  
If I, to try whether in higher sort  
Than these thou bear'st that title, have proposed

## Paradise Regained

What both from men and angels I receive, 200  
Tetrarchs of fire, air, flood, and on the earth  
Nations besides from all the quartered winds,  
God of this world invoked and world beneath ;  
Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold  
To me so fatal, me it most concerns.  
The trial hath indamaged thee no way,  
Rather more honour left and more esteem ;  
Me nought advantaged, missing what I aimed.  
'Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,  
The kingdoms of this world ; I shall no more 210  
Advise thee ; gain them as thou canst, or not.  
And thou thyself seem'st otherwise inclined  
Than to a worldly crown, addicted more  
To contemplation and profound dispute ;  
As by that early action may be judged,  
When, slipping from thy mother's eye, thou went'st  
Alone into the Temple, there wast found  
Amongst the gravest Rabbies, disputant  
On points and questions fitting Moses' chair,  
Teaching, not taught. The childhood shows the man,  
As morning shows the day. Be famous then [220  
By wisdom ; as thy empire must extend,  
So let extend thy mind o'er all the world  
In knowledge, all things in it comprehend :  
All knowledge is not couched in Moses' law,  
The Pentateuch, or what the prophets wrote ;  
The Gentiles also know, and write, and teach  
To admiration, led by nature's light ;  
And with the Gentiles much thou must converse,  
Ruling them by persuasion as thou mean'st. 230  
Without their learning, how wilt thou with them,  
Or they with thee, hold conversation meet ?  
How wilt thou reason with them ? how refute  
Their idolisms, traditions, paradoxes ?  
Error by his own arms is best evinced.  
Look once more, ere we leave this specular mount,  
Westward, much nearer by south-west, behold  
Where on the Ægean shore a city stands,  
Built nobly, pure the air, and light the soil,

## Paradise Regained

Athens the eye of Greece,<sup>1</sup> mother of arts 240  
And eloquence, native to famous wits,  
Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,  
City or suburban, studious walks and shades ;  
See there the olive grove of Academe,<sup>2</sup>  
Plato's retirement, where the Attic bird<sup>3</sup>  
Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long ;  
There flow'ry hill Hymettus with the sound  
Of bees' industrious murmur oft invites  
To studious musing ; there Ilissus rolls  
His whispering stream ; within the walls then view 250  
The schools of ancient sages ; his<sup>4</sup> who bred  
Great Alexander to subdue the world :  
Lyceum there, and painted Stoa next.  
There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power  
Of harmony, in tones and numbers hit  
By voice or hand, and various-measured verse,  
Æolian charms<sup>5</sup> and Dorian lyric odes,  
And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,  
Blind Melesigenes,<sup>6</sup> thence Homer called,  
Whose poem Phœbus challenged for his own. 260  
Thence what the lofty grave tragedians taught  
In chorus or iambick, teachers best  
Of moral prudence, with delight received,  
In brief sententious precepts, while they treat  
Of fate, and chance, and change in human life ;  
High actions and high passions best describing.  
Thence to the famous orators repair,  
Those ancient, whose resistless eloquence  
Wielded at will that fierce democracy,  
Shook the Arsenal, and fulminated over Greece, 270

<sup>1</sup> So called by Demosthenes.

<sup>2</sup> "A gymnasium, or place of exercise," in the suburbs of Athens, surrounded by woods. It took its name from Academus, one of the heroes. In this Academe, or Academy, Plato taught.

<sup>3</sup> The nightingale ; *i.e.* Philomela, the daughter of Pandion, King of Athens, was changed into a nightingale.

<sup>4</sup> Aristotle. The Lyceum was the school of Aristotle. Stoa was the school of Zeno, whose disciples were hence called Stoics. This Stoa, or *portico*, was adorned with a variety of paintings.

<sup>5</sup> Æolian charms. The poems of Alcæus and Sappho ; the Dorian lyric odes were those of Pindar. See NEWTON.

<sup>6</sup> Homer was so called by his mother, because he was born near the river Meles.

## Paradise Regained

To Macedon, and Artaxerxes' throne.  
To sage philosophy next lend thine ear,  
From heav'n descended to the low-rooft house  
Of Socrates ; see there his tenement,  
Whom, well inspired, the oracle pronounced  
Wisest of men ; from whose mouth issued forth  
Mellifluous streams that watered all the schools  
Of Academics <sup>1</sup> old and new, with those  
Surnamed Peripatetics,<sup>2</sup> and the sect  
Epicurean, and the Stoic severe ; 280  
These here revolve, or, as thou lik'st, at home,  
Till time mature thee to a kingdom's weight ;  
These rules will render thee a king complete  
Within thyself, much more with empire joined."

To whom our Saviour sagely thus replied :  
"Think not but that I know these things, or think  
I know them not ; not therefore am I short  
Of knowing what I ought : he who receives  
Light from above, from the fountain of light,  
No other doctrine needs, though granted true : 290  
But these are false, or little else but dreams,  
Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.  
The first and wisest of them all <sup>3</sup> professed  
To know this only, that he nothing knew ;  
The next to fabling fell and smooth conceits ; <sup>4</sup>  
A third sort doubted all things,<sup>5</sup> though plain sense ;  
Others in virtue placed felicity,  
But virtue joined with riches and long life ;  
In corporal pleasure he and careless ease ; <sup>6</sup>  
The Stoic last in philosophic pride, 300  
By him called virtue ; and his virtuous man,  
Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing,  
Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,  
As fearing God nor man, contemning all  
Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life,

<sup>1</sup> The old Academic philosophers were those who followed Plato ; the new, those who followed Carneades.

<sup>2</sup> Pupils of Aristotle, so called because they taught while walking.

<sup>3</sup> Socrates.

<sup>4</sup> Plato.

<sup>5</sup> The Pyrrhonians, or disciples of Pyrrho, who were sceptics.

<sup>6</sup> Epicurus.

## Paradise Regained

Which when he lists he leaves, or boasts he can,  
For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,  
Or subtle shifts conviction to evade.  
Alas ! what can they teach and not mislead,  
Ignorant of themselves, of God much more, 310  
And how the world began, and how man fell,  
Degraded by himself, on grace depending ?  
Much of the soul they talk, but all awry,  
And in themselves seek virtue, and to themselves  
All glory arrogate, to God give none ;  
Rather accuse Him under usual names,  
Fortune and fate, as one regardless quite  
Of mortal things. Who therefore seeks in these  
True wisdom, finds her not, or by delusion  
Far worse, her false resemblance only meets, 320  
An empty cloud. However, many books,  
Wise men have said, are wearisome ;<sup>1</sup> who reads  
Incessantly, and to his reading brings not  
A spirit and judgment equal or superior,  
—And what he brings, what need he elsewhere seek ?—  
Uncertain and unsettled still remains,  
Deep versed in books, and shallow in himself,  
Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys  
And trifles for choice matters, worth a sponge ;  
As children gath'ring pebbles on the shore. 330  
Or, if I would delight my private hours  
With music or with poem, where so soon  
As in our native language can I find  
That solace ? All our law and story strewed  
With hymns, our psalms with artful terms inscribed,  
Our Hebrew songs and harps, in Babylon  
That pleased so well our victor's ear, declare  
That rather Greece from us these arts derived ;  
Ill imitated, while they loudest sing  
The vices of their deities, and their own, 340  
In fable, hymn, or song, so personating  
Their gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.  
Remove their swelling epithets, thick laid  
As varnish on a harlot's cheek, the rest,

<sup>1</sup> Eccles. xii. 12.

## Paradise Regained

Thin sown with aught of profit or delight,  
Will far be found unworthy to compare  
With Sion's songs, to all true tastes excelling,  
Where GOD is praised aright, and godlike men.  
The Holiest of Holies, and His saints :  
Such are from GOD inspired, not such from thee ; 350  
Unless where moral virtue is expressed  
By light of nature not in all quite lost.  
Their orators thou then extol'st, as those  
The top of eloquence, statists indeed,  
And lovers of their country, as may seem ;  
But herein to our prophets far beneath,  
As men divinely taught, and better teaching  
The solid rules of civil government  
In their majestic unaffected style,  
Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome. 360  
In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,  
What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so,  
What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat ;  
These only, with our law, best form a king."

So spake the Son of GOD ; but Satan, now,  
Quite at a loss, (for all his darts were spent,)  
Thus to our Saviour with stern brow replied :  
" Since neither wealth nor honour, arms nor arts,  
Kingdom nor empire, pleases thee, nor aught  
By me proposed, in life contemplative 370  
Or active, tended on by glory or fame,  
What dost thou in this world ? the wilderness  
For thee is fittest place ; I found thee there,  
And thither will return thee. Yet remember  
What I foretell thee : soon thou shalt have cause  
To wish thou never hadst rejected thus  
Nicely or cautiously my offered aid,  
Which would have set thee in short time with ease  
On David's throne. or throne of all the world,  
Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season, 380  
When prophecies of thee are best fulfilled.  
Now contrary, if I read aught in heav'n,  
Or heav'n write aught of fate, by what the stars,  
Voluminous, or single characters.

## Paradise Regained

In their conjunction met, give me to spell,  
Sorrows and labours, opposition, hate,  
Attends thee ; scorns, reproaches, injuries,  
Violence and stripes, and lastly cruel death.  
A kingdom they portend thee, but what kingdom,  
Real or allegoric, I discern not, 390  
Nor when—eternal sure, as without end,  
Without beginning ; for no date prefixed  
Directs me in the starry rubric set."

So saying, he took (for still he knew his pow'r  
Not yet expired) and to the wilderness  
Brought back the Son of God, and left Him there,  
Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose,  
As daylight sunk, and brought in louring Night,  
Her shadowy offspring, unsubstantial both,  
Privation mere of light and absent day. 400  
Our Saviour, meek, and with untroubled mind  
After His aery jaunt, though hurried sore,  
Hungry and cold betook Him to His rest,  
Wherever, under some concourse of shades,  
Whose branching arms thick intertwined might shield  
From dews and damps of night His sheltered head ;  
But sheltered slept in vain, for at His head  
The Tempter watched, and soon with ugly dreams  
Disturbed His sleep. And either tropic now  
'Gan thunder, and both ends of heav'n ; the clouds 410  
From many a horrid rift abortive poured  
Fierce rain with light'ning mixed, water with fire  
In ruin reconciled : nor slept the winds  
Within their stony caves, but rushed abroad  
From the four hinges <sup>1</sup> of the world, and fell  
On the vexed wilderness, whose tallest pines,  
'Though rooted deep as high, and sturdiest oaks  
Bowed their stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,  
Or torn up sheer : ill wast thou shrouded then,  
O patient Son of God, yet only stood'st 420  
Unshaken. Nor yet stayed the terror there,  
Infernal ghosts and hellish furies round

<sup>1</sup> The cardinal points—north, south, east, and west. *Cardo*, from whence the word cardinal is derived, signifies *a hinge*.

## Paradise Regained

Environed thee ; some howled, some yelled, some  
shrieked,

Some bent at thee their fiery darts, while thou  
Sat'st unappalled in calm and sinless peace.  
Thus passed the night so foul, till Morning fair  
Came forth with pilgrim steps in amice gray,  
Who with her radiant finger stilled the roar  
Of thunder, chased the clouds, and laid the winds,  
And grisly spectres, which the fiend had raised 430  
To tempt the Son of God with terrors dire.

And now the sun with more effectual beams  
Had cheered the face of earth, and dried the wet  
From drooping plant or dropping tree ; the birds,  
Who all things now behold more fresh and green,  
After a night of storm so ruinous,  
Cleared up their choicest notes in bush and spray  
To gratulate the sweet return of morn :  
Nor yet amidst this joy and brightest morn  
Was absent, after all his mischief done, 440  
The prince of darkness, glad would also seem  
Of this fair change, and to our Saviour came,  
Yet with no new device, they all were spent ;  
Rather by this his last affront resolved,  
Desperate of better course, to vent his rage  
And mad despite to be so oft repelled.  
Him walking on a sunny hill he found,  
Backed on the north and west by a thick wood :  
Out of the wood he starts in wonted shape,  
And in a careless mood thus to Him said : 450

“ Fair morning yet betides thee, Son of God,  
After a dismal night. I heard the wrack  
As earth and sky would mingle, but myself  
Was distant ; and these flaws,<sup>1</sup> though mortals fear them  
As dangerous to the pillared frame of heav'n,  
Or to the earth's dark basis underneath,  
Are to the main as inconsiderable  
And harmless, if not wholesome, as a sneeze  
To man's less universe, and soon are gone ;  
Yet as being oftentimes noxious where they light 460

<sup>1</sup> A sea term for a sudden gust of wind.



## Paradise Regained

On man, beast, plant, wasteful and turbulent,  
Like turbulencies in the affairs of men,  
Over whose heads they roar, and seem to point,  
They oft fore-signify and threaten ill.  
This tempest at this desert most was bent :  
Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell'st.  
Did I not tell thee, if thou did'st reject  
The perfect season offered with my aid  
To win thy destined seat, but wilt prolong  
All to the push of fate, pursue thy way 470  
Of gaining David's throne no man knows when,  
For both the when and how is no where told,  
Thou shalt be what thou art ordained, no doubt ;  
For angels have proclaimed it, but concealing  
The time and means ; each act is rightliest done  
Not when it must, but when it may be best ?  
If thou observe not this, be sure to find,  
What I foretold thee, many a hard assay  
Of dangers, and adversities, and pains,  
Ere thou of Israel's sceptre get fast hold ; 480  
Whereof this ominous night that closed thee round,  
So many terrors, voices, prodigies,  
May warn thee, as a sure fore-going sign."

So talked he, while the Son of GOD went on  
And stayed not, but in brief him answered thus :  
" Me worse than wet thou find'st not ; other harm  
Those terrors, which thou speak'st of, did me none ;  
I never feared they could, though noising loud  
And threat'ning nigh ; what they can do as signs  
Betok'ning, or ill-boding, I condemn 490  
As false portents, not sent from GOD, but thee ;  
Who, knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,  
Obtrud'st thy offered aid, that I accepting  
At least might seem to hold all pow'r of thee,  
Ambitious spirit ! and would'st be thought my GOD,  
And storm'st refused, thinking to terrify  
Me to thy will. Desist, thou art discerned,  
And toil'st in vain, nor me in vain molest."

To whom the fiend, now swoll'n with rage, replied :  
" Then hear, O Son of David, virgin-born ; 500

## Paradise Regained

For Son of GOD to me is yet in doubt :  
Of the Messiah I have heard foretold  
By all the prophets ; of thy birth, at length  
Announced by Gabriel, with the first I knew,  
And of the angelic song in Bethlehem field,  
On thy birthnight, that sung thee Saviour born.  
From that time seldom have I ceased to eye  
Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,  
Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred ;  
Till at the ford of Jordan, whither all 510  
Flocked to the Baptist, I among the rest  
—Though not to be baptized—by voice from heav'n  
Heard thee pronounced the Son of GOD beloved.  
Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view  
And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn  
In what degree or meaning thou art called  
The Son of GOD, which bears no single sense.  
The son of GOD I also am, or was,  
And if I was I am ; relation stands ;  
All men are sons of GOD ! yet thee I thought 520  
In some respect far higher so declared.  
Therefore I watched thy footsteps from that hour,  
And followed thee still on to this waste wild ;  
Where by all best conjectures I collect  
Thou art to be my fatal enemy.  
Good reason then, if I beforehand seek  
To understand my adversary, who  
And what he is ; his wisdom, power, intent ;  
By parle or composition, truce, or league,  
To win him, or win from him what I can. 530  
And opportunity I here have had  
To try thee, sift thee, and confess have found thee  
Proof against all temptation, as a rock  
Of adamant, and as a centre firm,  
To the utmost of mere man both wise and good,  
Not more ; for honours, riches, kingdoms, glory,  
Have been before contemned, and may again :  
Therefore to know what more thou art than man,  
Worth naming Son of GOD by voice from heav'n,  
Another method I must now begin." 540

## Paradise Regained

So saying, he caught Him up, and, without wing  
Of hippogrif,<sup>1</sup> bore through the air sublime  
Over the wilderness and o'er the plain ;  
Till underneath them fair Jerusalem,  
The holy city, lifted high her towers,  
And higher yet the glorious Temple reared  
Her pile, far off appearing like a mount  
Of alabaster, topped with golden spires :  
There on the highest pinnacle he set  
The Son of God, and added thus in scorn : 550

“There stand, if thou wilt stand ; to stand upright  
Will ask thee skill ; I to thy Father's house  
Have brought thee, and highest placed ; highest is  
best.

Now show thy progeny ; if not to stand,  
Cast thyself down ; safely, if Son of God ;  
For it is written, ‘He will give command  
Concerning thee to His angels ; in their hands  
They shall uplift thee, lest at any time  
Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone.’”

To whom thus Jesus : “Also it is written, 560  
‘Tempt not the Lord thy God.’” He said, and stood :  
But Satan, smitten with amazement, fell.

As when earth's son, Antæus,<sup>2</sup> to compare  
Small things with greatest, in Itrassa strove  
With Jove's Alcides, and, oft foiled, still rose,  
Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,  
Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple joined,  
Throttled at length in the air, expired and fell ;  
So, after many a foil, the Tempter proud,  
Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride, 570  
Fell whence he stood to see his victor fall.  
And as that Theban monster,<sup>3</sup> that proposed  
Her riddle, and him who solved it not, devoured,  
That once found out and solved, for grief and spite

<sup>1</sup> A fabulous creature, on which Ariosto's heroes were borne through the air.

<sup>2</sup> A giant of Libya, son of Terra (the earth) and Neptune (the sea). Alcides attacked him ; and, as every time the giant touched the earth he received new strength, Hercules lifted him up into the air, and squeezed him to death in his arms. Itrassa was a city in Libya.

<sup>3</sup> The Sphinx.

## Paradise Regained

Cast herself headlong from th' Ismenian steep ;  
So, struck with dread and anguish, fell the fiend,  
And to his crew that sat consulting, brought  
Joyless triumphals of his hoped success,  
Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,  
Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of GOD. 580  
So Satan fell ; and straight a fiery globe  
Of angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,  
Who on their plummy vans received Him soft  
From His uneasy station, and upbore  
As on a floating couch through the blithe air,  
Then in a flow'ry valley set Him down  
On a green bank, and set before Him spread  
A table of celestial food, divine,  
Ambrosial fruits, fetched from the Tree of Life,  
And from the Fount of Life ambrosial drink, 590  
That soon refreshed Him wearied, and repaired  
What hunger, if aught hunger had impaired  
Or thirst ; and, as He fed, angelic quires  
Sung heav'nly anthems of His victory  
Over temptation and the Tempter proud :  
“ True Image of the Father, whether throned  
In the bosom of bliss, and light of light  
Conceiving, or remote from heav'n, enshrined  
In fleshly tabernacle and human form,  
Wand'ring the wilderness, whatever place, 600  
Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing  
The Son of GOD, with Godlike force indued  
Against th' attempter of thy Father's throne,  
And thief of Paradise ; him long of old  
Thou didst debel,<sup>1</sup> and down from heav'n cast  
With all his army ; now thou hast avenged  
Supplanted Adam, and by vanquishing  
Temptation, hast regained lost Paradise ;  
And frustrated the conquest fraudulent :  
He never more henceforth will dare set foot 610  
In Paradise to tempt ; his snares are broke :  
For though that seat of earthly bliss be failed,  
A fairer Paradise is founded now

<sup>1</sup> Conquer.

## Paradise Regained

For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou  
A Saviour art come down to re-install  
Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,  
Of tempter and temptation without fear.  
But thou, infernal Serpent, shalt not long  
Rule in the clouds ; like an autumnal star  
Or light'ning thou shalt fall from heav'n, trod down 620  
Under His feet : for proof, ere this thou feel'st  
Thy wound, yet not thy last and deadliest wound,  
By this repulse received, and hold'st in hell  
No triumph. In all her gates Abaddon<sup>1</sup> rues  
Thy bold attempt ; hereafter learn with awe  
To dread the Son of God : He all unarmed  
Shall chase thee with the terror of His voice  
From thy demoniac holds, possession foul,  
Thee and thy legions ; yelling they shall fly,  
And beg to hide them in a herd of swine, 630  
Lest He command them down into the deep  
Bound, and to torment sent before their time.  
Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both worlds,  
Queller of Satan ! on thy glorious work  
Now enter, and begin to save mankind."

Thus they the Son of God, our Saviour meek,  
Sung victor, and, from heav'nly feast refreshed,  
Brought on His way with joy ; He unobserved  
Home to His mother's house private returned.

<sup>1</sup> Rev. ix. 11. The name is here applied to hell.

# Samson Agonistes

A Dramatic Poem

“Τραγῳδία μίμησις πράξεως σπουδαίας,” etc.  
ARISTOT. *Pref.* c. vi.

“Tragœdia et imitatio actionis serie, etc., per misericordiam et metum perficiens  
taliū affectuum lustrationem.”

## OF THAT SORT OF DRAMATIC POEM WHICH IS CALLED TRAGEDY.

PREFACE WRITTEN BY MILTON.

TRAGEDY, as it was anciently composed, hath been ever held the gravest, moralest, and most profitable of all other poems; therefore said by Aristotle to be of power, by raising pity, and fear, or terror, to purge the mind of those and such-like passions; that is, to temper and reduce them to just measure with a kind of delight, stirred up by reading or seeing those passions well imitated. Nor is Nature wanting in her own effects to make good his assertion, for so in physis, things of melancholic hue and quality are used against melaucholy, sour against sour, salt to remove salt humours. Hence philosophers and other gravest writers, as Cicero, Plutarch, and others, frequently cite out of tragic poets, both to adorn and illustrate their discourse. The Apostle Paul himself thought it not unworthy to insert a verse of Euripides into the text of Holy Scripture, 1 Cor. xv. 33; and Paræus, commenting on the Revelation, divides the whole book, as a tragedy, into acts, distinguished each by a chorus of heavenly harpings and song between. Heretofore men in highest dignity have laboured not a little to be thought able to compose a tragedy. Of that honour Dionysius the Elder was no less ambitious than before of his attaining to the tyranny. Augustus Cæsar also had begun his "Ajax," but, unable to please his own judgment with what he had begun, left it unfinished. Seneca, the philosopher, is by some thought the author of those tragedies, at least the best of them, that go under that name. Gregory Nazianzen, a Father of the Church, thought it not unbecoming the sanctity of his person to write a tragedy, which is entitled "Christ Suffering." This is mentioned to vindicate tragedy from the small esteem, or rather infamy, which in the account of many it undergoes at this day<sup>1</sup> with other common interludes; happening through the

---

<sup>1</sup> The Puritans held the drama in the utmost abhorrence. It was probably on this account that the Puritan poet wrote this defence of tragedy, to justify himself for writing a drama.

## Samson Agonistes

poet's error of intermixing comic stuff with tragic sadness and gravity, or introducing trivial and vulgar persons, which by all judicious hath been counted absurd, and brought in without discretion, corruptly to gratify the people. And though ancient tragedy use no prologue, yet using sometimes, in case of self-defence, or explanation, that which Martial calls an epistle, in behalf of this tragedy coming forth after the ancient manner, much different from what among us passes for best, thus much beforehand may be epistled : that Chorus is here introduced after the Greek manner, not ancient only but modern, and still in use among the Italians. In the modelling, therefore, of this poem, with good reason, the ancients and Italians are rather followed, as of much more authority and fame. The measure of verse used in the Chorus is of all sorts, called by the Greeks Monostrophic, or rather Apolelymenon, without regard had to Strophe, Antistrophe, or Epode, which were a kind of stanzas framed only for the music then used with the Chorus that sung ; not essential to the poem, and therefore not material ; or, being divided into stanzas or pauses, they may be called Allœostropha. Division into act and scene referring chiefly to the stage, to which this work never was intended, is here omitted.

It suffices if the whole drama be found not produced beyond the fifth act ; of the style and uniformity, and that commonly called the plot, whether intricate or explicit, which is nothing indeed but such economy or disposition of the fable as may stand best with verisimilitude and decorum, they only will best judge who are not unacquainted with *Æschylus*, *Sophocles*, and *Euripides*, the three tragic poets, unequalled yet by any, and the best rule to all who endeavour to write tragedy. The circumscription of time wherein the whole drama begins and ends is, according to ancient rule and best example, within the space of twenty-four hours.



# SAMSON AGONISTES.<sup>1</sup>

## THE ARGUMENT.

Samson made captive, blind, and now in the prison at Gaza, there to labour as in a common workhouse, on a festival day, in the general cessation from labour, comes forth into the open air, to a place high, somewhat retired, there to sit awhile and bemoan his condition; where he happens at length to be visited by certain friends and equals of his tribe, which make the chorus, who seek to comfort him what they can; then by his old father Manoah, who endeavours the like, and withal tells him his purpose to procure his liberty by ransom; and, lastly, that this feast was proclaimed by the Philistines as a day of thank-giving for their deliverance from the hands of Samson, which yet more troubles him. Manoah then departs to prosecute his endeavour with the Philistine lords for Samson's redemption; who in the meanwhile is visited by other persons; and lastly by a public officer to require his coming to the feast before the lords and people, to play or show his strength in their presence. He at first refuses, dismissing the public officer with absolute denial to come; at length, persuaded inwardly that this was from God, he yields to go along with him, who came now the second time with great threatenings to fetch him. The chorus yet remaining on the place, Manoah returns full of joyful hope to procure ere long his son's deliverance; in the midst of which discourse a Hebrew comes in haste, confusedly at first, and afterward more distinctly, relating the catastrophe, what Samson had done to the Philistines, and by accident to himself; wherewith the tragedy ends.

## THE PERSONS.

SAMSON.  
MANOAH, the Father of Samson.  
DALILA, his Wife.  
HARAPHA of Gath.

Public Officer.  
Messenger.  
Chorus of Danites.

The Scene before the Prison in Gaza.

SAMS. A little onward lend thy guiding hand 1  
To these dark steps, a little further on;  
For yonder bank hath choice of sun or shade:  
There I am wont to sit, when any chance  
Relieves me from my task of servile toil,  
Daily in the common prison else enjoined me,  
Where I, a prisoner chained, scarce freely draw  
The air imprisoned also, close and damp,  
Unwholesome draught: but here I feel amends,  
The breath of heav'n fresh blowing, pure and sweet, 10

<sup>1</sup> That is, *Samson an actor*; or, the fate of Samson acted in a play. "Agonistes," Dunster supposes, "is rather here *athleta*, the subject being Samson's being brought forth to exhibit as an athlete."

## Samson Agonistes

With day-spring born ; here leave me to respire.  
This day a solemn feast the people hold  
To Dagon, their sea-idol, and forbid  
Laborious works ; unwillingly this rest  
Their superstition yields me ; hence, with leave  
Retiring from the popular noise, I seek  
This unfrequented place to find some ease ;  
Ease to the body some, none to the mind  
From restless thoughts, that, like a deadly swarm  
Of hornets armed, no sooner found alone, 20  
But rush upon me thronging, and present  
Times past, what once I was, and what am now.  
Oh ! wherefore was my birth from heav'n foretold  
Twice by an angel, who at last in sight  
Of both my parents all in flames ascended  
From off the altar, where an offering burned,  
As in a fiery column charioting  
His godlike presence, and from some great act  
Or benefit revealed to Abraham's race ?<sup>1</sup>  
Why was my breeding ordered and prescribed 30  
As of a person separate to God,  
Designed for great exploits, if I must die  
Betrayed, captived, and both my eyes put out,  
Made of my enemies the scorn and gaze,  
To grind in brazen fetters under task  
With this heav'n-gifted strength ? O glorious strength  
Put to the labour of a beast, debased  
Lower than bond-slave ! Promise was that I  
Should Israel from Philistian yoke deliver ;  
Ask for this great deliverer now, and find him 40  
Eyeless in Gaza at the mill with slaves,  
Himself in bonds under Philistian yoke.  
Yet stay, let me not rashly call in doubt  
Divine prediction : what if all foretold  
Had been fulfilled but through mine own default ?  
Whom have I to complain of but myself ?  
Who, this high gift of strength committed to me,  
In what part lodged, how easily bereft me,  
Under the seal of silence could not keep,

<sup>1</sup> Judges xiii. 3, 11-20.

## Samson Agonistes

But weakly to a woman must reveal it, 50  
O'ercome with importunity and tears?  
O impotence of mind in body strong!  
But what is strength without a double share  
Of wisdom? Vast, unwieldy, burthensome,  
Proudly secure, yet liable to fall  
By weakest subtleties, not made to rule,  
But to subserve where wisdom bears command.  
GOD, when He gave me strength, to show withal  
How slight the gift was, hung it in my hair.  
But peace! I must not quarrel with the will 60  
Of highest dispensation, which herein  
Haply had ends above my reach to know:  
Suffices that to me strength is my bane,  
And proves the source of all my miseries,  
So many, and so huge, that each apart  
Would ask a life to wail; but chief of all,  
O loss of sight, of thee I most complain!  
Blind among enemies, O worse than chains,  
Dungeon, or beggary, or decrepit age!  
Light, the prime work of God, to me's extinct, 70  
And all her various objects of delight  
Annulled, which might in part my grief have eased.  
Inferior to the vilest now become  
Of man or worm, the vilest here excel me;  
They creep, yet see; I, dark in light, exposed  
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse, and wrong.  
Within doors, or without, still as a fool  
In power of others, never in my own;  
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more than half.  
O dark, dark, dark, amid the blaze of noon, 80  
Irrecoverably dark, total eclipse  
Without all hope of day!  
O first created beam, and thou great Word,  
"Let there be light," and light was over all;  
Why am I thus bereaved Thy prime decree?  
The sun to me is dark  
And silent as the moon,<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Silens luna* is the moon at or near the change, and in conjunction with the sun

## Samson Agonistes

When she deserts the night,  
Hid in her vacant interlunar cave.  
Since light so necessary is to life, 90  
And almost life itself, if it be true  
That light is in the soul,  
She all in every part ; why was the sight  
To such a tender ball as th' eye confined,  
So obvious and so easy to be quenched ?  
And not, as feeling, through all parts diffused,  
That she might look at will through every pore ?  
Then had I not been thus exiled from light,  
As in the land of darkness yet in light,  
To live a life half dead, a living death, 100  
And buried ; but, O yet more miserable !  
Myself my sepulchre, a moving grave,  
Buried, yet not exempt  
By privilege of death and burial  
From worst of other evils, pains, and wrongs,  
But made hereby obnoxious more  
To all the miseries of life,  
Life in captivity  
Among inhuman foes.  
But who are these ? for with joint pace I hear 110  
The tread of many feet steering this way ;  
Perhaps my enemies, who come to stare  
At my affliction, and perhaps t' insult,  
Their daily practice to afflict me more.  
CHOR. This, this is he ; softly a while,  
Let us not break in upon him.  
O change beyond report, thought, or belief !  
See how he lies at random, carelessly diffused,<sup>1</sup>  
With languished head unpropped,  
As one past hope, abandoned, 120  
As by himself given over ;  
In slavish habit, ill-fitted weeds  
O'er-worn and soiled ;  
Or do my eyes misrepresent ? can this be he,  
That heroic, that renowned,  
Irresistible Samson ? whom unarmed

<sup>1</sup> Stretched out. ♀

## Samson Agonistes

No strength of man or fiercest wild beast could withstand ;  
Who tore the lion, as the lion tears the kid,  
Ran on imbattled armies clad in iron,  
(And, weaponless himself,) 130  
Made arms ridiculous, useless the forgery  
Of brazen shield and spear, the hampered cuirass,  
Chalybean<sup>1</sup> tempered steel, and frock of mail  
Adamantean proof ;  
But safest he who stood aloof,  
When insupportably his foot advanced,  
In scorn of their proud arms and warlike tools,  
Spurned them to death by troops. The bold Ascalonite<sup>2</sup>  
Fled from his lion ramp ;<sup>3</sup> old warriors turned  
Their plated backs under his heel, 140  
Or grov'ling soiled their crested helmets in the dust.  
Then with what trivial weapon came to hand,  
The jaw of a dead ass, his sword of bone,  
A thousand fore-skins fell, the flower of Palestine,  
In Ramath-lechi,<sup>4</sup> famous to this day :  
Then by main force pulled up, and on his shoulders  
bore  
The gates of Azza,<sup>5</sup> post and massy bar,  
Up to the hill by Hebron, seat of giants old,<sup>6</sup>  
No journey of a Sabbath day,<sup>7</sup> and loaded so ;  
Like whom the Gentiles feign to bear up heav'n.<sup>8</sup> 150  
Which shall I first bewail,  
Thy bondage or lost sight,  
Prison within prison  
Inseparably dark ?  
Thou art become, O worst imprisonment !

<sup>1</sup> The Chalybes were famous in the old world for their skill in working iron. Hence the best tempered steel was called Chalybean. *VIRG. Georg. l. 58.* "Ad Chalybes nudi ferum."—*NEWTON.*

<sup>2</sup> Philistine. Ascalon was a city of Philistia.

<sup>3</sup> "Rampant" like a lion. A heraldic term.

<sup>4</sup> Judges xv. 17. Ramath-lechi means the lifting up, or casting away, of the jaw-bone.

<sup>5</sup> Another name for Gaza.

<sup>6</sup> The city of the Anakims, who were giants. Judges xv. 13, 14 ; Num. xiii. 33.

<sup>7</sup> A Sabbath day's journey was, with the Jews, three-quarters of a geographical mile.

<sup>8</sup> Atlas.

## Samson Agonistes

The dungeon of thyself ; thy soul,  
Which men enjoying sight oft without cause complain,  
Imprisoned now indeed,  
In real darkness of the body dwells,  
Shut up from outward light, 160  
To incorporate with gloomy night :  
For inward light, alas !  
Puts forth no visual beam.

O mirror of our fickle state,  
Since man on earth unparalleled !  
The rarer thy example stands,  
By how much from the top of wondrous glory,  
Strongest of mortal men,  
To lowest pitch of abject fortune thou art fall'n ;  
For him I reckon not in high estate, 170  
Whom long descent of birth  
Or the sphere of fortune raises :  
But thee, whose strength, while virtue was her mate,  
Might have subdued the earth,  
Universally crowned with highest praises.

SAMS. I hear the sound of words, their sense the air  
Dissolves unjointed ere it reach my ear.

CHOR. He speaks : let us draw nigh. Matchless in  
might,  
The glory late of Israel, now the grief,  
We come, thy friends and neighbours not unknown, 180  
From Eshtaol and Zora's <sup>1</sup> fruitful vale,  
To visit or bewail thee ; or, if better,  
Counsel or consolation we may bring,  
Salve to thy sores : apt words have power to swage  
The tumours of a troubled mind,  
And are as balm to festered wounds.

SAMS. Your coming, friends, revives me, for I learn  
Now of my own experience, not by talk,  
How counterfeit a coin they are who friends  
Bear in their superscription, of the most 190  
I would be understood ; in prosperous days  
They swarm, but in adverse withdraw their head,  
Not to be found, though sought. Ye see, O friends,

<sup>1</sup> Towns in the tribe of Dan. Zora was the birthplace of Samson.

## Samson Agonistes

How many evils have inclosed me round ;  
Yet that which was the worse now least afflicts me,  
Blindness ; for, had I sight, confused with shame,  
How could I once look up, or heave the head,  
Who, like a foolish pilot, have shipwrecked  
My vessel trusted to me from above,  
Gloriously rigged ; and for a word, a tear, 200  
Fool ! have divulged the secret gift of God  
To a deceitful woman ? Tell me, friends,  
Am I not sung and proverb'd for a fool  
In every street ? do they not say, How well  
Are come upon him his deserts ! Yet why ?  
Immeasurable strength they might behold  
In me, of wisdom nothing more than mean :  
This with the other should at least have paired ;  
These two, proportion'd ill, drove me transverse.

CHOR. Tax not divine disposal : wisest men 210  
Have erred, and by bad women been deceived ;  
And shall again, pretend they ne'er so wise.  
Deject not then so overmuch thyself,  
Who hast of sorrow thy full load besides.  
Yet, truth to say, I oft have heard men wonder  
Why thou shouldst wed Philistian women rather  
Than of thine own tribe fairer, or as fair,  
At least of thy own nation, and as noble.

SAMS. The first I saw at Timna, and she pleased  
Me, not my parents, that I sought to wed 220  
The daughter of an infidel. They knew not  
That what I motioned was of God ; I knew  
From intimate impulse, and therefore urged  
The marriage on, that by occasion hence  
I might begin Israel's deliverance,  
The work to which I was divinely called.  
She proving false, the next I took to wife,  
O that I never had ! fond wish too late !  
Was in the vale of Sorec, Dalila,  
That specious monster, my accomplished snare. 230  
I thought it lawful from my former act,  
And the same end, still watching to oppress  
Israel's oppressors. Of what now I suffer

## Samson Agonistes

She was not the prime cause, but I myself,  
Who, vanquished with a peal of words,—O weakness!—  
Gave up my fort of silence to a woman.

CHOR. In seeking just occasion to provoke  
The Philistine, thy country's enemy,  
Thou never wast remiss, I bear thee witness :  
Yet Israel still serves with all his sons. 240

SAMS. That fault I take not on me, but transfer  
On Israel's governors, and heads of tribes,  
Who, seeing those great acts which God had done  
Singly by me against their conquerors,  
Acknowledged not, or not at all considered  
Deliverance offered. I, on the other side,  
Used no ambition to commend my deeds ;  
The deeds themselves, though mute, spoke loud the  
doer.

But they persisted deaf, and would not seem  
To count them things worth notice, till at length 250  
Their lords the Philistines with gathered powers  
Entered Judea seeking me, who then  
Safe to the rock of Etham<sup>1</sup> was retired,  
Not flying, but forecasting in what place  
To set upon them, what advantaged best.  
Meanwhile the men of Judah, to prevent  
The harass of their land, beset me round ;  
I willingly on some conditions came  
Into their hands, and they as gladly yield me  
To the uncircumcised a welcome prey, 260  
Bound with two cords : but cords to me were threads  
Touched with the flame. On their whole host I flew  
Unarmed, and with a trivial weapon felled  
Their choicest youth ; they only lived who fled.  
Had Judah that day joined, or one whole tribe,  
They had by this possessed the towers of Gath,  
And lorded over them whom now they serve :  
But what more oft in nations grown corrupt,  
And by their vices brought to servitude,  
Than to love bondage more than liberty, 270  
Bondage with ease than strenuous liberty ;

<sup>1</sup> Judges xv. 8.



## Samson Agonistes

And to despise, or envy, or suspect  
Whom God hath of His special favour raised  
As their deliverer? If he aught begin,  
How frequent to desert him, and at last  
To heap ingratitude on worthiest deeds.

CHOR. Thy words to my remembrance bring  
How Succoth and the fort of Penuel  
Their great deliverer contemned,<sup>1</sup>  
The matchless Gideon in pursuit 280  
Of Madian and her vanquished kings :  
And how ingrateful Ephraim  
Had dealt with Jephtha,<sup>2</sup> who by argument,  
Not worse than by his shield and spear,  
Defended Israel from the Ammonite,  
Had not his prowess quelled their pride  
In that sore battle, when so many died  
Without reprieve adjudged to death,<sup>3</sup>  
For want of well pronouncing Shibboleth.

SAMS. Of such examples add me to the roll. 290  
Me easily indeed mine may neglect,  
But God's proposed deliverance not so.

CHOR. Just are the ways of God,  
And justifiable to men ;  
Unless there be who think not God at all :  
If any be, they walk obscure ;  
For of such doctrine never was there school,  
But the heart of the fool,  
And no man therein doctor but himself.

Yet more there be who doubt His ways not  
just, 300  
And to His own edicts found contradicting,  
Then give the reins to wand'ring thought,  
Regardless of His glory's diminution ;  
Till, by their own perplexities involved,  
They ravel more, still less resolved,  
But never find self-satisfying solution.

As if they would confine th' Interminable,  
And tie Him to His own prescript,

<sup>1</sup> They refused Gideon provisions. See Judges viii. 4, 9.

<sup>2</sup> See Judges xi. 15-27.

<sup>3</sup> Judges xii. 1-6.

## Samson Agonistes

Who made our laws to bind us, not Himself,  
And hath full right to exempt 310  
Whomso it pleases Him by choice  
From national obstruction, without taint  
Of sin, or legal debt ;  
For with His own laws He can best dispense.

He would not else, who never wanted means,  
Nor in respect of th' enemy just cause  
To set His people free,  
Have prompted this heroic Nazarite,  
Against his vow of strictest purity,  
To seek in marriage that fallacious bride, 320  
Unclean, unchaste.

Down, Reason, then ; at least, vain reasonings,  
down ;  
Though Reason here aver  
That moral verdict quits her of unclean :  
Unchaste was subsequent, her stain not his.

But see ! here comes thy reverend sire,  
With careful step, locks white as down,  
Old Manoah ; advise  
Forthwith how thou ought'st to receive him.

SAMS. Ay me ! another inward grief, awaked 330  
With mention of that name, renews th' assault.

MAN. Brethren and men of Dan, for such ye  
seem,  
Though in this uncouth place, if old respect,  
As I suppose, towards your once gloried friend,  
My son, now captive, hither hath informed  
Your younger feet, while mine, cast back with age,  
Came lagging after ; say if he be here.

CHOR. As signal now in low dejected state  
As erst in highest, behold him where he lies.

MAN. O miserable change ! is this the man, 340  
That invincible Samson, far renowned,  
The dread of Israel's foes, who with a strength  
Equivalent to angels' walked their streets,  
None offering fight ; who single combatant  
Duelled their armies ranked in proud array,  
Himself an army, now unequal match

## Samson Agonistes

To save himself against a coward armed  
At one spear's length? O ever-failing trust  
In mortal strength! and oh! what not in man  
Deceivable and vain! nay, what thing good, 350  
Prayed for, but often proves our woe, our bane?  
I prayed for children, and thought barrenness  
In wedlock a reproach; I gained a son,  
And such a son as all men hailed me happy:  
Who would be now a father in my stead?  
O wherefore did GOD grant me my request,  
And as a blessing with such pomp adorned?  
Why are His gifts desirable, to tempt  
Our earnest prayers, then, giv'n with solemn hand  
As graces, draw a scorpion's tail behind? 360  
For this did the angel twice descend? for this  
Ordained thy nurture holy, as of a plant  
Select and sacred, glorious for a while,  
The miracle of men; then in an hour  
Ensnared, assaulted, overcome, led bound,  
Thy foes' derision, captive, poor, and blind,  
Into a dungeon thrust to work with slaves?  
Alas! methinks whom GOD hath chosen once  
To worthiest deeds, if he through frailty err,  
He should not so o'erwhelm, and as a thrall 370  
Subject him to so foul indignities,  
Be it but for honour's sake of former deeds.

SAMS. Appoint <sup>1</sup> not heav'nly disposition, father:  
Nothing of all these evils hath befall'n me  
But justly; I myself have brought them on;  
Sole author I, sole cause; if aught seem vile,  
As vile hath been my folly, who have profaned  
The mystery of GOD given me under pledge  
Of vow, and have betrayed it to a woman,  
A Canaanite, my faithless enemy. 380  
This well I knew, nor was at all surprised,  
But warned by oft experience: did not she  
Of Timna first betray me, and reveal  
The secret wrested from me in her highth  
Of nuptial love professed, carrying it straight

<sup>1</sup> That is, arraign not, summon not to answer.—WARBURTON.

## Samson Agonistes

To them who had corrupted her, my spies  
And rivals? In this other was there found  
More faith, who also in her prime of love,  
Spousal embraces, vitiated with gold,  
Though offered only, by the scent conceived 390  
Her spurious first-born, treason against me?  
Thrice she assayed, with flattering prayers and sighs,  
And amorous reproaches, to win from me  
My capital secret,—in what part my strength  
Lay stored, in what part summed, that she might  
know ;—

Thrice I deluded her, and turned to sport  
Her importunity, each time perceiving  
How openly and with what impudence  
She purposed to betray me, and, which was worse  
Than undissembled hate, with what contempt 400  
She sought to make me traitor to myself ;  
Yet, the fourth time, when, mustering all her wiles,  
With blandished parleys, feminine assaults,  
Tongue-batteries, she surceased not day nor night  
To storm me over-watched and wearied out,  
At times when men seek most repose and rest,  
I yielded, and unlocked her all my heart,  
Who with a grain of manhood well resolved  
Might easily have shook off all her snares :  
But foul effeminacy held me yoked 410  
Her bond-slave. O indignity ! O blot  
To honour and religion ! servile mind  
Rewarded well with servile punishment !  
The base degree to which I now am fall'n,  
These rags, this grinding, is not yet so base  
As was my former servitude, ignoble,  
Unmanly, ignominious, infamous,  
True slavery ; and that blindness worse than this,  
That saw not how degenerately I served.

MAN. I cannot praise thy marriage choices, son, 420  
Rather approved them not ; but thou didst plead  
Divine impulsion prompting how thou might'st  
Find some occasion to infest our foes.  
I state not that ; this I am sure, our foes

## Samson Agonistes

Found soon occasion thereby to make thee  
Their captive and their triumph ; thou the sooner  
Temptation found'st, or over-potent charms  
To violate the sacred trust of silence  
Deposited within thee ; which to have kept  
'Tacit was in thy power. 'True : and thou bear'st 430  
Enough and more the burthen of that fault ;  
Bitterly hast thou paid, and still art paying  
That rigid score. A worse thing yet remains :  
This day the Philistines a popular feast  
Here celebrate in Gaza ;<sup>1</sup> and proclaim  
Great pomp, and sacrifice, and praises loud  
To Dagon, as their god, who hath delivered  
Thee, Samson, bound and blind into their hands,  
Them out of thine, who slew'st them many a  
slain.

So Dagon shall be magnified, and God, 440  
Besides whom is no God, compared with idols,  
Disglorified, blasphemed, and had in scorn  
By the idolatrous rout amidst their wine ;  
Which to have come to pass by means of thee,  
Samson, of all thy sufferings think the heaviest,  
Of all reproach the most with shame that ever  
Could have befall'n thee and thy father's house.

SAMS. Father, I do acknowledge and confess  
That I this honour, I this pomp, have brought  
To Dagon, and advanced his praises high 450  
Among the heathen round ; to God have brought  
Dishonour, obloquy, and oped the mouths  
Of idolists and atheists ; have brought scandal  
To Israel, diffidence of God, and doubt  
In feeble hearts, propense enough before  
To waver, or fall off, and join with idols ;  
Which is my chief affliction, shame, and sorrow,  
The anguish of my soul, that suffers not  
Mine eye to harbour sleep, or thoughts to rest.  
This only hope relieves me, that the strife 460  
With me hath end ; all the contest is now  
'Twixt God and Dagon ; Dagon hath presumed,

<sup>1</sup> Judges xvi. 23.

## Samson Agonistes

Me overthrown, to enter lists with God,  
His deity comparing and preferring  
Before the God of Abraham. He, be sure,  
Will not connive, or linger, thus provoked,  
But will arise, and His great name assert :  
Dagon must stoop, and shall ere long receive  
Such a discomfit, as shall quite despoil him  
Of all these boasted trophies won on me, 470  
And with confusion blank <sup>1</sup> his worshippers.

MAN. With cause this hope relieves thee, and these  
words

I as a prophecy receive : for God,  
Nothing more certain, will not long defer  
'To vindicate the glory of His name  
Against all competition, nor will long  
Endure it, doubtful whether God be lord,  
Or Dagon. But for thee what shall be done?  
Thou must not in the meanwhile here forgot  
Lie in this miserable loathsome plight 480  
Neglected. I already have made way  
To some Philistian lords, with whom to treat  
About thy ransom : well they may by this  
Have satisfied their utmost of revenge  
By pains and slaveries, worse than death, inflicted  
On thee, who now no more canst do them harm.

SAMS. Spare that proposal, father, spare the  
trouble

Of that solicitation : let me here,  
As I deserve, pay on my punishment,  
And expiate, if possible, my crime, 490  
Shameful garrulity. To have revealed  
Secrets of men, the secrets of a friend,  
How heinous had the fact been, how deserving  
Contempt and scorn of all ; to be excluded  
All friendship, and avoided as a blab,  
The mark of fool set on his front !  
But I God's counsel have not kept, His holy secret  
Presumptuously have published, impiously,  
Weakly at least, and shamefully ; a sin

<sup>1</sup> Confound.

## Samson Agonistes

That Gentiles in their parables, condemn  
To their abyss and horrid pains confined. <sup>1</sup> 500

MAN. Be penitent and for thy fault contrite,  
But act not in thy own affliction, son ;  
Repent the sin, but if the punishment  
Thou canst avoid, self-preservation bids ;  
Or th' execution leave to high disposal,  
And let another hand, not thine, exact  
Thy penal forfeit from thyself ; perhaps  
God will relent, and quit thee all His debt,  
Who evermore approves and more accepts, 510  
—Best pleased with humble and filial submission,—  
Him who imploring mercy sues for life,  
Than who self-rigorous chooses death as due,  
Which argues over-just, and self-displeased  
For self-offence, more than for God offended.  
Reject not then what offered means : who knows  
But GOD hath set before us, to return thee  
Home to thy country and His sacred house,  
Where thou may'st bring thy off'rings, to avert  
His further ire, with prayers and vows renewed ? 520

SAMS. His pardon I implore ; but as for life,  
To what end should I seek it ? when in strength  
All mortals I excelled, and great in hopes  
With youthful courage and magnanimous thoughts  
Of birth from heav'n foretold, and high exploits,  
Full of divine instinct, after some proof  
Of acts indeed heroic, far beyond  
The sons of Anak, famous now and blazed,  
Fearless of danger, like a petty god  
I walked about, admired of all and dreaded 530  
On hostile ground, none daring my affront.  
Then, swoll'n with pride, into the snare I fell  
Of fair fallacious looks, venereal trains,  
Softened with pleasure and voluptuous life,  
At length to lay my head and hallowed pledge  
Of all my strength in the lascivious lap

<sup>1</sup> Milton is supposed here to allude to the fable of Tantalus, who, for revealing the secrets of the gods, was punished in hell by an insatiable thirst, and, though placed in a pool of water, could never succeed in tasting a drop.

## Samson Agonistes

Of a deceitful concubine, who shore me,  
Like a tame wether, all my precious fleece,  
Then turned me out ridiculous, despoiled,  
Shav'n, and disarmed, among mine enemies. 540

CHOR. Desire of wine and all delicious drinks,  
Which many a famous warrior overturns,  
Thou could'st repress, nor did the dancing ruby,  
Sparkling out-poured, the flavour or the smell,  
Or taste, that cheers the hearts of gods and men,<sup>1</sup>  
Allure thee from the cool crystalline stream.

SAMS. Wherever fountain or fresh current flowed  
Against the eastern ray, translucent, pure,  
With touch ethereal of heav'n's fiery rod,  
I drank, from the clear milky juice allaying 550  
Thirst, and refreshed ; nor envied them the grape,  
Whose heads that turbulent liquor fills with fumes.

CHOR. O madness, to think use of strongest wines  
And strongest drinks our chief support of health,  
When GOD with these forbidden made choice to rear  
His mighty champion, strong above compare,  
Whose drink was only from the liquid brook.<sup>2</sup>

SAMS. But what availed this temperance, not complete  
Against another object more enticing?  
What boots it at one gate to make defence, 560  
And at another to let in the foe,  
Effeminately vanquished? by which means,  
Now blind, disheartened, shamed, dishonoured, quelled,  
To what can I be useful, wherein serve  
My nation, and the work from heav'n imposed?  
But to sit idle on the household hearth,  
A burd'nous drone ; to visitants a gaze,  
Or pitied object, these redundant locks  
Robustious to no purpose clust'ring down,  
Vain monument of strength, till length of years 570  
And sedentary numbness craze my limbs  
To a contemptible old age obscure?  
Here rather let me drudge and earn my bread,

<sup>1</sup> Judges ix. 13 : "Wine which cheereth God and man."

<sup>2</sup> Samson was a Nazarene from his birth. See Judges xiii. 7 ; Num. vi.



## Samson Agonistes

Till vermin or the draff<sup>1</sup> of servile food  
Consume me, and oft-invoked death  
Hasten the welcome end of all my pains.

MAN. Wilt thou then serve the Philistines with that  
gift

Which was expressly given thee to annoy them?  
Better at home lie bedrid, not only idle,  
Inglorious, unemployed, with age outworn. 580  
But GOD, who caused a fountain at thy prayer  
From the dry ground to spring,<sup>2</sup> thy thirst to allay  
After the brunt of battle, can as easy  
Cause light again within thy eyes to spring,  
Wherewith to serve Him better than thou hast;  
And I persuade me so: why else this strength  
Miraculous yet remaining in those locks?  
His might continues in thee not for nought,  
Nor shall His wondrous gifts be frustrate thus.

SAMS. All otherwise to me my thoughts portend, 590  
That these dark orbs no more shall treat with light,  
Nor the other light of life continue long,  
But yield to double darkness nigh at hand:  
So much I feel my genial spirits droop,  
My hopes all flat, nature within me seems  
In all her functions weary of herself,  
My race of glory run, and race of shame,  
And I shall shortly be with them that rest.

MAN. Believe not these suggestions, which proceed  
From anguish of the mind and humours black, 600  
That mingle with thy fancy. I, however,  
Must not omit a father's timely care  
To prosecute the means of thy deliverance  
By ransom or how else: meanwhile be calm,  
And healing words from these thy friends admit. [*Exit.*]

SAMS. O that torment should not be confined  
To the body's wounds and sores,  
With maladies innumerable

<sup>1</sup> Refuse. Draff was literally brewers' spent grains.

<sup>2</sup> Milton differs from our translation of the Bible. See Judges xv. 18, 19. He agrees with the Chaldee paraphrast, who understood that God made a cleft in the earth or rock at a place called *Lehi*. *Lehi* also signifies a jaw. See NEWTON's notes.

## Samson Agonistes

In heart, head, breast, and reins ,  
But must secret passage find 610  
To the inmost mind,  
There exercise all his fierce accidents,  
And on her purest spirits prey,  
As on entrails, joints, and limbs,  
With answerable pains, but more intense,  
Though void of corporal sense.

My griefs not only pain me  
As a lingering disease,  
But, finding no redress, ferment and rage,  
Nor less than wounds inmedicable 620  
Rankle, and fester, and gangrene,  
To black mortification.  
Thoughts, my tormentors, armed with deadly stings,  
Mangle my apprehensive tenderest parts,  
Exasperate, exulcerate, and raise  
Dire inflammation, which no cooling herb,  
Or medicinal<sup>1</sup> liquor can assuage,  
Nor breath of vernal air from snowy Alp.  
Sleep hath forsook and given me o'er  
To death's benumbing opium as my only cure : 630  
Thence faintings, swoonings of despair,  
And sense of heav'n's desertion.

I was His nursling once, and choice delight,  
His destined from the womb,  
Promised by heavenly message twice descending :  
Under His special eye  
Abstemious I grew up and thrived amain ;  
He led me on to mightiest deeds,  
Above the nerve of mortal arm,  
Against the uncircumcised, our enemies : 640  
But now hath cast me off as never known,  
And to those cruel enemies,  
Whom I by His appointment had provoked,  
Left me all helpless with the irreparable loss  
Of sight, reserved alive to be repeated  
The subject of their cruelty and scorn.  
Nor am I in the list of them that hope ;

<sup>1</sup> Milton always spells this word "medicinal."--MITFORD.

## Samson Agonistes

Hopeless are all my evils, all remediless ;  
This one prayer yet remains, might I be heard,  
No long petition—speedy death, 650  
The close of all my miseries, and the balm.

CHOR. Many are the sayings of the wise,  
In ancient and in modern books enrolled,  
Extolling patience as the truest fortitude ;  
And to the bearing well of all calamities,  
All chances incident to man's frail life,  
Consolatories writ  
With studied argument, and much persuasion sought,  
Lenient of grief and anxious thought :  
But with the afflicted in his pangs their sound 660  
Little prevails, or rather seems a tune  
Harsh and of dissonant mood from his complaint,  
Unless he feel within  
Some source of consolation from above,  
Secret refreshings, that repair his strength,  
And fainting spirits uphold.

God of our fathers, what is man !  
That thou towards him with hand so various,  
Or may I say contrarious,  
Temper'st thy providence through his short course  
Not evenly, as thou rul'st [670  
The angelic orders and inferior creatures mute,  
Irrational and brute.

Nor do I name of men the common rout,  
That wandering loose about  
Grow up and perish, as the summer fly,  
Heads without name no more remembered,  
But such as thou hast solemnly elected,  
With gifts and graces eminently adorned  
To some great work, thy glory, 680  
And people's safety, which in part they effect :  
Yet toward these thus dignified, thou oft  
Amidst their height of noon,  
Changest thy countenance, and thy hand with no  
regard  
Of highest favours past  
From thee on them, or them to thee of service.

## Samson Agonistes

Nor only dost degrade them, or remit  
To life obscured, which were a fair dismissal,  
But throw'st them lower than thou didst exalt them high,  
Unseemly falls in human eye, 690  
Too grievous for the trespass of omission ;  
Oft leav'st them to the hostile sword  
Of heathen and profane, their carcasses  
To dogs and fowls a prey, or else captiv'd ;  
Or to the unjust tribunals, under change of times,  
And condemnation of the ingrateful multitude.  
If these they 'scape, perhaps in poverty  
With sickness and disease thou bow'st them down,  
Painful diseases and deformed,  
In crude old age : 700  
Though not disordinate, yet causeless suff'ring  
The punishment of dissolute days : in fine,  
Just or unjust, alike seem miserable,  
For oft alike both come to evil end.

So deal not with this once thy glorious champion,  
The image of thy strength, and mighty minister.  
What do I beg? how hast thou dealt already !  
Behold him in this state calamitous, and turn  
His labours, for thou canst, to peaceful end.

But who is this? what thing of sea or land? 710  
Female of sex it seems,  
That so bedecked, ornate, and gay,  
Comes this way sailing  
Like a stately ship  
Of Tarsus, bound for the isles  
Of Javan or Gadire,<sup>1</sup>  
With all her bravery on, and tackle trim,  
Sails filled, and streamers waving,  
Court'd by all the winds that hold them play,  
An amber scent of odorous perfume 720  
Her harbinger ; a damsel train behind?  
Some rich Philistian matron she may seem ;  
And now, at nearer view, no other certain  
Than Dalila thy wife.

SAMS. My wife ! my traitress ! let her not come near me.

<sup>1</sup> Cadiz.

## Samson Agonistes

CHOR. Yet on she moves, now stands and eyes thee  
fixed,

About to have spoke, but now, with head declined,  
Like a fair flow'r surcharged with dew, she weeps,  
And words addressed seem into tears dissolved,  
Wetting the borders of her silken veil : 730  
But now again she makes address to speak.

DAL. With doubtful feet and wavering resolution  
I came, still dreading thy displeasure, Samson ;  
Which to have merited, without excuse,  
I cannot but acknowledge ; yet if tears  
May expiate, though the fact more evil drew  
In the perverse event than I foresaw,  
My penance hath not slackened, though my pardon  
No way assured : but conjugal affection,  
Prevailing over fear and timorous doubt, 740  
Hath led me on, desirous to behold  
Once more thy face, and know of thy estate,  
If aught in my ability may serve  
To lighten what thou suffer'st, and appease  
Thy mind with what amends is in my power,  
Though late, yet in some part to recompense  
My rash, but more unfortunate, misdeed.

SAMS. Out, out, hyæna ! these are thy wonted  
arts,  
And arts of every woman false like thee,  
To break all faith, all vows, deceive, betray, 750  
Then, as repentant, to submit, beseech,  
And reconciliation move with feigned remorse,  
Confess, and promise wonders in her change :  
Not truly penitent, but chief to try  
Her husband, how far urged his patience bears,  
His virtue or weakness which way to assail ;  
Then with more cautious and instructed skill  
Again transgresses, and again submits ;  
That wisest and best men full oft beguiled,  
With goodness principled not to reject 760  
The penitent, but ever to forgive,  
Are drawn to wear out miserable days,  
Entangled with a pois'nous bosom snake,

## Samson Agonistes

If not by quick destruction soon cut off,  
As I by thee ; to ages an example.

DAL. Yet hear me, Samson ; not that I endeavour  
To lessen or extenuate my offence,  
But that, on th' other side, if it be weighed  
By itself, with aggravations not surcharged,  
Or else with just allowance counterpoised, 770  
I may, if possible, thy pardon find  
The easier towards me, or thy hatred less.  
First granting, as I do, it was a weakness  
In me, but incident to all our sex,  
Curiosity, inquisitive, importune  
Of secrets, then with like infirmity  
To publish them, both common female faults :  
Was it not weakness also to make known  
For importunity, that is, for nought,  
Wherein consisted all thy strength and safety ? 780  
To what I did thou show'dst me first the way.  
But I to enemies revealed, and should not ;  
Nor should'st thou have trusted that to woman's frailty :  
Ere I to thee, thou to thyself wast cruel.  
Let weakness then with weakness come to parle,  
So near related, or the same of kind,  
Thine forgive mine ; that men may censure thine  
The gentler, if severely thou exact not  
More strength from me than in thyself was found.  
And what if love, which thou interpret'st hate, 790  
The jealousy of love, powerful of sway  
In human hearts, nor less in mine towards thee,  
Caused what I did ? I saw thee mutable  
Of fancy, feared lest one day thou would'st leave me  
As her at 'Timna, sought by all means therefore  
How to endear, and hold thee to me firmest :  
No better way I saw than by importuning  
To learn thy secrets, get into my power  
Thy key of strength and safety. Thou wilt say,  
"Why then revealed ?" I was assured by those 800  
Who tempted me, that nothing was designed  
Against thee but safe custody and hold :  
That made for me ; I knew that liberty

## Samson Agonistes

Would draw thee forth to perilous enterprises,  
While I at home sat full of cares and fears,  
Wailing thy absence in my widowed bed :  
Here I should still enjoy thee day and night,  
Mine and love's prisoner, not the Philistines',  
Whole to myself, unhazarded abroad,  
Fearless at home of partners in my love. 810  
These reasons in love's law have passed for good,  
Though fond and reasonless to some perhaps :  
And love hath oft, well meaning, wrought much woe,  
Yet always pity or pardon hath obtained.  
Be not unlike all others, not austere  
As thou art strong, inflexible as steel.  
If thou in strength all mortals dost exceed,  
In uncompassionate anger do not so.

SAMS. How cunningly the sorceress displays  
Her own transgressions, to upbraid me mine ! 820  
That malice not repentance brought thee hither,  
By this appears : I gave, thou say'st, th' example,  
I led the way ; bitter reproach, but true ;  
I to myself was false ere thou to me ;  
Such pardon therefore as I give my folly,  
Take to thy wicked deed ; which when thou seest  
Impartial, self-severe, inexorable,  
Thou wilt renounce thy seeking, and much rather  
Confess it feigned. Weakness is thy excuse,  
And I believe it, weakness to resist 830  
Philistian gold. If weakness may excuse,  
What murderer, what traitor, parricide,  
Incestuous, sacrilegious, but may plead it ?  
All wickedness is weakness : that plea therefore  
With God or man will gain thee no remission.  
But love constrained thee ? call it furious rage  
To satisfy thy lust. Love seeks to have love :  
My love how could'st thou hope, who took'st the way  
To raise in me inexpiable hate,  
Knowing, as needs I must, by thee betrayed ? 840  
In vain thou strivest to cover shame with shame,  
Or by evasions thy crime uncoverest more.

DAL. Since thou determinest weakness for no plea

## Samson Agonistes

In man or woman, though to thy own condemning,  
Hear what assaults I had, what snares besides,  
What sieges girt me round, ere I consented,  
Which might have awed the best resolved of men,  
The constantest, to have yielded without blame.  
It was not gold, as to my charge thou lay'st,  
'That wrought with me. Thou know'st the magistrates  
And princes of my country came in person,<sup>1</sup> [850  
Solicited, commanded, threatened, urged,  
Adjured by all the bonds of civil duty  
And of religion, pressed how just it was,  
How honourable, how glorious, to entrap  
A common enemy, who had destroyed  
Such numbers of our nation : and the priest  
Was not behind, but ever at my ear,  
Preaching how meritorious with the gods  
It would be to ensnare an irreligious 860  
Dishonourer of Dagon. What had I  
To oppose against such powerful arguments?  
Only my love of thee held long debate,  
And combated in silence all these reasons  
With hard contest : at length that grounded maxim,  
So rife and celebrated in the mouths  
Of wisest men, that to the public good  
Private respects must yield, with grave authority  
Took full possession of me and prevailed ;  
Virtue, as I thought, truth, duty, so enjoining. 870  
SAMS. I thought where all thy circling wiles would  
end :

In feigned religion, smooth hypocrisy.  
But had thy love, still odiously pretended,  
Been, as it ought, sincere, it would have taught thee  
Far other reasonings, brought forth other deeds.  
I, before all the daughters of my tribe  
And of my nation, chose thee from among  
My enemies, loved thee, as too well thou knew'st,  
Too well, unbosomed all my secrets to thee,  
Not out of levity, but over-powered 880  
By thy request, who could deny thee nothing ;

<sup>1</sup> Judges xvi. 5.



## Samson Agonistes

Yet now am judged an enemy. Why then  
Didst thou at first receive me for thy husband,  
Then, as since then, thy country's foe professed?  
Being once a wife, for me thou wast to leave  
Parents and country; nor was I their subject,  
Nor under their protection, but my own;  
Thou mine, not theirs. If aught against my life  
Thy country sought of thee, it sought unjustly,  
Against the law of nature, law of nations; 890  
No more thy country, but an impious crew  
Of men, conspiring to uphold their state  
By worse than hostile deeds, violating the ends  
For which our country is a name so dear;  
Not therefore to be obeyed. But zeal moved thee;  
To please thy gods thou didst it; gods unable  
To acquit themselves and prosecute their foes  
But by ungodly deeds; the contradiction  
Of their own deity, gods cannot be;  
Less therefore to be pleased, obeyed, or feared. 900  
These false pretexs and varnished colours failing,  
Bare in thy guilt how foul must thou appear!

DAL. In argument with men a woman ever  
Goes by the worse, whatever be her cause.

SAMS. For want of words, no doubt, or lack of breath!  
Witness when I was worried with thy peals.

DAL. I was a fool, too rash, and quite mistaken  
In what I thought would have succeeded best.  
Let me obtain forgiveness of thee, Samson,  
Afford me place to show what recompense 910  
Towards thee I intend for what I have misdone,  
Misguided; only what remains past cure  
Bear not too sensibly, nor still insist  
To afflict thyself in vain. Though sight be lost,  
Life yet hath many solaces, enjoyed  
Where other senses want not their delights,  
At home, in leisure, and domestic ease,  
Exempt from many a care and chance to which  
Eyesight exposes daily men abroad.  
I to the lords will intercede, not doubting 920  
Their favourable ear, that I may fetch thee

## Samson Agonistes

From forth this loathsome prison-house, to abide  
With me, where my redoubled love and care,  
With nursing diligence, to me glad office,  
May ever tend about thee to old age,  
With all things grateful cheered, and so supplied,  
That what by me thou hast lost thou least shalt miss.

SAMS. No, no ; of my condition take no care ;  
It fits not ; thou and I long since are twain ;  
Nor think me so unwary or accurst, 930  
To bring my feet again into the snare  
Where once I have been caught : I know thy trains,  
Though dearly to my cost, thy gins, and toils ;  
Thy fair enchanted cup and warbling charms  
No more on me have power, their force is nulled ;  
So much of adder's wisdom I have learnt,  
To fence my ear against thy sorceries.  
If in my flower of youth and strength, when all men  
Loved, honoured, feared me, thou alone could'st hate me,  
Thy husband, slight me, sell me, and forego me ; 940  
How would'st thou use me now, blind, and thereby  
Deceivable, in most things as a child  
Helpless, thence easily contemned, and scorned,  
And last neglected ? how would'st thou insult,  
When I must live uxorious to thy will  
In perfect thralldom ; how again betray me,  
Bearing my words and doings to the lords  
To gloss upon, and, censuring, frown or smile !  
This gaol I count the house of liberty  
To thine, whose doors my feet shall never enter. 950

DAL. Let me approach at least and touch thy hand.

SAMS. Not for thy life, lest fierce remembrance wake  
My sudden rage to tear thee joint by joint.  
At distance I forgive thee ; go with that,  
Bewail thy falsehood, and the pious works  
It hath brought forth to make thee memorable  
Among illustrious women, faithful wives :  
Cherish thy hastened widowhood with the gold  
Of matrimonial treason : so farewell.

DAL. I see thou art implacable, more deaf 960  
To prayers than winds and seas ; yet winds to seas

## Samson Agonistes

Are reconciled at length, and sea to shore :  
Thy anger, unappeasable, still rages,  
Eternal tempest never to be calmed.  
Why do I humble thus myself, and, suing  
For peace, reap nothing but repulse and hate,  
Bid go with evil omen, and the brand  
Of infamy upon my name denounced ?  
To mix with thy concernments I desist  
Henceforth, nor too much disapprove my own. 970  
Fame, if not double-faced, is double-mouthed,  
And with contrary blasts proclaims most deeds  
On both his wings, one black, the other white,  
Bears greatest names in his wild aery flight.  
My name perhaps among the circumcised,  
In Dan, in Judah, and the bordering tribes,  
To all posterity may stand defamed,  
With malediction mentioned, and the blot  
Of falsehood most unconjugal traduced. 980  
But in my country, where I most desire,  
In Ecron, Gaza, Asdod, and in Gath,  
I shall be named among the famousest  
Of women, sung at solemn festivals,  
Living and dead recorded, who to save  
Her country from a fierce destroyer chose  
Above the faith of wedlock-bands ; my tomb  
With odours visited and annual flowers ;  
Not less renowned than in Mount Ephraim  
Jael, who with inhospitable guile  
Smote Sisera sleeping through the temples nailed.<sup>1</sup> 990  
Nor shall I count it heinous to enjoy  
The public marks of honour and reward  
Conferred upon me, for the piety  
Which to my country I was judged to have shown.  
At this who ever envies or repines,  
I leave him to his lot, and like my own. [Exit.

CHOR. She's gone, a manifest serpent by her sting,  
Discovered in the end, till now concealed.

SAMS. So let her go : GOD sent her to debase me,  
And aggravate my folly, who committed 1000

<sup>1</sup> Judges v.

## Samson Agonistes

To such a viper His most sacred trust  
Of secrecy, my safety, and my life.

CHOR. Yet beauty, though injurious, hath strange  
After offence returning, to regain [power,  
Love once possessed, nor can be easily  
Repulsed, without much inward passion felt  
And secret sting of amorous remorse.

SAMS. Love-quarrels oft in pleasing concord end ;  
Not wedlock-treachery endangering life.

CHOR. It is not virtue, wisdom, valour, wit, 1010  
Strength, comeliness of shape, or amplest merit,  
That woman's love can win or long inherit ;  
But what it is, hard is to say,  
Harder to hit,  
Which way soever men refer it,  
Much like thy riddle, Samson, in one day  
Or seven, though one should musing sit.

If any of these, or all, the Timnian bride  
Had not so soon preferred  
Thy paranymp<sup>1</sup>,<sup>1</sup> worthless to thee compared, 1020  
Successor in thy bed,  
Nor both so loosely disallied  
Their nuptials, nor this last so treacherously  
Had shorn the fatal harvest of thy head.  
Is it for that such outward ornament  
Was lavished on their sex, that inward gifts  
Were left for haste unfinished, judgment scant,  
Capacity not raised to apprehend  
Or value what is best  
In choice, but ofttest to affect the wrong ? 1030  
Or was too much of self-love mixed,  
Of constancy no root infixed,  
That either they love nothing, or not long ?

Whate'er it be, to wisest men and best  
Seeming at first all heav'nly under virgin veil,  
Soft, modest, meek, demure,  
Once joined, the contrary she proves, a thorn  
Intestine, far within defensive arms  
A cleaving mischief, in his way to virtue

<sup>1</sup> Bridegroom's-man. Judges xiv. 20.

## Samson Agonistes

Adverse and turbulent, or by her charms                   1040  
Draws him awry enslaved  
With dotage, and his sense depraved  
To folly and shameful deeds which ruin ends.  
What pilot so expert but needs must wreck,  
Imbarked with such a steers-mate at the helm?

Favoured of heav'n who finds  
One virtuous, rarely found,  
That in domestic good combines :  
Happy that house ! his way to peace is smooth ;  
But virtue, which breaks through all opposition,   1050  
And all temptation can remove,  
Most shines and most is acceptable above.

Therefore God's universal law  
Gave to the man despotic power  
Over his female in due awe,  
Nor from that right to part an hour,  
Smile she or lour :  
So shall he least confusion draw  
On his whole life, not swayed  
By female usurpation, or dismayed.                   1060

But had we best retire ? I see a storm.

SAMS. Fair days have oft contracted wind and rain.

CHOR. But this another kind of tempest brings.

SAMS. Be less abstruse ; my riddling days are past.

CHOR. Look now for no enchanting voice, nor fear  
The bait of honeyed words ; a rougher tongue  
Draws hitherward, I know him by his stride,  
The giant Harapha of Gath, his look  
Haughty as is his pile high-built and proud.  
Comes he in peace ? what wind hath blown him hither  
I less conjecture than when first I saw                   [1070  
The sumptuous Dalila floating this way :  
His habit carries peace, his brow defiance.

SAMS. Or peace or not, alike to me he comes.

CHOR. His freight<sup>1</sup> we soon shall know, he now  
arrives.

HARAPHA. I come not, Samson, to condole thy  
chance,

<sup>1</sup> Freight ; his purpose, with which he is freighted.

## Samson Agonistes

As these perhaps, yet wish it had not been,  
Though for no friendly intent. I am of Gath,  
Men call me Harapha, of stock renowned  
As Og, or Anak, and the Emims old 1080  
That Kiriathaim<sup>1</sup> held; thou know'st me now,  
If thou at all art known. Much I have heard  
Of thy prodigious might and feats performed,  
Incredible to me, in this displeased,  
That I was never present on the place  
Of those encounters, where we might have tried  
Each other's force in camp or listed field:  
And now am come to see of whom such noise  
Hath walked about, and each limb to survey,  
If thy appearance answer loud report. 1090

SAMS. The way to know were not to see, but taste.

HAR. Dost thou already single me? I thought  
Gyves and the mill had tamed thee. O that fortune  
Had brought me to the field where thou art famed  
To have wrought such wonders with an ass's jaw!  
I should have forced thee soon with other arms,  
Or left thy carcass where the ass lay thrown;  
So had the glory of prowess been recovered  
To Palestine, won by a Philistine  
From the unforeskinned race, of whom thou bearest  
The highest name for valiant acts: that honour [1100  
Certain to have won by mortal duel from thee,  
I lose, prevented by thy eyes put out.

SAMS. Boast not of what thou would'st have done,  
but do

What then thou would'st, thou seest it in thy hand.

HAR. To combat with a blind man I disdain,  
And thou hast need much washing to be touched.

SAMS. Such usage as your honourable lords  
Afford me, assassinated and betrayed,  
Who durst not with their whole united powers 1110  
In fight withstand me single and unarmed,  
Nor in the house with chamber ambushes  
Close-banded durst attack me, no, not sleeping,  
Till they had hired a woman with their gold,

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xiv. 5.

## Samson Agonistes

Breaking her marriage faith to circumvent me.  
Therefore, without feigned shifts, let be assigned  
Some narrow place inclosed, where sight may give  
thee,

Or rather flight, no great advantage on me ;  
'Then put on all thy gorgeous arms, thy helmet  
And brigandine of brass,<sup>1</sup> thy broad habergeon, 1120  
Vant-brass and greaves, and gauntlet, add thy spear,  
A weaver's beam, and seven-times-folded shield ;  
I only with an oaken staff will meet thee,  
And raise such outcries on thy clattered iron,  
Which long shall not withhold me from thy head,  
That in a little time, while breath remains thee,  
Thou oft shalt wish thyself at Gath, to boast  
Again in safety what thou would'st have done  
To Samson, but shalt never see Gath more.

HAR. Thou durst not thus disparage glorious arms,  
Which greatest heroes have in battle worn, [1130  
Their ornament and safety, had not spells  
And black enchantments, some magician's art,  
Armed thee, or charmed thee strong, which thou from  
heav'n

Feign'dst at thy birth was giv'n thee in thy hair,  
Where strength can least abide, though all thy hairs  
Were bristles ranged like those that ridge the back  
Of chafed wild boars or ruffled porcupines.

SAMS. I know no spells, use no forbidden arts ;  
My trust is in the living God, who gave me 1140  
At my nativity this strength, diffused  
No less through all my sinews, joints, and bones,  
Than thine, while I preserved these locks unshorn,  
The pledge of my unviolated vow.  
For proof hereof, if Dagon be thy god,  
Go to his temple, invoke his aid  
With solemnest devotion, spread before him  
How highly it concerns his glory now  
To frustrate and dissolve these magic spells,  
Which I to be the power of Israel's God 1150

<sup>1</sup> Coat of mail, armour for the neck and shoulders. Vant-brace is  
armour for the arms. Greaves covered the legs.

## Samson Agonistes

Avow, and challenge Dagon to the test,  
Offering to combat thee his champion bold,  
With the utmost of his godhead seconded :  
Then thou shalt see, or rather to thy sorrow  
Soon feel, whose GOD is strongest, thine or mine.

HAR. Presume not on thy GOD, whate'er He be,  
Thee He regards not, owns not, hath cut off  
Quite from His people, and delivered up  
Into thy enemies' hand ; permitted them  
To put out both thine eyes, and fettered send thee  
Into the common prison, there to grind [1160  
Among the slaves and asses, thy comrades,  
As good for nothing else, no better service  
With those thy boisterous locks ; no worthy match  
For valour to assail, nor by the sword  
Of noble warrior, so to stain his honour,  
But by the barber's razor best subdued.

SAMS. All these indignities, for such they are  
From thine, these evils I deserve and more,  
Acknowledge them from GOD inflicted on me 1170  
Justly, yet despair not of His final pardon  
Whose ear is ever open, and His eye  
Gracious to readmit the suppliant ;  
In confidence whereof I once again  
Defy thee to the trial of mortal fight,  
By combat to decide whose god is GOD,  
Thine, or Whom I with Israel's sons adore.

HAR. Fair honour that thou dost thy GOD, in trusting  
He will accept thee to defend His cause,  
A murderer, a revolter, and a robber ! 1180

SAMS. Tongue-doughty giant, how dost thou prove  
me these ?

HAR. Is not thy nation subject to our lords ?  
Their magistrates confessed it, when they took thee  
As a league-breaker, and delivered bound  
Into our hands ; for hadst thou not committed  
Notorious murder on those thirty men  
At Ascalon, who never did thee harm,  
Then like a robber strippedst them of their robes ?  
The Philistines, when thou hadst broke the league,



## Samson Agonistes

Went up with armed powers thee only seeking, 1190  
To others did no violence nor spoil.

SAMS. Among the daughters of the Philistines  
I chose a wife, which argued me no foe ;  
And in your city held my nuptial feast :  
But your ill-meaning politician lords,  
Under pretence of bridal friends and guests,  
Appointed to await me thirty spies,  
Who, threat'ning cruel death, constrained the bride  
To wring from me and tell to them my secret,  
That solved the riddle which I had proposed. 1200

When I perceived all set on enmity,  
As on my enemies, wherever chanced,  
I used hostility, and took their spoil  
To pay my underminers in their coin.  
My nation was subjected to your lords ?  
It was the force of conquest ; force with force  
Is well ejected when the conquered can.  
But I, a private person, whom my country  
As a league-breaker gave up bound, presumed  
Single rebellion, and did hostile acts ! 1210

I was no private, but a person raised  
With strength sufficient and command from heav'n  
To free my country ; if their servile minds  
Me their deliverer sent would not receive,  
But to their masters gave me up for nought,  
The unworthier they ; whence to this day they serve.  
I was to do my part from heav'n assigned,  
And had performed it, if my known offence  
Had not disabled me ; not all your force :  
These shifts refuted, answer thy appelland, 1220  
Though by his blindness maimed for high attempts,  
Who now defies thee thrice to single fight,  
As a petty enterprise of small enforce.

HAR. With thee, a man condemned, a slave enrolled,  
Due by the law to capital punishment ?

To fight with thee no man of arms will deign.

SAMS. Camest thou for this, vain boaster, to survey  
me,

To descant on my strength, and give thy verdict ?

## Samson Agonistes

Come nearer ; part not hence so slight informed ;  
But take good heed my hand survey not thee. 1230

HAR. O Baal-zebub !<sup>1</sup> can my ears unused  
Hear these dishonours, and not render death ?

SAMS. No man withholds thee ; nothing from thy  
hand

Fear I incurable ; bring up thy van,  
My heels are fettered, but my fist is free.

HAR. This insolence other kind of answer fits.

SAMS. Go, baffled coward, lest I run upon thee,  
Though in these chains—bulk without spirit vast—  
And with one buffet lay thy structure low,  
Or swing thee in the air, then dash thee down 1240  
To the hazard of thy brains and shattered sides.

HAR. By Astaroth,<sup>2</sup> ere long thou shalt lament  
These braveries in irons loaden on thee. [*Exit.*

CHOR. His giantship is gone, somewhat crestfall'n  
Stalking with less unconscionable strides,  
And lower looks, but in a sultry chafe.

SAMS. I dread him not, nor all his giant brood,  
Though fame divulge him father of five sons,  
All of gigantic size, Goliath chief.

CHOR. He will directly to the lords, I fear, 1250  
And with malicious counsel stir them up  
Some way or other yet further to afflict thee.

SAMS. He must allege some cause, and offered fight  
Will not dare mention, lest a question rise  
Whether he durst accept the offer or not,  
And that he durst not plain enough appeared.  
Much more affliction than already felt  
They cannot well impose, nor I sustain,  
If they intend advantage of my labours,  
The work of many hands, which earns my keeping, 1260  
With no small profit daily to my owners.  
But come what will, my deadliest foe will prove  
My speediest friend, by death to rid me hence,  
The worst that he can give, to me the best.

<sup>1</sup> A deity of the Philistines ; the god of flies.

<sup>2</sup> Another deity of the Philistines and Sidonians. The "Venus" of the East, or, it is thought, the Moon.

## Samson Agonistes

Yet so it may fall out, because their end  
Is hate, not help to me, it may with mine  
Draw their own ruin who attempt the deed.

CHOR. Oh, how comely it is, and how reviving  
To the spirits of just men long oppressed !  
When God into the hands of their deliverer      1270  
Puts invincible might

To quell the mighty of the earth, the oppressor,  
The brute and boisterous force of violent men,  
Hardy and industrious to support  
Tyrannic power, but raging to pursue  
The righteous, and all such as honour truth !  
He all their ammunition  
And feats of war defeats,  
With plain heroic magnitude of mind  
And celestial vigour armed,      1280  
Their armouries and magazines contemns,  
Renders them useless, while  
With wingèd expedition,  
Swift as the lightn'ing glance, he executes  
His errand on the wicked, who, surprised,  
Lose their defence, distracted and amazed.

But Patience is more oft the exercise  
Of saints, the trial of their fortitude,  
Making them each his own deliverer,  
And victor over all      1290  
That tyranny or fortune can inflict :  
Either of these is in thy lot,  
Samson, with might endued  
Above the sons of men ; but sight bereaved  
May chance to number thee with those  
Whom Patience finally must crown.

This idol's day hath been to thee no day of rest,  
Labouring thy mind  
More than the working day thy hands.  
And yet perhaps more trouble is behind,      1300  
For I descry this way  
Some other tending ; in his hand  
A sceptre or quaint staff he bears,  
Comes on amain, speed in his look,

## Samson Agonistes

By his habit I discern him now  
A public officer, and now at hand.  
His message will be short and voluble.

OFF. Hebrews, the pris'ner Samson here I seek.

CHOR. His manacles remark him ; there he sits.

OFF. Samson, to thee our lords thus bid me say :  
This day to Dagon is a solemn feast, [1310  
With sacrifices, triumph, pomp, and games ;  
Thy strength they know surpassing human rate,  
And now some public proof thereof require  
To honour this great feast and great assembly ;  
Rise therefore with all speed and come along,  
Where I will see thee heartened and fresh clad  
To appear as fits before th' illustrious lords.

SAMS. Thou know'st I am an Hebrew ; therefore tell  
them  
Our law forbids at their religious rites 1320  
My presence ; for that cause I cannot come.

OFF. This answer, be assured, will not content  
them.

SAMS. Have they not sword-players, and ev'ry sort  
Of gymnic artists, wrestlers, riders, runners,  
Jugglers and dancers, antics, mummers, mimics,  
But they must pick me out, with shackles tired,  
And over-laboured at their public mill,  
To make them sport with blind activity ?  
Do they not seek occasion of new quarrels,  
On my refusal, to distress me more, 1330  
Or make a game of my calamities ?  
Return the way thou camest ; I will not come.

OFF. Regard thyself ; this will offend them highly.

SAMS. Myself ? my conscience and internal peace.  
Can they think me so broken, so debased  
With corporal servitude, that my mind ever  
Will condescend to such absurd commands ?  
Although their drudge, to be their fool or jester,  
And in my midst of sorrow and heart-grief  
To show them feats, and play before their god, 1340  
The worst of all indignities, yet on me  
Joined with extreme contempt ? I will not come.

## Samson Agonistes

OFF. My message was imposed on me with speed,  
Brooks no delay. Is this thy resolution?

SAMS. So take it with what speed thy message  
needs.

OFF. I am sorry what this stoutness will produce.

[*Exit.*

SAMS. Perhaps thou shalt have cause to sorrow  
indeed.

CHOR. Consider, Samson, matters now are strained  
Up to the height, whether to hold or break.  
He's gone, and who knows how he may report 1350  
'Thy words by adding fuel to the flame?

Expect another message more imperious,  
More lordly thund'ring than thou well wilt bear.

SAMS. Shall I abuse this consecrated gift  
Of strength, again returning with my hair  
After my great transgression, so requite  
Favour renewed, and add a greater sin  
By prostituting holy things to idols;  
A Nazarite in place abominable,  
Vaunting my strength in honour to their Dagon? 1360  
Besides, how vile, contemptible, ridiculous,  
What act more execrably unclean, profane?

CHOR. Yet with this strength thou servest the  
Philistines,  
Idolatrous, uncircumcised, unclean.

SAMS. Not in their idol-worship, but by labour  
Honest and lawful to deserve my food  
Of those who have me in their civil power.

CHOR. Where the heart joins not, outward acts  
defile not.

SAMS. Where outward force constrains, the sen-  
tence holds;  
But who constrains me to the temple of Dagon, 1370  
Not dragging? the Philistian lords command;  
Commands are no constraints. If I obey them,  
I do it freely, venturing to displease  
God for the fear of man, and man prefer,  
Set GOD behind: which in His jealousy  
Shall never, unrepented, find forgiveness.

## Samson Agonistes

Yet that He may dispense with me or thee  
Present in temples at idolatrous rites  
For some important cause, thou need'st not doubt.

CHOR. How thou wilt here come off surmounts my  
reach. 1380

SAMS. Be of good courage, I begin to feel  
Some rousing motions in me, which dispose  
To something extraordinary my thoughts.  
I with this messenger will go along,  
Nothing to do, be sure, that may dishonour  
Our law, or stain my vow of Nazarite.  
If there be aught of presage in the mind,  
This day will be remarkable in my life  
By some great act, or of my days the last. [1390

CHOR. In time thou hast resolved ; the man returns.

OFF. Samson, this second message from our lords  
To thee I am bid say. Art thou our slave,  
Our captive, at the public mill our drudge,  
And darest thou at our sending and command  
Dispute thy coming? come without delay ;  
Or we shall find such engines to assail  
And hamper thee, as thou shalt come of force,  
Though thou wert firmlier fastened than a rock.

SAMS. I could be well content to try their art,  
Which to no few of them would prove pernicious. 1400  
Yet knowing their advantages too many,  
Because they shall not trail me through their streets  
Like a wild beast, I am content to go.  
Masters' commands come with a power resistless  
To such as owe them absolute subjection ;  
And for a life who will not change his purpose ?  
So mutable are all the ways of men !  
Yet this be sure, in nothing to comply  
Scandalous or forbidden in our law.

OFF. I praise thy resolution : doff these links ; 1410  
By this compliance thou wilt win the lords  
To favour, and, perhaps, to set thee free.

SAMS. Brethren, farewell ; your company along  
I will not wish, lest it perhaps offend them  
To see me girt with friends ; and how the sight

## Samson Agonistes

Of me as of a common enemy,  
So dreaded once, may now exasperate them,  
I know not. Lords are lordliest in their wine ;  
And the well-feasted priest then soonest fired  
With zeal, if aught religion seem concerned ; 1420  
No less the people on their holy-days  
Impetuous, insolent, unquenchable :  
Happen what may, of me expect to hear  
Nothing dishonourable, impure, unworthy  
Our GOD, our law, my nation, or myself ;  
The last of me or no I cannot warrant. [Exit.

CHOR. Go, and the Holy One  
Of Israel be thy guide  
To what may serve His glory best, and spread His name  
Great among the heathen round ; 1430  
Send thee the Angel of thy birth, to stand  
Fast by thy side, who from thy father's field  
Rode up in flames after his message told  
Of thy conception, and be now a shield  
Of fire ; that Spirit that first rushed on thee  
In the camp of Dan  
Be efficacious in thee now at need.  
For never was from heaven imparted  
Measure of strength so great to mortal seed,  
As in thy wondrous actions hath been seen. 1440  
But wherefore comes old Manoah in such haste,  
With youthful steps ? much livelier than ere while  
He seems ; supposing here to find his son,  
Or of him bringing to us some glad news ?

MAN. Peace with you, brethren ! 'my inducement  
hither  
Was not at present here to find my son,  
By order of the lords new parted hence,  
To come and play before them at their feast.  
I heard all as I came ; the city rings,  
And numbers thither flock ; I had no will, 1450  
Lest I should see him forced to things unseemly.  
But that which moved my coming now was chiefly  
To give ye part with me what hope I have  
With good success to work his liberty.

## Samson Agonistes

CHOR. That hope would much rejoice us to partake  
With thee ; say, reverend Sire, we thirst to hear.

MAN. I have attempted one by one the lords,  
Either at home or through the high street passing,  
With supplication prone and father's tears,  
To accept of ransom for my son their pris'ner. 1460  
Some much averse I found, and wondrous harsh,  
Contemptuous, proud, set on revenge and spite ;  
That part most revered Dagon and his priests :  
Others more moderate seeming, but their aim  
Private reward, for which both GOD and State  
They easily would set to sale : a third  
More generous far and civil, who confessed  
They had enough revenged, having reduced  
Their foe to misery beneath their fears,  
The rest was magnanimity to remit, 1470  
If some convenient ransom were proposed.—  
What noise or shout was that ? it tore the sky.

CHOR. Doubtless the people shouting to behold  
Their once great dread, captive and blind before them,  
Or at some proof of strength before them shown.

MAN. His ransom, if my whole inheritance  
May compass it, shall willingly be paid  
And numbered down : much rather I shall choose  
To live the poorest in my tribe, than richest,  
And he in that calamitous prison left. 1480  
No, I am fixed not to part hence without him.  
For his redemption all my patrimony,  
If need be, I am ready to forego  
And quit : not wanting him, I shall want nothing.

CHOR. Fathers are wont to lay up for their sons ;  
Thou for thy son are bent to lay out all :  
Sons wont to nurse their parents in old age ;  
Thou in old age carest how to nurse thy son,  
Made older than thy age through eyesight lost.

MAN. It shall be my delight to tend his eyes, 1490  
And view him sitting in the house, ennobled,  
With all those high exploits by him achieved,  
And on his shoulders waving down those locks,  
That of a nation armed the strength contained :



## Samson Agonistes

And I persuade me God hath not permitted  
His strength again to grow up with his hair,  
Garrisoned round about him like a camp  
Of faithful soldiery, were not His purpose  
To use him further yet in some great service,  
Not to sit idle with so great a gift 1500  
Useless, and thence ridiculous, about him.  
And since his strength with eyesight was not lost,  
God will restore him eyesight to his strength.

CHOR. Thy hopes are not ill-founded, nor seem vain,  
Of his delivery, and thy joy thereon  
Conceived, agreeable to a father's love ;  
In both which we, as next, participate.

MAN. I know your friendly minds, and—O what  
noise !

Mercy of heav'n, what hideous noise was that ?  
Horribly loud, unlike the former shout. 1510

CHOR. Noise call you it, or universal groan ?  
As if the whole inhabitation perished !  
Blood, death, and deathful deeds are in that noise,  
Ruin, destruction at the utmost point.

MAN. Of ruin indeed methought I heard the noise.  
Oh, it continues : they have slain my son !

CHOR. Thy son is rather slaying them ; that outcry  
From slaughter of one foe could not ascend.

MAN. Some dismal accident it needs must be :  
What shall we do, stay here, or run and see ? 1520

CHOR. Best keep together here, lest running thither  
We unawares run into danger's mouth.

This evil on the Philistines is fallen ;  
From whom could else a general cry be heard ?

The sufferers then will scarce molest us here ;  
From other hands we need not much to fear.

What if his eyesight (for to Israel's God  
Nothing is hard), by miracle restored,  
He now be dealing dole among his foes,  
And over heaps of slaughtered walk his way ? 1530

MAN. That were a joy presumptuous to be thought.

CHOR. Yet God hath wrought things as incredible  
For His people of old ; what hinders now ?

## Samson Agonistes

MAN. He can, I know, but doubt to think He will ;  
Yet hope would fain subscribe, and tempts belief.  
A little stay will bring some notice hither.

CHOR. Of good or bad so great, of bad the sooner ;  
For evil news rides post, while good news baits.  
And to our wish I see one hither speeding,  
An Hebrew, as I guess, and of our tribe. 1540

MESSENGER. O whither shall I run, or which way fly  
The sight of this so horrid spectacle,  
Which erst my eyes beheld, and yet behold ?  
For dire imagination still pursues me.  
But Providence or instinct of nature seems,  
Or reason, though disturbed and scarce consulted,  
To have guided me aright, I know not how,  
To thee first, reverend Manoah, and to these  
My countrymen, whom here I knew remaining,  
As at some distance from the place of horror, 1550  
So in the sad event too much concerned.

MAN. The accident was loud, and here before thee  
With rueful cry, yet what it was we hear not ;  
No preface needs, thou seest we long to know.

MESS. It would burst forth, but I recover breath,  
And sense distract, to know well what I utter.

MAN. Tell us the sum, the circumstance defer.

MESS. Gaza yet stands, but all her sons are fallen,  
All in a moment overwhelmed and fallen.

MAN. Sad ; but thou know'st to Israelites not  
saddest 1560  
The desolation of a hostile city.

MESS. Feed on that first, there may in grief be  
surfeit.

MAN. Relate by whom.

MESS. By Samson.

MAN. That still lessens  
The sorrow, and converts it nigh to joy.  
MESS. Ah ! Manoah, I refrain too suddenly  
To utter what will come at last too soon ;  
Lest evil tidings with too rude irruption  
Hitting thy aged ear should pierce too deep.

MAN. Suspense in news is torture, speak them out.

## Samson Agonistes

MESS. Take then the worst in brief, Samson is dead. [1570

MAN. The worst indeed! Oh, all my hopes defeated  
To free him hence! but death, who sets all free,  
Hath paid his ransom now and full discharge.  
What windy joy this day had I conceived  
Hopeful of his delivery, which now proves  
Abortive as the first-born bloom of spring  
Nipt with the lagging rear of winter's frost!  
Yet, ere I give the reins to grief, say first,  
How died he? death to life is crown or shame.  
All by him fell, thou say'st; by whom fell he? 1580  
What glorious hand gave Samson his death's wound?

MESS. Unwounded of his enemies he fell.

MAN. Wearied with slaughter, then, or how? explain.

MESS. By his own hands.

MAN. Self-violence? what cause  
Brought him so soon at variance with himself  
Among his foes?

MESS. Inevitable cause

At once both to destroy and be destroyed:  
The edifice, where all were met to see him,  
Upon their heads and on his own he pulled.

MAN. O lastly over-strong against thyself! 1590  
A dreadful way thou took'st to thy revenge.  
More than enough we know; but, while things yet  
Are in confusion, give us, if thou canst,  
Eye-witness of what first or last was done,  
Relation more particular and distinct.

MESS. Occasions drew me early to this city,  
And as the gates I entered with sunrise,  
The morning trumpets festival proclaimed  
Through each high street. Little I had dispatched,  
When all abroad was rumoured, that this day 1600  
Samson should be brought forth to show the people  
Proof of his mighty strength in feats and games;  
I sorrowed at his captive state, but minded  
Not to be absent at that spectacle.  
The building was a spacious theatre,  
Half-round, on two main pillars vaulted high,

## Samson Agonistes

With seats, where all the lords and each degree  
Of sort might sit in order to behold ;  
The other side was open, where the throng  
On banks and scaffolds under sky might stand ; 1610  
I among these aloof obscurely stood.  
The feast and noon grew high, and sacrifice  
Had filled their hearts with mirth, high cheer, and  
wine,

When to their sports they turned. Immediately  
Was Samson as a public servant brought,  
In their state livery clad ; before him pipes  
And timbrels, on each side went armed guards,  
Both horse and foot, before him and behind  
Archers, and slingers, cataphracts,<sup>1</sup> and spears.  
At sight of him the people with a shout 1620  
Rifted the air, clamouring their god with praise,  
Who had made their dreadful enemy their thrall.  
He patient, but undaunted, where they led him,  
Came to the place, and what was set before him,  
Which without help of eye might be assayed,  
To heave, pull, draw, or break, he still performed,  
All with incredible stupendous force,  
None daring to appear antagonist.  
At length, for intermission sake, they led him  
Between the pillars ; he his guide requested, 1630  
For so from such as nearer stood we heard,  
As over-tired, to let him lean awhile  
With both his arms on those two massy pillars,  
That to the arched roof gave main support.  
He, unsuspecting, led him ; which when Samson  
Felt in his arms, with head awhile inclined,  
And eyes fast fixed he stood, as one who prayed,  
Or some great matter in his mind revolved :  
At last, with head erect, thus cried aloud :  
“ Hitherto, lords, what your commands imposed 1640  
I have performed, as reason was, obeying,  
Not without wonder or delight beheld :  
Now of my own accord such other trial  
I mean to show you of my strength, yet greater ;

<sup>1</sup> Men and horses in armour.

## Samson Agonistes

As with amaze shall strike all who behold.”  
This uttered, straining all his nerves, he bowed.  
As with the force of winds and waters pent,  
When mountains tremble, those two massy pillars  
With horrible convulsion to and fro  
He tugged, he shook, till down they came, and drew  
The whole roof after them, with burst of thunder, [1650  
Upon the heads of all who sat beneath,  
Lords, ladies, captains, counsellors, or priests  
Their choice nobility and flower, not only  
Of this, but each Philistian city round,  
Met from all parts to solemnise this feast.  
Samson, with these immixed, inevitably  
Pulled down the same destruction on himself;  
The vulgar only ’scaped who stood without.

CHOR. O dearly-bought revenge, yet glorious! 1660  
Living or dying, thou hast fulfilled  
The work for which thou wast foretold  
To Israel, and now liest victorious  
Among thy slain, self-killed  
Not willingly, but tangled in the fold  
Of dire necessity, whose law in death conjoined  
Thee with thy slaughtered foes in number more  
Than all thy life had slain before.

1 SEMICHOR. While their hearts were jocund and  
sublime,  
Drunk with idolatry, drunk with wine, 1670  
And fat regorged of bulls and goats,  
Chanting their idol, and preferring  
Before our living Dread who dwells  
In Silo<sup>1</sup> His bright sanctuary:  
Among them He a spirit of frenzy sent,  
Who hurt their minds,  
And urged them on with mad desire  
To call in haste for their destroyer;  
They, only set on sport and play,  
Unweetingly importuned 1680  
Their own destruction to come speedy upon them.  
So fond are mortal men,

<sup>1</sup> Where the Ark then was.

## Samson Agonistes

Fallen into wrath divine,  
As their own ruin on themselves to invite,  
Insensate left, or to sense reprobate,  
And with blindness internal struck.

2 SEMICHOR. But he, though blind of sight,  
Despised and thought extinguished quite,  
With inward eyes illuminated,  
His fiery virtue roused 1690  
From under ashes into sudden flame,  
And as an evening dragon came,  
Assailant on the perched roosts  
And nests in order ranged  
Of tame villatic fowl ; but as an eagle  
His cloudless thunder bolted on their heads.  
So virtue, given for lost,  
Depressed and overthrown, as seemed,  
Like that self-begotten bird  
In the Arabian woods imbost, 1700  
That no second knows nor third,  
And lay ere while a holocaust,  
From out her ashy womb now tecmed ;  
Revives, reflowerishes, then vigorous most  
When most unactive deemed ;  
And though her body die, her fame survives  
A secular bird ages of lives.

MAN. Come, come, no time for lamentation now,  
Nor much more cause : Samson hath quit himself  
Like Samson, and heroically hath finished 1710  
A life heroic, on his enemies  
Fully revenged ; hath left them years of mourning,  
And lamentation to the sons of Caphtor<sup>1</sup>  
Through all Philistian bounds. To Israel  
Honour hath left and freedom, let but them  
Find courage to lay hold on this occasion ;  
To himself and father's house eternal fame ;  
And, which is best and happiest yet, all this  
With GOD not parted from him, as was feared,  
But favouring and assisting to the end. 1720

<sup>1</sup> The Philistines are called the sons of Caphtor, because they came originally from the island of Caphtor, or Crete.

## Samson Agonistes

Nothing is here for tears, nothing to wail  
Or knock the breast ; no weakness, no contempt,  
Dispraise, or blame ; nothing but well and fair,  
And what may quiet us in a death so noble.  
Let us go find the body where it lies,  
Soaked in his enemies' blood, and from the stream  
With lavers pure and cleansing herbs wash off  
The clotted gore. I, with what speed the while  
Gaza is not in plight to say us nay,  
Will send for all my kindred, all my friends, 1730  
To fetch him hence, and solemnly attend  
With silent obsequy and funeral train  
Home to his father's house : there will I build him  
A monument, and plant it round with shade  
Of laurel ever green, and branching palm,  
With all his trophies hung, and acts inrolled  
In copious legend, or sweet lyric song.  
Thither shall all the valiant youth resort,  
And from his memory inflame their breasts  
To matchless valour and adventures high : 1740  
The virgins also shall on feastful days  
Visit his tomb with flowers, only bewailing  
His lot unfortunate in nuptial choice,  
From whence captivity and loss of eyes.

CHOR. All is best, though we oft doubt,  
What the unsearchable dispose  
Of Highest Wisdom brings about,  
And ever best found in the close.  
Oft He seems to hide His face,  
But unexpectedly returns, 1750  
And to His faithful champion hath in place  
Bore witness gloriously ; whence Gaza mourns,  
And all that band them to resist  
His uncontrollable intent :  
His servants He, with new acquist  
Of true experience from this great event,  
With peace and consolation hath dismissed,  
And calm of mind, all passion spent.

# Sonnets and Canzone

## I.

### TO THE NIGHTINGALE.

O NIGHTINGALE, that on yon bloomy spray  
Warblest at eve, when all the woods are still,  
Thou with fresh hope the lover's heart dost fill,  
While the jolly hours lead on propitious May.  
Thy liquid notes that close the eye of day,  
First heard before the shallow cuckoo's bill,  
Portend success in love ;<sup>1</sup> O, if Jove's will  
Have linked that amorous power to thy soft lay,  
Now timely sing, ere the rude bird of hate  
Foretell my hopeless doom in some grove nigh ;  
As thou from year to year hast sung too late  
For my relief, yet hadst no reason why :  
Whether the Muse, or Love, call thee his mate,  
Both them I serve, and of their train am I.

<sup>1</sup> A superstition, which originated in Chaucer's "Cuckowe and Nightingale."

" But as I lay this othir night waking,  
I thought how lovers had a tokining,  
And among 'hem it was a commerne tale  
That it were gode to here the Nightingale  
Moche rathir than the leudè Cuckowe singe."  
*Cuckowe and Nightingale, Stanza 10.*



# Sonnets

## II.

### TO AN ITALIAN LADY, PERHAPS LEONORA BARONI.

DONNA leggiadra il cui bel nome honora <sup>1</sup>  
L'herbosa val di Rheno, e il nobil varco,  
Bene è colui d'ogni valore scarco  
Qual tuo spirto gentil non innamora ;  
Che dolcemente mostrasi di fuora  
De sui atti soavi giamai parco,  
E i don', che son d'amor sactte ed arco,  
Là onde l' alta tua virtù s'infiora.  
Quando tu vaga parli, o lieta canti  
Che mover possa duro alpestre legno  
Guardi ciascun agli occhi, ed agli orecchi  
L'entrata, chi di te si truova indegno ;  
Grazia sola di sù gli vaglia, innanti  
Che'l disio amoroso al cuor s'invecchi.

## III.

QUAL in colle aspro, all' imbrunir di sera  
I'avezza giovinetta pastorella  
Va bagnando l'herbetta strana e bella  
Che mal si spande a disusata spera  
Fuor di sua natia alma primavera,  
Così Amor meco insù la lingua snella  
Desta il fior novo di strania favella,  
Mentre io di te, vezzosamente altera,  
Canto, dal mio buon popol non inteso  
E'l bel Tanigi cangio col bell' Arno.  
Amor lo volse, ed io all'altrui peso  
Seppi ch' Amor cosa mai volse indarno.  
Deh ! foss' il mio cuor lento e'l duro seno  
A chi pianta dal ciel si buon terreno.

<sup>1</sup> Onora. The *h* is dropped in modern Italian ; this was the spelling of Milton's age.

# Sonnets

## CANZONE.

RIDONSI donne e giovani amorosi  
M' accostandosi attorno, e " Perchè scrivi,  
Perchè tu scrivi in lingua ignota e strana  
Verseggiando d' amor, e come t'osi?  
Dinne, se la tua speme sia mai vana,  
E de' pensieri lo miglior t'arrivi ";  
Così mi van burlando, " altri rivi  
Altri lidi t'aspettan, ed altre onde  
Nelle cui verdi sponde  
Spuntati ad hor, ad hor <sup>1</sup> alla tua chioma  
L'immortal guiderdon d' eterne frondi  
Perchè alle spalle tue soverchia soma?"  
Canzon dirotti, e tu per me rispondi:  
" Dice mia Donna, e' l suo dir è il mio cuore  
Questa è lingua di cui si vanta Amore."

### IV.

DIODATI, e te'l dirò con maraviglia,  
Quel ritroso io ch'amor spreggiar solea  
È de' suoi lacci spesso mi ridea  
Già caddi, ov'huom dabben talhor s'impiglia.  
Nè trecce d'oro, nè guancia vermiglia  
M'abbaglian sì, ma sotto nova idea  
Pellegrina bellezza che'l cuor bea,  
Portamenti alti honesti, e nelle ciglia  
Quel sereno fulgor d'amabil nero,  
Parole adorne di lingua più d'una,  
E'l cantar che di mezzo l'hemispera  
Traviar ben può la faticosa luna,  
E degli occhi suoi avventa sì gran fuoco  
Che l'incerar gli orecchi mi fia poco.

<sup>1</sup> Ad or, ad or—the *h* is old Italian.

## Sonnets

### v.

PER certo i bei vostr' occhi, Donna mia  
Esser non può che non sian lo mio sole  
Sì mi percuoton forte, come ei suole  
Per l'arene di Libia chi s'invia,  
Mentre un caldo vapor (nè sentì pria)  
Da quel lato si spinge ove mi duole,  
Che forse amanti nelle lor parole  
Chiaman sospir ; io non so che si sia :  
Parte rinchiusa, e turbida si cela  
Scosso mi il petto, e poi n'uscendo poco  
Quivi d' attorno o s'agghiaccia, o singiela ;  
Ma quanto agli occhi giunge a trovar loco  
Tutte le notti a me suol far piovose  
Finchè mia alba rivien colma di rose.

### vi.

GIOVANE piano, e semplicetto amante  
Poichè fuggir me stesso in dubbio sono,  
Madonna, a voi del mio cuor l'humil dono  
Farò divoto ; io certo a prove tante  
L'ebbi fedele, intrepido, costante,  
De' pensieri leggiadro, accorto, e buono ;  
Quando rugge il gran mondo, e scocca il tuono,  
S'arma di se, e d' intero diamante ;  
Tanto del forse, e d' invidia sicuro,  
Di timori, e speranze al popol use  
Quanto d'ingegno, e d'alto valor vago,  
E di cetra sonora, e delle Muse :  
Sol troverete in tal parte men duro  
Ove Amor mise l'insanabil ago.



# Sonnets

## VII.

### ON HIS BEING ARRIVED TO THE AGE OF TWENTY-THREE.<sup>1</sup>

1631.

How soon hath Time, the subtle thief of youth,  
Stolen on his wing my three and twentieth year !  
My hasting days fly on with full career,  
But my late spring no bud or blossom showeth.  
Perhaps my semblance might deceive the truth,  
That I to manhood am arrived so near,  
And inward ripeness doth much less appear,  
That some more timely-happy spirits indueth.  
Yet be it less or more, or soon or slow,  
It shall be still in strictest measure even  
To that same lot, however mean or high,  
Toward which Time leads me, and the will of Heaven.  
All is, if I have grace to use it so,  
As ever in my great Task-master's eye.



## VIII.

### WHEN THE ASSAULT WAS INTENDED TO THE CITY.<sup>2</sup>

1642.

CAPTAIN, or Colonel, or Knight in arms,  
Whose chance on these defenceless doors may seize,  
If deed of honour did thee ever please,  
Guard them, and him within protect from harms.

<sup>1</sup> This sonnet was written at Cambridge, and sent in a letter to a friend.

<sup>2</sup> Written when the King's troops had arrived at Brentford, and London expected an immediate attack.

## Sonnets

He can requite thee, for he knows the charms  
That call fame on such gentle acts as these,  
And he can spread thy name o'er lands and seas,  
Whatever clime the sun's bright circle warms.  
Lift not thy spear against the Muses' bower :  
The great Emathian conqueror <sup>1</sup> bid spare  
The house of Pindarus, when temple and tower  
Went to the ground : and the repeated air  
Of sad Electra's poet <sup>2</sup> had the power  
To save the Athenian walls from ruin bare.



### IX.

#### TO A VIRTUOUS YOUNG LADY.

LADY, that in the prime of earliest youth  
Wisely hast shunned the broad way and the green,  
And with those few art eminently seen,  
That labour up the hill of heavenly truth,

<sup>1</sup> Alexander. He suffered the house of Pindar alone to stand untouched ; and honoured the family of the great lyric poet, while making frightful havoc of the Thebans. Milton claims the same favour from the royal forces.

<sup>2</sup> Euripides. When Lysander had taken Athens, Plutarch tells us that,—

“Some say he really did, in the Council of the Allies, propose to reduce the Athenians to slavery, and that Erianthus, a Theban officer, gave it as his opinion that the city should be levelled with the ground, and the spot on which it stood turned to pasturage.

“Afterwards, however, when the general officers met at an entertainment, a musician of Phocis happened to begin a chorus in the ‘Electra’ of Euripides, the first lines of which are these :—

“‘Unhappy daughter of the great Atrides,\*  
Thy straw-crowned palace I approach.’

“The whole company were greatly moved at this incident, and could not help reflecting how barbarous a thing it would be to raze that noble city, which had produced so many great and illustrious men.”—PLUTARCH, *Life of Lysander*.

Thus Athens was spared ; but in cruel mockery, the Spartan collected all the musicians in the city, and pulled down the fortifications, and burned the Athenian ships, to the sound of their instruments.

---

\* Electra.

## Sonnets

The better part with Mary and with Ruth  
Chosen thou hast ; and they that overween,  
And at thy growing virtues fret their spleen,  
No anger find in thee, but pity and ruth.  
Thy care is fixed, and zealously attends  
To fill thy odorous lamp with deeds of light  
And hope that reaps not shame. Therefore be sure  
Thou, when the Bridegroom with His feastful friends  
Passes to bliss at the mid hour of night,  
Hast gained thy entrance, Virgin wise and pure.



x.

TO THE LADY MARGARET LEY.<sup>1</sup>

1643.

DAUGHTER to that good Earl,<sup>2</sup> once President  
Of England's Council, and her Treasury,  
Who lived in both, unstained with gold or fee,  
And left them both, more in himself content,  
Till sad the breaking of that Parliament  
Broke him, or that dishonest victory  
At Charonea, fatal to liberty,  
Killed with report that old man eloquent.<sup>3</sup>  
Though later born than to have known the days  
Wherein your father flourished, yet by you,  
Madam, methinks I see him living yet ;  
So well your words his noble virtues praise,  
That all both judge you to relate them true,  
And to possess them, honoured Margaret.

<sup>1</sup> Milton used frequently to visit this lady, who married Captain Hobson, of the Isle of Wight.

<sup>2</sup> Earl of Marlborough, Lord High Treasurer, and Lord President of the Council to King James I. Parliament was dissolved the 10th of March 1628-9 ; he died on the 14th, but at an advanced age.

<sup>3</sup> Isocrates, the orator, who could not survive the ruin of his country. Charonea was gained by Philip of Macedon.

# Sonnets

XI.

## ON THE DETRACTION WHICH FOLLOWED UPON MY WRITING CERTAIN TREATISES.

1645.

A BOOK was writ of late called Tetrachordon,<sup>1</sup>  
And woven close, both matter, form, and style ;  
The subject new : it walked the town a while,  
Numb'ring good intellects ; now seldom pored on.  
Cries the stall-reader, " Bless us ! what a word on  
A title-page is this ! " and some in file  
Stand spelling false, while one might walk to Mile  
End Green. Why, is it harder, Sirs, than Gordon,  
Colkitto, or Macdonnel, or Galasp ?<sup>2</sup>  
Those rugged names to our like mouths grow sleek,  
That would have made Quintilian stare and gasp.  
Thy age, like ours, O Soul of Sir John Cheke,<sup>3</sup>  
Hated not learning worse than toad or asp,  
When thou taught'st Cambridge, and king Edward,  
Greek.



XII.

## ON THE SAME.

I DID but prompt the age to quit their clogs  
By the known rules of ancient liberty,  
When straight a barbarous noise environs me  
Of owls and cuckoos, asses, apes, and dogs :<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Tetrachordon means exposition ; it was on the four chief places in Scripture which mention nullities in marriage.

<sup>2</sup> Colkitto and Macdonnel are one and the same person, a brave officer on the royal side, an Irishman of the Antrim family, who served under Montrose. The Macdonnells of that family are styled, by way of distinction, Mac Collicittok, *i.e.* descendants of lame Colin. Galasp is George Gillespie, a Scottish writer against the Independents ; for whom see Milton's verses on the " Forcers of Conscience."—WARTON.

<sup>3</sup> Sir John Cheke has been already named in the notes to this volume. He was the first Professor of Greek at Cambridge, and restored the original pronunciation of it. He was tutor to Edward VI.

<sup>4</sup> Milton's treatises were on the subject of " Divorce." The Presbyterian clergy were much (and justly) scandalised at them, and brought

## Sonnets

As when those hinds that were transformed to frogs<sup>1</sup>  
Railed at Latona's twin-born progeny,  
Which after held the sun and moon in fee.  
But this is got by casting pearl to hogs ;  
That bawl for freedom in their senseless mood,  
And still revolt when truth would set them free.  
Licence they mean when they cry Liberty ;  
For who loves that, must first be wise and good ;  
But from that mark how far they rove we see,  
For all this waste of wealth, and loss of blood.



### XIII.

#### TO MR. H. LAWES<sup>2</sup> ON THE PUBLISHING HIS AIRS.

HARRY, whose tuneful and well-measured song  
First taught our English music how to span  
Words with just note and accent, not to scan  
With Midas' ears, committing short and long ;  
Thy worth and skill exempts thee from the throng,  
With praise enough for envy to look wan ;  
To after age thou shalt be writ the man,  
That with smooth air couldst humour best our tongue.  
Thou honour'st verse, and verse must lend her wing  
To honour thee, the priest of Phœbus' quire,  
That tunest their happiest lines in hymn, or story.<sup>3</sup>  
Dante shall give Fame leave to set thee higher  
Than his Casella,<sup>4</sup> whom he wooed to sing,  
Met in the milder shades of Purgatory.

Milton before the Lords for them ; but they thought the subject simply speculative, and he was discharged. He thus stigmatises the Presbyterian clergy.

<sup>1</sup> See OVID, *Met.* VI. fab. iv. "Latona's progeny" were Apollo and Diana, the sun god and moon goddess.

<sup>2</sup> The musician who put the music to "Comus."

<sup>3</sup> The "Story of Ariadne," set by Lawes.—WARTON.

<sup>4</sup> Amongst the souls in Purgatory, Dante recognises his friend Casella, the musician. In the course of an affectionate conversation, Dante asks for a song to soothe him, and Casella sings, with ravishing sweetness, the poet's second Canzone. See second cant. of Dante's "Purgatorio."



# Sonnets

## XIV.

### ON THE RELIGIOUS MEMORY OF MRS. CATHERINE THOMSON,<sup>1</sup>

MY CHRISTIAN FRIEND, DECEASED 16TH DEC. 1646.

WHEN Faith and Love, which parted from thee never,  
Had ripened thy just soul to dwell with GOD,  
Meekly thou didst resign this earthly load  
Of death, called life ; which us from life doth sever.  
Thy works, and alms, and all thy good endeavour,  
Stayed not behind, nor in the grave were trod ;  
But, as Faith pointed with her golden rod,  
Followed thee up to joy and bliss for ever.  
Love led them on, and Faith, who knew them best  
Thy handmaids, clad them o'er with purple beams  
And azure wings, that up they flew so drest,  
And spake the truth of thee on glorious themes  
Before the Judge, who thenceforth bid thee rest,  
And drink thy fill of pure immortal streams.



## XV.

### TO THE LORD GENERAL FAIRFAX.<sup>2</sup>

1648.

FAIRFAX, whose name in arms through Europe rings,  
Filling each mouth with envy or with praise,  
And all her jealous monarchs with amaze  
And rumours loud, that daunt remotest kings,

<sup>1</sup> When Milton was first made Latin Secretary to Cromwell, he lodged at a Mr. Thomson's, next to the "Bull Head" Tavern, Charing Cross. Mrs. Thomson is supposed to have been the wife of his landlord.—NEWTON.

<sup>2</sup> Addressed to Fairfax at the siege of Colchester. It was first printed, together with the two following sonnets, and the two to Cyriac Skinner, at the end of Phillips's *Life of Milton*, 1694.

## Sonnets

Thy firm unshaken virtue ever brings  
Victory home, though new rebellions raise  
Their Hydra heads, and the false North displays  
Her broken league<sup>1</sup> to imp their serpent wings.  
O yet a nobler task awaits thy hand,  
(For what can war, but endless war still breed?)  
Till truth and right from violence be freed,  
And public faith cleared from the shameful brand  
Of public fraud. In vain doth valour bleed,  
While avarice and rapine share the land.



XVI.

### TO THE LORD GENERAL CROMWELL,

ON THE PROPOSALS OF CERTAIN MINISTERS OF THE  
COMMITTEE FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL.

1652.

CROMWELL, our chief of men, who through a cloud  
Not of war only, but detractions rude,  
Guided by faith and matchless fortitude,  
To peace and truth thy glorious way hast ploughed,  
And on the neck of crowned Fortune proud  
Hast reared GOD's trophies, and His work pursued,  
While Darwen stream<sup>2</sup> with blood of Scots imbrued,  
And Dunbar field resounds thy praises loud,  
And Worcester's<sup>3</sup> laureat wreath. Yet much remains  
To conquer still; peace hath her victories  
No less renowned than war: new foes arise,  
Threatening to bind our souls with secular chains:<sup>4</sup>  
Help us to save free conscience from the paw  
Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw.

<sup>1</sup> The English Parliament held that the Scotch had broken their covenant by marching into England, led by Hamilton.

<sup>2</sup> A small river near Preston, in Lancashire, where Cromwell defeated the Scots under the Duke of Hamilton in August 1648.

<sup>3</sup> Dunbar and Worcester were both fought September 3—one 1650, the other 1651.

<sup>4</sup> He alludes to the Presbyterian clergy. They tried to persuade Cromwell to use the secular power against sectaries.

# Sonnets

XVII.

TO SIR HENRY VANE THE YOUNGER.<sup>1</sup>

1652.

VANE, young in years, but in sage counsel old,  
Than whom a better senator ne'er held  
The helm of Rome, when gowns not arms repelled  
The fierce Epirot and the African bold,  
Whether to settle peace, or to unfold  
The drift of hollow states<sup>2</sup> hard to be spelled,  
Then to advise how war may, best upheld,  
Move by her two main nerves, iron and gold,  
In all her equipage: besides to know  
Both spiritual power and civil, what each means,  
What severs each, thou hast learned, which few have  
done:  
'The bounds of either sword to thee we owe:  
Therefore on thy firm hand Religion leans  
In peace, and reckons thee her eldest son.



XVIII.

ON THE LATE MASSACRE IN PIEDMONT.<sup>3</sup>

AVENGE, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints, whose bones  
Lie scattered on the Alpine mountains cold;  
Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old,  
When all our fathers worshipped stocks and stones,

<sup>1</sup> This sonnet seems to have been written in behalf of the Independents against the Presbyterian hierarchy. Vane was the chief of the Independents, and therefore Milton's friend. He was a most eccentric character, a mixture of the wildest fanaticism and good sense. He was beheaded after the Restoration, 1662.

<sup>2</sup> The States of Holland.

<sup>3</sup> In 1665 the Duke of Savoy determined to make his reformed subjects in Piedmont return to the Roman Church. All who refused compliance with the sovereign's will were massacred. Those who escaped, concealed in their mountain fastnesses, sent to Cromwell for relief. Milton's holy indignation found expression in this fine sonnet, which

## Sonnets

Forget not : in thy book record their groans  
Who were thy sheep, and in their ancient fold  
Slain by the bloody Piedmontese, that rolled  
Mother with infant down the rocks. Their moans  
The vales redoubled to the hills, and they  
To Heav'n. Their martyred blood and ashes sow  
O'er all th' Italian fields, where still doth sway  
The triple tyrant ;<sup>1</sup> that from these may grow  
A hundred fold, who, having learned thy way,  
Early may fly the Babylonian woe.<sup>2</sup>



### XIX.

#### ON HIS BLINDNESS.

WHEN I consider how my light is spent  
Ere half my days, in this dark world and wide,  
And that one talent which is death to hide,  
Lodged with me useless, though my soul more bent  
To serve therewith my Maker, and present  
My true account, lest He returning chide ;  
“ Doth God exact day-labour, light denied ? ”  
I fondly ask : but Patience, to prevent  
That murmur, soon replies : “ God doth not need  
Either man’s work, or His own gifts ; who best  
Bear His mild yoke, they serve Him best : His state  
Is kingly ; thousands at His bidding speed,  
And post o’er land and ocean without rest ;  
They also serve who only stand and wait.”

was of great effect. Cromwell commanded a general fast, and a national contribution for the relief of the sufferers. £40,000 were collected. He then wrote to the Duke ; and so great was the terror of the English name—the Protector threatened that his ships should visit Civita Vecchia—that the persecution was stopped, and the surviving inhabitants of the valleys were restored to their homes and to freedom of worship.

<sup>1</sup> The Pope.

<sup>2</sup> The Papacy.

# Sonnets

xx.

TO MR. LAWRENCE.<sup>1</sup>

LAWRENCE, of virtuous father virtuous son,  
Now that the fields are dank, and ways are mire,  
Where shall we sometimes meet, and by the fire  
Help waste a sullen day, what may be won  
From the hard season gaining? Time will run  
On smother, till Favonius<sup>2</sup> re-inspire  
The frozen earth, and clothe in fresh attire  
The lily and rose, that neither sowed nor spun.  
What neat repast shall feast us, light and choice,  
Of Attic taste, with wine, whence we may rise  
To hear the lute well touched, or artful voice  
Warble immortal notes and Tuscan air?  
He who of those delights can judge, and spare  
To interpose them oft, is not unwise.



xxi.

TO CYRIAC SKINNER.

CYRIAC, whose grandsire<sup>3</sup> on the royal bench  
Of British Themis, with no mean applause  
Pronounced and in his volumes taught our laws,  
Which others at their bar so often wrench;  
To-day deep thoughts resolve with me to drench  
In mirth, that after no repenting draws;  
Let Euclid rest and Archimedes pause,  
And what the Swede<sup>4</sup> intends, and what the French.

<sup>1</sup> Son of Henry Lawrence, Member for Hertfordshire, who was active in settling the Protectorate on Cromwell. Milton's friend was the author of a work called *Of our Communion and Warre with Angels*, etc., 1646. 4to.—TODD.

<sup>2</sup> The West Wind.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Coke. Cyriac Skinner was the son of William Skinner and Bridget, daughter of Lord Coke. He had been a pupil of Milton's, and was one of the principal members of Harrington's Political Club.

<sup>4</sup> Charles Gustavus, King of Sweden, was then at war with Poland, and the French were fighting the Spaniards in the Netherlands.

## Sonnets

To measure life learn thou betimes, and know  
Toward solid good what leads the nearest way ;  
For other things mild Heav'n a time ordains,  
And disapproves that care, though wise in show,  
That with superfluous burden loads the day,  
And, when GOD sends a cheerful hour, refrains.



### XXII.

#### TO THE SAME.

CYRIAC, this three years' day these eyes, though  
clear,  
To outward view, of blemish or of spot,  
Bereft of light, their seeing have forgot,  
Nor to their idle orbs doth sight appear  
Of sun, or moon, or star, throughout the year,  
Or man, or woman. Yet I argue not  
Against Heav'n's hand or will, nor bate a jot  
Of heart or hope ; but still bear up and steer  
Right onward. What supports me, dost thou ask ?  
The conscience, Friend, to have lost them overplied  
In liberty's defence,<sup>1</sup> my noble task,  
Of which all Europe talks from side to side.  
This thought might lead me through the world's vain  
mask,  
Content, though blind, had I no better guide.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When Milton was engaged to answer Salmasius, one of his eyes had nearly lost its sight. The physicians predicted the loss of both, if he used them. But Milton told Du Moulin, "I did not long balance whether my duty should be preferred to my eyes."

<sup>2</sup> The celebrated controversy with Salmasius originated thus: Charles II. employed that great scholar to write a "Dissertation on Monarchy," and to vindicate his father's memory. Salmasius was the greatest scholar of his age. Grotius alone could compete with him. Selden speaks of him as "most admirable." The Council of the Commonwealth, therefore, did wisely in ordering Milton to answer him. How he did so at the price of his sight, we see above.

# Sonnets

XXIII.

## ON HIS DECEASED WIFE.<sup>1</sup>

METHOUGHT I saw my late espoused saint  
Brought to me like Alcestis<sup>2</sup> from the grave,  
Whom Jove's great son to her glad husband gave,  
Rescued from death by force, though pale and  
faint.  
Mine, as whom washed from spot of child-bed taint  
Purification in the old law did save ;  
And such, as yet once more I trust to have  
Full sight of her in heaven without restraint,  
Came vested all in white, pure as her mind :  
Her face was veiled, yet to my fancied sight  
Love, sweetness, goodness, in her person shined  
So clear, as in no face with more delight.  
But oh ! as to embrace me she inclined,  
I waked, she fled, and day brought back my night.



## ON THE NEW FORCERS OF CONSCIENCE UNDER THE LONG PARLIAMENT.

1647. \*

BECAUSE you have thrown off your prelate lord,  
And with stiff vows renounced his liturgy,  
To seize the widowed whore Plurality  
From them whose sin ye envied, not abhorred,

<sup>1</sup> Catherine, the daughter of Captain Woodcock, of Hackney. She died in giving birth to a daughter, a year after her marriage. She was Milton's second wife.

<sup>2</sup> Alcestis, being told by an oracle that her husband Admetus could never recover from a disease unless a friend died for him, willingly laid down her life for him. Hercules, "Jove's great son," brought her back from hell.

## Sonnets

Dare ye for this adjure the civil sword  
To force our consciences that Christ set free,  
And ride us with a classic hierarchy<sup>1</sup>  
Taught ye by mere A. S.<sup>2</sup> and Rotherford?<sup>3</sup>  
Men whose life, learning, faith, and pure intent  
Would have been held in high esteem with Paul,  
Must now be named and printed heretics  
By shallow Edwards<sup>4</sup> and Scotch what d'ye call:<sup>5</sup>  
But we do hope to find out all your tricks,  
Your plots and packing worse than those of Trent,<sup>6</sup>  
That so the Parliament  
May, with their wholesome and preventive shears,  
Clip your phylacteries, though bauk your ears,<sup>7</sup>  
And succour our just fears,  
When they shall read this clearly in your charge,  
New Presbyter is but Old Priest writ large.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In classes, or assemblies. The Presbyterians distributed London into twelve classes; each chose two ministers and four lay elders to represent them in a Provincial Assembly.

<sup>2</sup> Adam Stuart, a polemical writer of the times, who answered the "Independents' Plea for Toleration."

<sup>3</sup> Samuel Rutherford, one of the Chief Commissioners of the Church of Scotland, and an avowed enemy to the Independents, Milton's sect.

<sup>4</sup> Thomas Edwards, who wrote against the Independents.

<sup>5</sup> Perhaps George Gillespie, a Scotch writer against the Independents. Milton hated the Scotch, and ridiculed their names.

<sup>6</sup> The Council of Trent.

<sup>7</sup> Balk, or bauk, is to spare. The meaning is, "Your errors will be corrected, and your ears spared." Our readers will remember that the Star Chamber had inflicted the cruel punishment of loss of ears on Prynne.

<sup>8</sup> More tyrannical than of old.



# Translations

TAKEN FROM MILTON'S PROSE WORKS



## THE FIFTH ODE OF HORACE, LIB. I.

WHAT slender youth, bedewed with liquid odours,  
Courts thee on roses in some pleasant cave,  
Pyrrha? For whom bind'st thou  
In wreaths thy golden hair,  
Plain in thy neatness? O how oft shall he  
On faith and changèd gods complain, and seas  
Rough with black winds, and storms  
Unwonted shall admire!  
Who now enjoys thee credulous, all gold,  
Who always vacant, always amiable  
Hopes thee, of flattering gales  
Unmindful. Hapless they  
To whom thou untried seem'st fair. Me, in my vowed  
Picture, the sacred wall declares to have hung  
My dank and dropping weeds  
To the stern god of sea.



## FROM GEOFFREY OF MONMOUTH.<sup>1</sup>

Brutus thus addresses Diana in the country of Leogecia:—

GODDESS of shades, and huntress, who at will  
Walk'st on the rolling spheres, and through the deep;  
On thy third reign, the earth, look now, and tell  
What land, what seat of rest, thou bidd'st me seek,  
What certain seat, where I may worship thee  
For aye, with temples vowed, and virgin quires.

<sup>1</sup> An ancient British historian and writer. He died 1154.

# Translations

To whom, sleeping before the altar, Diana answers in a vision the same night :—

BRUTUS, far to the west, in the ocean wide,  
Beyond the realm of Gaul, a land there lies,  
Sea-girt it lies, where giants dwelt of old,  
Now void, it fits thy people : thither bend  
Thy course, there shalt thou find a lasting seat ;  
There to thy sons another Troy shall rise,  
And kings be born of thee, whose dreaded might  
Shall awe the world, and conquer nations bold.

## FROM DANTE.

AH, Constantine, of how much ill was cause,  
Not thy conversion, but those rich domains  
That the first wealthy pope received of thee.

## FROM PETRARCH.

FOUNDED in chaste and humble poverty,  
'Gainst them that raised thee dost thou lift thy horn,  
Impudent whore, where hast thou placed thy hope ?  
In thy adulterers, or thy ill-got wealth ?  
Another Constantine comes not in haste.

## FROM ARIOSTO.

THEN passed he to a flow'ry mountain green,  
Which once smelt sweet, now stinks as odiously :  
This was the gift, if you the truth will have,  
That Constantine to good Sylvester gave.

## FROM HORACE.

WHOM do we count a good man ? Whom but he  
Who keeps the laws and statutes of the Senate,  
Who judges in great suits and controversies,  
Whose witness and opinion wins the cause ?  
But his own house, and the whole neighbourhood,  
Sees his foul inside through his whited skin,

# Translations

## FROM HORACE.

ALL barbarous people and their princes too,  
All purple tyrants honour you,  
The very wandering Scythians do.  
Support the pillar of the Roman state,  
Lest all men be involved in one man's fate,  
Continue us in wealth and state,  
Let wars and tumults ever cease.

## FROM HORACE.

THE power that did create can change the scene  
Of things, make mean of great, and great of mean  
The brightest glory can eclipse with might,  
And place the most obscure in dazzling light.

## FROM EURIPIDES.

THIS is true liberty, when freeborn men,  
Having to advise the public, may speak free ;  
Which he who can, and will, deserves high praise  
Who neither can nor will, may hold his peace ;  
What can be juster in a state than this ?

## FROM HORACE.

-LAUGHING, to teach the truth,  
What hinders ? As some teachers give to boys  
Junkets and knacks, that they may learn apace.

## FROM HORACE.

—— JOKING decides great things  
Stronger and better oft than earnest can.

## FROM SOPHOCLES.

'Tis you that say it, not I. You do the deeds,  
And your ungodly deeds find me the words.

# Translations

FROM HOMER.

GLAUCUS, in Lycia we're adored as gods .  
What makes 'twixt us and others so great odds ?

FROM SENECA.

——— THERE can be slain  
No sacrifice to God more acceptable,  
Than an unjust and wicked king.

# Psalms<sup>1</sup>



## PSALM I. DONE INTO VERSE, 1653.

BLESSED is the man who hath not walked astray  
In counsel of the wicked, and i' th' way  
Of sinners hath not stood, and in the seat  
Of scorers hath not sat. But in the great  
Jehovah's law is ever his delight,  
And in His law he studies day and night.  
He shall be as a tree which planted grows  
By watery streams, and in his season knows  
To yield his fruit, and his leaf shall not fall,  
And what he takes in hand shall prosper all.  
Not so the wicked, but as chaff which fanned  
The wind drives, so the wicked shall not stand  
In judgment, or abide their trial then,  
Nor sinners in th' assembly of just men.  
For the Lord knows th' upright way of the just,  
And the way of bad men to ruin must.



## PSALM II. DONE AUG. 8, 1653. TERZETTE.

WHY do the Gentiles tumult, and the nations  
Muse a vain thing, the kings of th' earth upstand  
With pow'r, and princes in their congregations  
Lay deep their plots together through each land

<sup>1</sup> Milton's father composed Psalm tunes; and metrical Psalmody was very popular in Milton's time.

## Psalms

Against the Lord and His Messiah dear?  
Let us break off, say they, by strength of hand  
Their bonds, and cast from us, no more to wear,  
Their twisted cords: He who in heav'n doth dwell  
Shall laugh; the Lord shall scoff them, then severe,  
Speak to them in His wrath, and in His fell  
And fierce ire trouble them; but I, saith He,  
Anointed have my King (though ye rebel)  
On Sion my holy hill. A firm decree  
I will declare; the Lord to me hath said,  
Thou art my Son, I have begotten thee  
This day; ask of me, and the grant is made;  
As thy possession I on thee bestow  
Th' Heathen, and as thy conquest to be swayed  
Earth's utmost bounds: them shalt thou bring full  
low  
With iron sceptre bruised, and them disperse  
Like to a potter's vessel shivered so.  
And now be wise at length, ye kings averse;  
Be taught, ye judges of the earth; with fear  
Jehovah serve, and let your joy converse  
With trembling; kiss the Son lest He appear  
In anger, and ye perish in the way.  
If once His wrath take fire like fuel sere,  
Happy all those who have in Him their stay.



PSALM III. AUG. 9, 1653.

WHEN HE FLED FROM ABSALOM.

LORD, how many are my foes!  
How many those  
That in arms against me rise!  
Many are they  
That of my life distrustfully thus say,  
No help for him in God there lies.  
But thou, Lord, art my shield, my glory,  
Thee through my story.

# Psalms

Th' exalter of my head I count :  
Aloud I cried  
Unto Jehovah, He full soon replied,  
And heard me from His holy mount.  
I lay and slept ; I waked again ;  
For my sustain<sup>1</sup>  
Was the Lord. Of many millions  
The populous rout  
I fear not, though encamping round about  
They pitch against me their pavilions.  
Rise, Lord, save me, my God, for thou  
Hast smote ere now  
On the cheek-bone all my foes,  
Of men abhorred  
Hast broke the teeth. This help was from the Lord ;  
Thy blessing on thy people flows.



## PSALM IV. AUG. 10, 1653.

ANSWER me when I call,  
God of my righteousness,  
In straits and in distress  
Thou didst me disenthral  
And set at large ; now spare,  
Now pity me, and hear my earnest prayer.  
Great ones, how long will ye  
My glory have in scorn,  
How long be thus forborn  
Still to love vanity,  
To love, to seek, to prize  
Things false and vain, and nothing else but lies?  
Yet know the Lord hath chose,  
Chose to Himself apart,  
The good and meek of heart ;  
(For whom to choose He knows)  
Jehovah from on high  
Will hear my voice what time to Him I cry.

<sup>1</sup> The verb used as a substantive. "So 'disturb,' in P. L. VI. 549."

## Psalms

Be awed, and do not sin,  
Speak to your hearts alone,  
Upon your beds, each one,  
And be at peace within.  
Offer the offerings just

Of righteousness, and in Jehovah trust.  
Many there be that say,  
Who yet will show us good?  
Talking like this world's brood;  
But, Lord, thus let me pray;  
On us lift up the light,

Lift up the favour of thy count'nance bright.  
Into my heart more joy  
And gladness thou hast put,  
Than when a year of glut  
Their stores doth overcloy,  
And from their plenteous grounds

With vast increase their corn and wine abounds.  
In peace at once will I  
Both lay me down and sleep  
For thou alone dost keep  
Me safe where'er I lie;  
As in a rocky cell

Thou, Lord, alone in safety makest me dwell



PSALM V. AUG. 12, 1653.

JEHOVAH, to my words give ear,  
My meditation weigh;  
The voice of my complaining hear,  
My King and God; for unto thee I pray.  
Jehovah, thou my early voice  
Shalt in the morning hear:  
I' th' morning I to thee with choice  
Will rank my pray'rs, and watch till thou appear.  
For thou art not a God that takes  
In wickedness delight,



## Psalms

Evil with thee no 'biding makes,  
Fools or madmen stand not within thy sight.  
All workers of iniquity  
Thou hatest ; and them unblest  
Thou wilt destroy that speak a lie ;  
The bloody and guileful man God doth detest.  
But I will, in thy mercies dear,  
Thy numerous mercies, go  
Into thy house ; I, in thy fear,  
Will towards thy holy temple worship low.  
Lord, lead me in thy righteousness,  
Lead me because of those  
That do observe if I transgress,  
Set thy ways right before, where my step goes.  
For in his falt'ring mouth unstable  
No word is firm or sooth ;<sup>1</sup>  
Their inside, troubles miserable ;  
An open grave their throat, their tongue they smooth  
God, find them guilty, let them fall  
By their own counsels quelled ;  
Push them in their rebellions all  
Still on ; for against thee they have rebelled.  
Then all who trust in thee shall bring  
Their joy, while thou from blame  
Defend'st them, they shall ever sing  
And shall triumph in thee, who love thy name.  
For thou, Jehovah, wilt be found  
To bless the just man still ;  
As with a shield thou wilt surround  
Him with thy lasting favour and good-will.



PSALM VI. AUG. 13, 1653.

LORD, in thine anger do not reprehend me  
Nor in thy hot displeasure me correct ;  
Pity me, Lord, for I am much deject,  
And very weak and faint ; heal and amend me ;

<sup>1</sup> True.

## Psalms

For all my bones, that e'en with anguish ache,  
Are troubled, yea, my soul is troubled sore,  
And thou, O Lord, how long? Turn, Lord, restore  
My soul, O save me for thy goodness' sake :  
For in death no remembrance is of thee ;  
Who in the grave can celebrate thy praise ?  
Wearied I am with sighing out my days ;  
Nightly my couch I make a kind of sea ;  
My bed I water with my tears ; mine eye  
Through grief consumes, is waxen old and dark  
I' the midst of all mine enemies that mark.  
Depart all ye that work iniquity,  
Depart from me, for the voice of my weeping  
The Lord hath heard, the Lord hath heard my prayer.  
My supplication with acceptance fair  
The Lord will own, and have me in His keeping.  
Mine enemies shall all be blank and dashed  
With much confusion ; then, grown red with shame,  
They shall return in haste the way they came,  
And in a moment shall be quite abashed.



PSALM VII. AUG. 14, 1653.

UPON THE WORDS OF CHUSH THE BENJAMITE AGAINST HIM.

LORD, my God, to thee I fly ;  
Save me, and secure me under  
Thy protection while I cry,  
Lest as a lion (and no wonder)  
He haste to tear my soul asunder,  
Tearing, and no rescue nigh.

Lord, my God, if I have thought  
Or done this, if wickedness  
Be in my hands, if I have wrought  
Ill to him that meant me peace,  
Or to him have rendered less,  
And not freed my foe for nought ;

## Psalms

Let the enemy pursue my soul  
And overtake it ; let him tread  
My life down to the earth, and roll  
In the dust my glory dead,  
In the dust, and there outspread  
Lodge it with dishonour foul.

Rise, Jehovah, in thine ire,  
Rouse thyself amidst the rage  
Of my foes that urge like fire,  
And wake for me, their fury assuage ;  
Judgment here thou didst engage  
And command, which I desire.

So the assemblies of each nation  
Will surround thee, seeking right,  
Thence to thy glorious habitation  
Return on high, and in their sight.  
Jehovah judgeth most upright  
All people from the world's foundation.

Judge me, Lord, be judge in this  
According to my righteousness,  
And the innocence which is  
Upon me : cause at length to cease  
Of evil men the wickedness  
And their power that do amiss.

But the just establish fast,  
Since thou art the just God that tries  
Hearts and reins. On God is cast  
My defence, and in Him lies,  
In Him who, both just and wise,  
Saves the upright of heart at last.

God is a just judge and severe,  
And God is every day offended ;  
If the unjust will not forbear,  
His sword He whets, His bow hath bended  
Already, and for him intended  
The tools of death, that waits him near.

## Psalms

(His arrows purposely made He  
For them that persecute.) Behold  
He travels big with vanity ;  
Trouble he hath conceived of old  
As in a womb, and from that mould  
Hath at length brought forth a lie.

He digged a pit, and delved it deep,  
And fell into the pit he made :  
His mischief that due course doth keep,  
Turns on his head, and his ill trade  
Of violence will undelayed  
Fall on his crown with ruin steep.

Then will I Jehovah's praise  
According to His justice raise,  
And sing the Name and Deity  
Of Jehovah the Most High.



### PSALM VIII. AUG. 14, 1653.

O JEHOVAH our Lord, how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth !  
So as above the heavens thy praise to set  
Out of the tender mouths of latest birth.

Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou  
Hast founded strength because of all thy foes,  
To stint the enemy, and slack th' avenger's brow,  
That bends his rage thy providence to oppose.

When I behold thy heav'ns, thy fingers' art,  
The moon and stars which thou so bright hast set  
In the pure firmament, then saith my heart,  
O what is man that thou remember'st yet,

And think'st upon him ; or of man begot,  
That him thou visit'st, and of him art found ?  
Scarce to be less than gods, thou mad'st his lot,  
With honour and with state thou hast him crowned.

# Psalms

O'er the works of thy hand thou madest him lord,  
Thou hast put all under his lordly feet ;  
All flocks, and herds, by thy commanding word,  
All beasts that in the field or forest meet,

Fowl of the heavens, and fish that through the wet  
Sea paths in shoals do slide, and know no dearth.  
O Jehovah our Lord, how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth !



APRIL, 1648.

Nine of the Psalms done into metre, wherein all, but what is in a different character, are the very words of the text, translated from the original.

## PSALM LXXX.

THOU Shepherd that dost Israel *keep*,  
Give ear *in time of need*,  
Who ledest like a flock of sheep  
*Thy lovèd Joseph's seed ;*

That sitt'st between the Cherubs *bright*,  
*Between their wings outspread*,  
Shine forth, *and from thy cloud give light*,  
*And on our foes thy dread.*

In Ephraim's view and Benjamin's,  
And in Manasseh's sight,  
Awake thy strength, come, and *be seen*  
To save us *by thy might.*

Turn us again, *thy grace divine*  
*To us, O God, vouchsafe ;*  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.

Lord God of Hosts, how long wilt thou,  
How long wilt thou declare  
Thy smoking wrath, *and angry brow*  
Against thy people's prayer !

## Psalms

Thou feed'st them with the bread of tears,  
Their bread with tears they eat,  
And mak'st them largely drink the tears  
*Wherewith their cheeks are wet.*

A strife thou mak'st us *and a prey*  
To every neighbour foe;  
Among themselves they laugh; they play,  
And flouts at us they throw.

Return us, *and thy grace divine,*  
O God of Hosts, *vouchsafe;*  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.

A Vine from Egypt thou hast brought,  
*Thy free love made it thine,*  
And drovest out nations, *proud and haught,*  
To plant this *lovely* vine.

Thou didst prepare for it a place,  
And root it deep and fast;  
That it *began to grow apace,*  
*And filled the land at last.*

With her *green* shade that covered *all,*  
The hills were *overspread;*  
Her boughs as *high as* cedars tall  
*Advanced their lofty head.*

Her branches *on the western side*  
Down to the sea she sent,  
And *upward* to that river *wide*  
Her other branches *went.*

Why hast thou laid her hedges low,  
And broken down her fence,  
That all may pluck her, as they go,  
*With rudest violence?*

The *tuskèd* boar out of the wood  
Up turns it by the roots;  
Wild beasts there browse, and make their food  
*Her grapes and tender shoots.*

## Psalms

Return now, God of Hosts, look down  
From Heav'n, thy seat divine ;  
Behold *us, but without a frown,*  
And visit this *thy* vine.

Visit this vine, which thy right hand  
Hath set, and planted *long,*  
And the young branch, that for thyself  
Thou hast made firm and strong.

But now it is consumed with fire,  
And cut *with axes* down ;  
They perish at thy dreadful ire,  
At thy rebuke and frown.

Upon the man of thy right hand  
Let thy *good* hand *be laid,*  
Upon the son of man, whom thou  
Strong for thyself hast made.

So shall we not go back from thee  
*To ways of sin and shame,*  
Quicken us thou, then *gladly* we  
Shall call upon thy Name.

Return us, *and thy grace divine,*  
Lord God of Hosts, *vouchsafe ;*  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.



### PSALM LXXXI.

To God our strength sing loud, *and clear,*  
Sing loud to God *our King,*  
To Jacob's God, *that all may hear,*  
Loud acclamations ring.

Prepare a hymn, prepare a song,  
The timbrel hither bring,  
The *cheerful* psaltery bring along,  
And harp *with pleasant string.*

## Psalms

Blow, *as is wont*, in the new moon  
With trumpets' *lofty sound*,  
The appointed time, the day whereon  
Our solemn feast *comes round*.

This was a statute *giv'n of old*  
For Israel *to observe*,  
A law of Jacob's God, *to hold*,  
*From whence they might not swerve*.

This He a testimony ordained  
In Joseph, *not to change*,  
When as he passed through Egypt land,  
The tongue I heard was strange.

From burden *and from slavish toil*  
I set his shoulder free ;  
His hands from pots, *and miry soil*,  
Delivered were *by me*.

When trouble did thee sore assail,  
*On me then* didst thou call,  
And I to free thee *did not fail*,  
*And led thee out of thrall*.

I answered thee in thunder deep,  
With clouds encompassed round ;  
I tried thee at the water steep  
Of Meribah *renowned*.

Hear, O my people, *hearken well* ;  
I testify to thee,  
*Thou ancient stock of Israel*,  
If thou wilt list to me :

Throughout the land of thy abode  
No alien god shall be,  
Nor shalt thou to a foreign god  
In honour bend thy knee.

I am the Lord thy God, which brought  
Thee out of Egypt land ;  
Ask large enough, and I, *besought*,  
Will grant thy full demand.



## Psalms

And yet my people would not *hear*,  
Nor hearken to my voice ;  
And Israel, *whom I loved so dear*,  
Misliked me for his choice.

Then did I leave them to their will,  
And to their wand'ring mind ;  
Their own conceits they followed still,  
Their own devices blind.

O that my people would *be wise*,  
To serve me *all their days* !  
And O that Israel would *advise*  
To walk my *righteous ways* !

Then would I soon bring down their foes,  
*That now so proudly rise*,  
And turn my hand against *all those*  
*That are* their enemies.

Who hate the Lord should *then be fain*  
To bow to Him and bend,  
But *they, His people, should remain*,  
Their time should have no end.

And He would feed them *from the shock*  
With flour of finest wheat,  
And satisfy them from the rock  
With honey *for their meat*.



### PSALM LXXXII.

GOD in the great assembly stands  
Of kings and lordly states,  
Among the gods, on both His hands,  
He judges and debates.

How long will ye pervert the right  
With judgment false and wrong,  
Favouring the wicked *by your might*,  
*Who thence grow bold and strong* ?

## Psalms

Regard the weak and fatherless,  
Despatch the poor man's cause,  
And raise the man in deep distress  
By just and equal laws.

Defend the poor and desolate,  
And rescue from the hands  
Of wicked men the low estate  
Of him *that help demands*.

'They know not, nor will understand,  
In darkness they walk on ;  
'The earth's foundations all are moved,  
And out of order gone.

I said that ye were gods, yea all  
The sons of God Most High ;  
But ye shall die like men, and fall  
As other princes *die*.

Rise, God, judge thou the earth *in might*,  
This *wicked* earth redress,  
For thou art He who shall by right  
The nations all possess.



### PSALM LXXXIII.

BE not thou silent *now at length*,  
O God, hold not thy peace ;  
Sit thou not still, O God of *strength*,  
*We cry, and do not cease*.

For lo, thy *furious* foes *now* swell,  
And storm outrageously,  
And they that hate thee *proud and fell*  
Exalt their heads full high.

Against thy people they contrive  
Their plots and counsels deep ;  
Them to ensnare they chiefly strive,  
Whom thou dost hide and keep.

## Psalms

"Come, let us cut them off," say they,  
"Till they no nation be,  
That Israel's name for ever may  
Be lost in memory."

For they consult with all their might,  
And all as one in mind  
Themselves against thee they unite,  
And in firm union bind.

The tents of Edom, and the brood  
Of *scornful* Ishmael,  
Moab, with them of Hagar's blood,  
*That in the desert dwell,*

Gebal and Ammon *there conspire,*  
And *hateful* Amalek,  
The Philistines, and they of Tyre,  
*Whose bounds the sea doth check.*

With them *great* Ashur also bands,  
*And doth confirm the knot :*  
*All these have lent their armed hands*  
To aid the sons of Lot.

Do to them as to Midian *bold,*  
*That wasted all the coast,*  
To Sisera, and as *is told*  
*Thou didst* to Jabin's host,

*When* at the brook of Kishon *old*  
*They were repulsed and slain,* •  
At Endor quite cut off, and rolled  
As dung upon the plain.

As Zeb and Oreb evil sped,  
So let their princes speed,  
As Zeba and Zalmunna *bled,*  
So let their princes *bleed.*

*For they amidst their pride* have said,  
By right now shall we seize  
God's houses, and *will now invade*  
Their stately palaces.

## Psalms

My God, O make them as a wheel,  
*No quiet let them find ;*  
Giddy and *restless* let them reel,  
Like stubble from the wind.

As *when* an aged wood takes fire  
*Which on a sudden strays,*  
The *greedy* flame runs higher and higher,  
Till all the mountains blaze ;

So with thy whirlwind them pursue,  
And with thy tempest chase ;  
And till they yield thee honour due,  
Lord, fill with shame their face.

Ashamed and troubled let them be,  
Troubled and shamed for ever,  
Ever confounded, and so die  
With shame, *and 'scape it never.*

Then shall they know that thou whose name  
Jehovah is alone,  
Art the Most High, *and thou the same*  
O'er all the earth *art one.*



### PSALM LXXXIV.

How lovely are thy dwellings fair !  
O Lord of Hosts, how dear  
The *pleasant* tabernacles are,  
*Where thou dost dwell so near !*

My soul doth long and almost die  
Thy courts, O Lord, to see ;  
My heart and flesh aloud do cry,  
O living God, for thee-

There ev'n the sparrow, *freed from wrong,*  
Hath found a house of *rest,*  
The swallow there, to lay her young,  
Hath built her *brooding* nest ;

## Psalms

Even by thy altars, Lord of Hosts,  
*They find their safe abode,*  
*And home they fly from round the coasts*  
*Toward thee, my King, my God.*

Happy, who in thy house reside,  
Where thee they ever praise ;  
Happy, whose strength in thee doth 'bide,  
And in their hearts thy ways.

They pass through Baca's *thirsty* vale,  
*That dry and barren ground,*  
As through a fruitful watery dale  
Where springs and showers abound.

They journey on from strength to strength  
*With joy and gladsome cheer,*  
*Till all before our God at length*  
In Sion do appear.

Lord God of Hosts, hear *now* my prayer,  
O Jacob's God, give ear,  
Thou God our shield, look on the face  
Of thy anointed *dear*.

For one day in thy courts *to be*  
Is better, *and more blest,*  
Than *in the joys of vanity*  
A thousand days *at best*.

I in the temple of my God  
Had rather keep a door,  
Than dwell in tents, *and rich abode,*  
With sin *for evermore*.

For God the Lord, both sun and shield,  
Gives grace and glory *bright,*  
No good from them shall be withheld  
Whose ways are just and right.

Lord God of Hosts, *that reign'st on high.*  
That man is *truly* blest,  
Who *only* on thee doth rely,  
And in thee only rest.

# Psalms

## PSALM LXXXV.

THY land to favour graciously  
Thou hast not, Lord, been slack ;  
Thou hast from *hard* captivity  
Returnèd Jacob back.

Th' iniquity thou didst forgive  
*That wrought* thy people woe,  
And all their sin, *that did thee grieve*,  
Hast hid *where none shall know*.

Thine anger all thou hadst removed,  
And *calmly* didst return  
From thy fierce wrath which we had proved  
Far worse than fire to burn.

God of our saving health and peace,  
Turn us, and us restore ;  
Thine indignation cause to cease  
Towards us, *and chide no more*.

Wilt thou be angry without end,  
For ever angry thus ;  
Wilt thou thy frowning ire extend  
From age to age on us ?

Wilt thou not turn, and *hear our voice*,  
And us again revive,  
That so thy people may rejoice,  
By thee preserved alive ?

Cause us to see thy goodness, Lord,  
To us thy mercy show,  
Thy saving health to us afford,  
*And life in us renew*.

*And now*, what God the Lord will speak,  
I will *go straight* and hear,  
For to His people He speaks peace,  
And to His saints *full dear*,

## Psalms

To His dear saints He will speak peace ;  
But let them never more  
Return to folly, *but surcease*  
*To trespass as before.*

Surely to such as do Him fear  
Salvation is at hand,  
And glory shall *ere long appear*  
*To dwell within our land.*

Mercy and Truth, *that long were missed,*  
Now *joyfully* are met ;  
*Sweet* Peace and Righteousness have kissed,  
*And hand in hand are set.*

'Truth from the earth, *like to a flow'r,*  
Shall bud and blossom then,  
And Justice from her heav'nly bow'r  
Look down *on mortal men.*

The Lord will also then bestow  
Whatever thing is good,  
Our land shall forth in plenty throw  
Her fruits *to be our food.*

Before Him righteousness shall go,  
*His royal harbinger ;*  
Then will He come, and not be slow,  
His footsteps cannot err.



### PSALM LXXXVI.

THY *gracious* ear, O Lord, incline,  
O hear me, I *thee pray,*  
For I am poor, and almost pine  
With need, *and sad decay.*

Preserve my soul, for I have trod  
Thy ways, and love the just,  
Save thou thy servant, O my God,  
Who *still* in thee doth trust.

## Psalms

Pity me, Lord, for daily thee  
I call ; O make rejoice  
Thy servant's soul ; for, Lord, to thee  
I lift my soul *and voice*.

For thou art good, thou, Lord, art prone  
To pardon ; thou to all  
Art full of mercy ; thou *alone*  
To them that on thee call.

Unto my supplication, Lord,  
Give ear, and to the cry  
Of my *incessant* pray'rs afford  
Thy hearing graciously.

I in the day of my distress  
Will call on thee *for aid* ;  
For thou wilt *grant* me *free access*,  
*And answer what I prayed*.

Like thee among the gods is none,  
O Lord, nor any works  
*Of all that other gods have done*  
Like to thy *glorious* works.

The nations all whom thou hast made,  
Shall come, *and all shall frame*  
To bow them low before thee, Lord,  
And glorify thy name.

For great thou art, and wonders great  
By thy strong hand are done,  
Thou *in thy everlasting seat*  
Remainest God alone.

Teach me, O Lord, thy way *most right*,  
I in thy truth will 'bide,  
To fear thy name my heart unite.  
*So shall it never slide*.

Thee will I praise, O Lord my God,  
*Thee honour and adore*  
With my whole heart, and blaze abroad  
Thy name for evermore.



## Psalms

For great thy mercy is toward me,  
And thou hast freed my soul,  
Ev'n from the lowest hell set free,  
*From deepest darkness foul.*

O God, the proud against me rise,  
And violent men are met  
To seek my life, and in their eyes  
No fear of thee have set.

But thou, Lord, art the God most mild,  
Readiest thy grace to show,  
Slow to be angry, and *art styled*  
Most merciful, most true.

O turn to me *thy face at length*,  
And me have mercy on ;  
Unto thy servant give thy strength,  
And save thy handmaid's son.

Some sign of good to me afford,  
And let my foes *then* see,  
And be ashamed, because thou, Lord,  
Dost help and comfort me.



### PSALM LXXXVII.

AMONG the holy mountains *high*  
Is His foundation fast,  
*There seated in His sanctuary,*  
*His temple there is placed.*

Sion's *fair* gates the Lord loves more  
Than all the dwellings *fair*  
Of Jacob's *land*, *though there be store,*  
*And all within His care.*

City of God, most glorious things  
Of thee *abroad* are spoke ;

## Psalms

I mention Egypt, *where proud kings*  
*Did our forefathers yoke.*

I mention Babel to my friends,  
Philistia *full of scorn,*  
And Tyre with Ethiop's *utmost ends,*  
Lo this man there was born :

But *twice that praise shall in our ear*  
Be said of Sion *last,*  
This and this man was born in her ;  
High God shall fix her fast.

The Lord shall write it in a scroll  
That ne'er shall be out-worn,  
When He the nations doth enroll,  
That this man there was born.

Both they who sing, and they who dance,  
*With sacred songs are there ;*  
In thee *fresh brooks, and soft streams glance,*  
*And all my fountains clear.*



### PSALM LXXXVIII.

LORD GOD, that dost me save and keep,  
All day to thee I cry ;  
And all night long before thee *weep,*  
Before thee *prostrate lie.*

Into thy presence let my prayer  
*With sighs devout ascend,*  
And to my cries, that *ceaseless are,*  
Thine ear with favour bend.

• For, cloyed with woes and trouble store,  
Surcharged my soul doth lie,  
My life, *at death's uncheerful door,*  
Unto the grave draws nigh.

## Psalms

Reckoned I am with them that pass  
Down to the *dismal* pit ;  
I am a man, but weak, alas !  
And for that name unfit.

From life discharged and parted quite,  
Among the dead to *sleep*,  
And like the slain *in bloody fight*,  
That in the grave lie *deep*.

Whom thou rememberest no more,  
Dost never more regard,  
Them from thy hand delivered o'er  
*Death's hideous house hath barred.*

Thou in the lowest pit *profound*  
Hast set me *all forlorn*,  
Where thickest darkness *hovers round*,  
In horrid deeps *to mourn*.

Thy wrath, *from which no shelter saves*,  
Full sore doth press on me ;  
Thou break'st upon me all thy waves,  
And all thy waves break me.

Thou dost my friends from me estrange,  
And makest me odious,  
Me to them odious, *for they change*,  
And I here pent up thus.

Through sorrow and affliction great,  
Mine eye grows dim and dead ;  
Lord, all the day I thee intreat,  
My hands to thee I spread.

Wilt thou do wonders on the dead ?  
Shall the deceased arise,  
And praise thee *from their loathsome bed*  
*With pale and hollow eyes ?*

Shall they thy loving-kindness tell  
On whom the grave *hath hold* ?  
Or they who in perdition *dwell*,  
Thy faithfulness *unfold* ?

## Psalm

In darkness can thy mighty *hand*  
Or wondrous acts be known?  
Thy justice in the *gloomy* land  
Of *dark* oblivion?

But I to thee, O Lord, do cry,  
*Ere yet my life be spent,*  
And *up to thee* my pray'r *doth hie*  
Each morn, and thee prevent.

Why wilt thou, Lord, my soul forsake,  
And hide thy face from me,  
That am already bruised, and shake  
With terror sent from thee?

Bruised and afflicted, and *so low*  
As ready to expire,  
While I thy terrors undergo,  
Astonished with thine ire.

Thy fierce wrath over me doth flow,  
Thy threat'nings cut me through:  
All day they round about me go,  
Like waves they me pursue.

Lover and friend thou hast removed,  
And severed from me far:  
They *fly me now* whom I have loved,  
And as in darkness are.



### A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM CXIV.<sup>1</sup>

WHEN the blest seed of Terah's faithful son,  
After long toil their liberty had won,  
And past from Pharian fields to Canaan land,  
Led by the strength of the Almighty's hand,

<sup>1</sup> This and the following Psalm are Milton's earliest performances. He was only fifteen when he translated them. The first he afterwards translated into Greek.

## Psalms

Jehovah's wonders were in Israel shown,  
His praise and glory was in Israel known.  
That saw the troubled sea, and shivering fled,  
And sought to hide his froth-becurled head  
Low in the earth ; Jordan's clear streams recoil,  
As a faint host that hath received the foil.  
The high, huge-bellied mountains skip like rams  
Amongst their ewes, the little hills like lambs.  
Why fled the ocean ? And why skipped the mountains ?  
Why turned Jordan toward his crystal fountains ?  
Shake, Earth, and at the presence be aghast  
Of Him that ever was, and aye shall last ;  
That glassy floods from rugged rocks can crush,  
And make soft rills from fiery flint-stones gush.



### PSALM CXXXVI.

LET us with a gladsome mind  
Praise the Lord, for He is kind :  
For His mercies aye endure,  
Ever faithful, ever sure.

Let us blaze His name abroad,  
For of gods He is the God :  
For His, etc.

O let us His praises tell,  
Who doth the wrathful tyrants quell :  
For His, etc.

Who with His miracles doth make  
Amazèd heav'n and earth to shake :  
For His, etc.

Who by His wisdom did create  
The painted heavens so full of state :  
For His, etc.

Who did the solid earth ordain  
To rise above the watery plain :  
For His, etc.

## Psalms

Who by His all-commanding might  
Did fill the new-made world with light :  
For His, etc.

And caused the golden-tressèd sun  
All the day long his course to run :  
For His, etc.

The hornèd moon to shine by night,  
Amongst her spangled sisters bright :  
For His, etc.

He with His thunder-clasping hand  
Smote the first-born of Egypt land :  
For His, etc.

And in despite of Pharaoh fell,  
He brought from thence His Israel :  
For His, etc.

The ruddy waves He cleft in twain,  
Of the Erythræan main : <sup>1</sup>  
For His, etc.

The floods stood still like walls of glass,  
While the Hebrew bands did pass :  
For His, etc.

But full soon they did devour  
The tawny king with all his power :  
For His, etc.

His chosen people He did bless  
In the wasteful wilderness :  
For His, etc.

In bloody battle He brought down  
Kings of prowess and renown :  
For His, etc.

He foiled bold Seon and his host,  
That ruled the Amorrean coast :  
For His, etc.

<sup>1</sup> Red Sea.

## Psalms

And large-limbed Og He did subdue,  
With all his over-hardy crew :  
For His, etc.

And to His servant Israel  
He gave their land therein to dwell :  
For His, etc.

He hath with a piteous eye  
Beheld us in our misery :  
For His, etc.

And freed us from the slavery  
Of the invading enemy :  
For His, etc.

All living creatures He doth feed,  
And with full hand supplies their need :  
For His, etc.

Let us therefore warble forth  
His mighty majesty and worth :  
For His, etc.

That His mansion hath on high  
Above the reach of mortal eye :  
For His mercies aye endure,  
Ever faithful, ever sure.



### PSALM CXIV.

Ἰσραὴλ ὅτε παῖδες, ὅτ' ἀγλαὰ φύλ' Ἰακώβον  
Αἰγύπτιον λίπε δῆμον, ἀπεχθέα, βαρβαρόφωνον,  
Δὴ τότε μόνον ἦν ὅσιον γένος υἱες Ἰουδα.  
Ἐν δὲ θεὸς λαοῖσι μέγα κρείων βασιλευεν.  
Εἶδε, καὶ ἐντροπάδην φύγαδ' ἐρρώωσε θάλασσα  
Κύματι εἰλυμένη ροθίῳ, ὃ δ' ἄρ' ἐστυφελίχθη  
Ἰρὸς Ἰορδάνης ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν.  
Ἐκ' δ' ὄρεα σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέοντο,  
Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγύωντες εὐτραφερῶ ἐν ἀλωῇ.

# Psalms

Βαιοτέραι δ' ἅμα πάσαι ἀνασκίρτησαν ἐρίπναι,  
 Οἷα παραὶ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρει ἄρνες.  
 Τίπτει σύγ', αἰνὰ θάλασσα, πέλωρ φύγαδ' ἐρρώησας  
 Κύματι εἰλυμένη ῥοθίῳ; τί δ' ἄρ' ἐστνυφελίχθης  
 Ἰρὺς Ἰορδάνῃ ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν;  
 Τίπτ' ὄρεα, σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέεσθε,  
 Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγόνοντες ἔντραφεῶ ἐν ἀλῶῃ;  
 Βαιοτέραι τὶ δ' ἄρ' ὕμμες ἀνασκιρτήσατ' ἐρίπναι,  
 Οἷα παραὶ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρει ἄρνες;  
 Σείεο γαῖα τρέονσα θεὸν μεγάλ' ἐκτυπέοντα  
 Γαῖα, θεὸν τρέιουσ' ὕπατον σέβας Ἰσοακίδαο,  
 Ὃς τε καὶ ἐκ σπιλᾶδων ποταμοὺς χέει μορμύροντας,  
 Κρήνηντ' ἀέναον πέτρης ἀπὸ δακρυοέσσης.

Philosophus ad regem quendam, qui eum ignotum et insontem inter reos forte captum  
 inscius damnaverat, τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ πορευόμενος, hæc subito misit.

ὦ ἄνα, εἰ ὀλέσης με τὸν ἔννομον, οὐδέ τιν' ἀνδρῶν  
 Δεινὸν ὅλως δράσαντα, σοφώτατον ἴσθι κάρηνον  
 Ῥηϊδίως ἀφέλοιо, τὸ δ' ὕστερον αἰθι νοήσεις,  
 Μαψιδίως δ' ἄρ' ἔπειτα τεὸν πρὸς θυμὸν ὀδυρὴ,  
 Τοιόνδ' ἐκ πόλιος περιώνυμον ἄλκαρ ὀλέσσης.

In Effigiei ejus Sculptorem.

Ἀμαθεῖ γεγράφθαι χειρὶ τήνδε μὲν εἰκόνα  
 Φαίης τάχ' ἂν, πρὸς εἶδος αὐτοφυὲς βλέπων,  
 Τὸν δ' ἐκτυπωτὸν οὐκ ἐπιγνόντες, φίλοι,  
 Γελάτε φαύλου δυσμύμημα ζωγράφου.



# Johannis Miltoni Londinensis Poemata



Quorum pleraque intra annum ætatis vigesimum conscripsit.

HÆC quæ sequuntur de Autóre testimonia, tametsi ipse intelligebat non tam de se quam supra se esse dicta, eo quod præclaro ingenio viri, nec non amici ita fere solent laudare, ut omnia suis potius virtutibus, quam veritati, congruentia nimis cupide affingant, noluit tamen horum egregiam in se voluntatem non esse notam; cum alii præsertim ut id faceret magnopere suaderent. Dum enim nimix laudis invidiam totis ab se viribus amolitur, sibi quod plus æquo est non attributum esse mavult, judicium interim hominum cordatorum atque illustrium quin summo sibi honori ducat, negare; non potest.

Joannes Baptista Mansus, Marchio Villensis, Neapolitanus, ad Joannem Miltonium Anglum.

UT mens, forma, decor, facies, mos, si pietas sic.  
Non *Anglus*, verùm herclè *Angelus* ipse, fores.

Ad Joannem Miltonem Anglum triplici poeseos laureâ coronandum, Græcâ nimirum Latinâ, atque Hetruscâ, Epigramma Joannis Salsilli Romani.

CEDE Meles; cedat depressâ Mincius urnâ;  
Sebetus Tassum desinat usque loqui;  
At Thamesis victor cunctis ferat altior undas;  
Nam per te, Milto, par tribus unus erit.

Ad Joannem Miltonum.

GRÆCIA Mæonidem, jactet sibi Roma Maronem,  
Anglia Miltonum jactat utrique parem.

SELVAGGI.

# Ode

Al Signor Gio. Miltoni Nobile Inglese.

## ODE.

ERGIMI all' Etra ò Clio  
Perchè di stelle intreccierò corona !  
Non più del Biondo Dio  
La Fronde eterna in Pindo, e in Elicon  
Diensi a merto maggior, maggiori i fregi  
A' celeste virtù celesti pregi.

Non può del tempo edace  
Rimaner preda, eterno alto valore ;  
Non può l' obbligo rapace  
Furar dalle memorie eccelso onore,  
Su l' arco di mia cetra un dardo forte  
Virtù m' adatti, e ferirò la morte.

Del Ocean profondo  
Cinta dagli ampi gorgi Anglia resiede  
Separata dal mondo,  
Però che il suo valor l' umano eccede  
Questa feconda sà produrre Eroi,  
Ch' hanno a ragion del sovrumano tra noi.

Alla virtù sbandita  
Danno nei petti lor fido ricetta,  
Quella gli è sol gradita,  
Perchè in lei san trovar gioia, e diletto ;  
Ridillo tu, Giovanni, e mostra in tanto  
Con tua vera virtù, vero il mio Canto.

Lungi dal Patrio lido  
Spinse Zeusi l' industrie ardente brama ;  
Ch' odio d' Helena il grido  
Con aurea tromba rimbombar la fama,  
E per poterla effigiare al paro  
Dalle più belle Idee trasse il più raro.

## Ode

Così l'ape ingegnosa  
Trae con industria il suo liquor pregiato  
Dal giglio e dalla rosa,  
E quanti vaghi fiori ornano il prato ;  
Formano un dolce suon diverse chorde,  
Fan varie voci melodia concorde.

Di bella gloria amante  
Milton dal Ciel natio per varie parti  
Le peregrine piante  
Volgesti a ricercar scienze, ed arti ;  
Del Gallo regnator vedesti i Regni,  
E dell' Italia ancor gl' Eroi più degni.

Fabro quasi divino  
Sol virtù rintracciando il tuo pensiero  
Vide in ogni confino  
Chi di nobil valor calca il sentiero ;  
L' ottimo dal miglior dopo scegliea  
Per fabbricar d' ogni virtù l' idea.

Quanti nacquero in Flora  
O in lei del parlar Tosco appreser l' arte,  
La cui memoria onora  
Il mondo fatta eterna in dotte carte,  
Volesti ricercar per tuo tesoro,  
E parlasti con lor nell' opre loro.

Nell' altera Babelle  
Per te il parlar confuse Giove in vano,  
Che per varie favelle  
Di se stessa trofeo cadde sul piano :  
Ch' Ode oltr' all' Anglia il suo più degno Idioma  
Spagna, Francia, Toscana, e Grecia, e Roma.

I più profondi arcani  
Ch' occulta la natura e in cielo e in terra  
Ch' à Ingegni sovrumani

## Ode

Troppo avaro talhor gli chiude, e serra,  
Chiaramente conosci, e giungi al fine  
Della moral virtude al gran confine.

Non batta il Tempo l' ale,  
Fermisi immoto, e in un ferminsi gli anni,  
Che di virtù immortale  
Scorron di troppo ingiuriosi a i danni ;  
Che s' opre degne di Poema e storia  
Furon già, l'hai presenti alla memoria.

Dammi tua dolce Cetra  
Se vuoi ch' io dica del tuo dolce canto,  
Ch' inalzandoti all' Etra  
Di farti huomo celeste ottiene il vanto,  
Il Tamigi il dirà che gl' è concesso  
Per te suo cigno pareggiar Permesso.

Io che in riva del Arno  
Tento spiegar tuo merto alto, e preclaro,  
So che fatieo indarno,  
E ad ammirar, non a lodarlo imparo ;  
Freno dunque la lingua, e ascolto il core  
Che ti prende a lodar con lo stupore.

Del sig. ANTONIO FRANCINI,  
Gentilhuomo Fiorentino.

# Joanni Miltoni Londinensi



Juveni patria, virtutibus eximio,  
VIRO qui multa peregrinatione, studio cuncta orbis terrarum  
loca perspexit, ut novus Ulysses omnia ubique ab omnibus  
apprehenderet :

Polyglotto, in cujus ore linguæ jam deperditæ sic  
reviviscunt, ut idiomata omnia sint in ejus laudibus in-  
facunda ; et jure ea percallet ut admirationes et plausus  
populorum ab propria sapientia excitatos intelligat :

Illi, cujus animi dotes corporisque sensus ad admirationem  
commovent, et per ipsam motum cuique auferunt ; cujus  
opera ad plausus hortantur, sed venustate vocem laudatoribus  
adimunt :

Cui in memoria totus orbis ; in intellectu sapientia ; in  
voluntate ardor gloriæ ; in ore eloquentia ; harmonicos  
cœlestium sphaerarum sonitus astronomia duce audienti ;  
characteres mirabilium naturæ per quos Dei magnitudo  
describitur, magistra philosophia legente ; antiquitatum  
latebras, vetustatis excidia, eruditionis ambages, comite  
assidua autorum lectione,

Exquirenti restauranti, percurrenti :  
*At cur tutor in arduum ?*

Illi in cujus virtutibus evulgandis ora Famæ non sufficiant,  
nec hominum stupor in laudandis satis est, reverentiæ et  
amoris ergo hoc ejus meritis debitum admirationis tributum  
offert CAROLUS DATUS, Patricius Florentinus,

Tanto homini servus, tantæ virtutis amator.

## ELEGIARUM LIBER.



### ELEG. I. AD CAROLUM DEODATUM.<sup>1</sup>

1627.

TANDEM, chare, tuæ mihi pervenere tabellæ,  
Pertulit et voces nuncia charta tuas ;  
Pertulit, occiduâ Devæ Cestrensis ab orâ  
Vergivium prono quâ petit amne salum.  
Multum, crede, juvat terras aluisse remotas  
Pectus amans nostri, tamque fidele caput,  
Quoddque mihi lepidum tellus longinqua sodalem  
Debet, at unde brevi reddere jussa velit.  
Me tenet urbs reflua quam Thamesis alluit undâ,  
Meque, nec invitum, patria dulcis habet,  
Jam nec arundiferum mihi cura revisere Camum,  
Nec dudum vetiti me laris angit amor :  
Nuda nec arva placent, umbrasque negantia molles ;  
Quàm male Phœbicolis convenit ille locus !  
Nec duri libet usque minas perferre Magistri,  
Cæteraque ingenio non subeunda meo.  
Si sit hoc exilium patrios adiisse penates,  
Et vacuum curis otia grata sequi,  
Non ego vel profugi nomen sortemve recuso,  
Lætus et exilii conditione fruor.  
O utinam vates nunquam graviora tulisset  
Ille Tomitano flebilis exul agro ;  
Non tunc Ionio quicquam cessisset Homero,  
Neve foret victo laus tibi prima, Maro.  
Tempora nam licet hic placidis dare libera Musis.  
Et totum rapiunt me, mea vita, libri.  
Excipit hinc fessum sinuosi pompa theatri,  
Et vocat ad plausus garrula scena suos.  
Seu catus auditur senior, seu prodigus hæres.

<sup>1</sup> Charles Diodati was a schoolfellow of Milton at St. Paul's. He was the son of Theodore Diodati, an Italian physician who settled in England, and nephew of Giovanni Diodati, who translated the Bible into Italian.

## Elegiarum Liber

Seu procus, aut positâ casside miles adest,  
Sive decennali fœcundus lite patronus  
Detonat inculto barbara verba foro ;  
Sæpe vafer gnato succurrit servus amanti,  
Et nasum rigidi fallit ubique patris ;  
Sæpe novos illic virgo mirata calores  
Quid sit amor nescit, dum quoque nescit, amat  
Sive cruentatum furiosa Tragœdia sceptrum  
Quassat, et effusis crinibus ora rotat ;  
Et dolet et specto, juvat et spectasse dolendo,  
Interdum et lacrymis dulcis amator inest ;  
Seu puer infelix indelibata reliquit  
Gaudia, et abrupto flendus amore cadit ;  
Seu ferus è tenebris iterat Styga criminis ultor,  
Conscia funereo pectora torre movens :  
Seu mœret Pelopeia domus, seu nobilis Ili,  
Aut luit incestos aula Crœontis avos.  
Sed neque sub tecto semper nec in urbe latemus,  
Irrita nec nobis tempora veris eunt.  
Nos quoque lucus habet vicina consitus ulmo,  
Atque suburbanî nobilis umbra loci.  
Sæpius hic blandas spirantia sidera flammæ  
Virgineos videas præterisse choros.  
Ah quoties dignæ stupui miracula formæ,  
Quæ possit senium vel reparare Jovis !  
Ah quoties vidi superantia lumina gemmas,  
Atque faces, quotquot volvit uterque polus ;  
Collaque bis vivi Pelopis quæ brachia vincant  
Quæque fluit puro nectare tincta via ;  
Et decus eximium frontis, tremulosque capillos.  
Aurea quæ fallax retia tendit Amor ;  
Pellacesque genas, ad quas hyacinthina sordet  
Purpura, et ipse tui floris, Adoni, rubor !  
Cedite laudatæ toties Herôides olim,  
Et quæcunque vagum cepit amica Jovem :  
Cedite Achæmenia turritâ fronte puellæ,  
Et quot Susa colunt, Memnoniamque Ninon :  
Vos etiam Danaæ fascès submitte Nymphæ,  
Et vos Iliacæ, Romuleæque nurus :  
Nec Pompeianas Tarpeia Musa columnas

## Elegiarum Liber

Jactet, et Ausoniis plena theatra stolis.  
Gloria Virginibus debetur prima Britannis,  
Extera sat tibi sit fœmina posse sequi.  
Tuque urbs Dardaniis, Londinum, structa colonis,  
Turrigerum latè conspicienda caput,  
Tu nimium felix intra tua mœnia claudis  
Quicquid formosi pendulus orbis habet.  
Non tibi tot cœlo scintillant astra sereno,  
Endymioncæ turba ministra deæ,  
Quot tibi, conspicuæ formæque auroque, puellæ  
Per medias radiant turba videnda vias.  
Creditur huc geminis venisse invecta columbis  
Alma pharetrigero milite cincta Venus,  
Huic Cnidon, et riguas Simoentis flumine valles,  
Huic Paphon, et roseam posthabitura Cypron.  
Ast ego, dum pueri sinit indulgentia cæci,  
Mœnia quàm subitò linquere fausta paro;  
Et vitare procul malefidæ infamia Circes  
Atria, divini Molyos usus ope.  
Stat quoque juncosas Cami remeare paludes,  
Atque iterum raucæ murmur adire Scholæ.  
Interea fidi parvum cape munus amici,  
Paucaque in alternos verba coacta modos.



### ELEG. II. ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

(*Written during Milton's first stay at Cambridge.*)

IN OBITUM PRÆCONIS ACADEMICI CANTABRIGIENSIS.<sup>1</sup>

1626.

TE, qui conspicuus baculo fulgente solebas  
Palladium toties ore ciere gregem,  
Ultima præconum præconem te quoque sæva  
Mors rapit, officio nec favet ipsa suo;  
Candidiora licet fuerint tibi tempora plumis  
Sub quibus accipimus delituisse Jovem;

<sup>1</sup> Richard Redding, M.A., of St. John's, Cambridge. He died in October 1626.



## Elegiarum Liber

O dignus tamen Hæmonio juvenescere succo,  
Dignus in Æsonios vivere posse dies,  
Dignus quem Stygiis medicâ revocaret ab undis  
Arte Coronides, sæpe rogante deâ :  
Tu si jussus eras acies accire togatas,  
Et celer a Phœbo nuntius ire tuo,  
Talis in Iliacâ stabat Cyllenius aulâ  
Alipes, ætherea missus ab arce Patris :  
Talis et Eurybates ante ora furentis Achillei  
Rettulit Atridæ jussa severa ducis.  
Magna sepulchrorum regina, satellites Averni,  
Sæva nimis Musis, Palladi sæva nimis,  
Quin illos rapias qui pondus inutile terræ ?  
Turba quidem est telis ista petenda tuis.  
Vestibus hunc igitur pullis, Academia, luge,  
Et madeant lachrymis nigra feretra tuis.  
Fundat et ipsa modos querebunda Elegia tristes,  
Personet et totis nænia mœsta scholis.



### ELEG. III. ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

IN OBITUM PRÆSULIS WINTONIENSIS.<sup>1</sup>

1626.

MÆSTUS eram, et tacitus nullo comitante sedebam,  
Hærebantque animo tristia plura meo,  
Protinus en subiit funestæ cladis imago,  
Fecit in Angliaco quam Libitina solo ;  
Dum procerum ingressa est splendentes marmore  
turies.  
Dira sepulchrali Mors metuenda face ;  
Pulsavitque auro gravidos et jaspide muros,  
Nec metuit satrapum sternere falce greges.  
Tunc memini clarique ducis, fratrisque verendi  
Intempestivis ossa cremata rogis :  
Et memini Heroum quos vidit ad æthera raptos.  
Flevit et amissos Belgia tota duces :

<sup>1</sup> Lancelot Andrewes.

## Elegiarum Liber

At te præcipuè luxi, dignissime Præsul,  
Wintoniæque olim gloria magna tuæ;  
Delicui fletu, et tristi sic ore querebar:  
    “Mors fera, Tartareo diva secunda Jovi,  
Nonne satis quod sylva tuas persentiat iras,  
    Et quod in herbosos jus tibi detur agros,  
Quodque afflata tuo marcescant lilia tabo,  
    Et crocus, et pulchræ Cypridi sacra rosa;  
Nec sinis, ut semper fluvio contermina quercus  
    Miretur lapsus prætereuntis aquæ?  
Et tibi succumbit, liquido quæ plurima coelo  
    Evehitur pennis, quamlibet augur avis,  
Et quæ mille nigris errant animalia sylvis,  
    Et quot alunt mutum Proteos antra pecus  
Invida, tanta tibi cum sit concessa potestas,  
    Quid juvat humanâ tingere cæde manus?  
Nobileque in pectus certas acuisse sagittas,  
    Semideamque animam sede fugâsse sua?”  
Talâ dum lacrymans alto sub pectore volvo,  
    Roscidus occiduis Hesperus exit aquis,  
Et Tartessiaco submerserat æquore currum  
    Phœbus, ab Eöô littore mensus iter:  
Nec mora, membra cavo posui refovenda cubili,  
    Condiderant oculos noxque soporque meos;  
Cum mihi visus eram lato spatiarier agro:  
    Heu! nequit ingenium visa referre meum.  
Illic punicea radiabant omnia luce,  
    Ut matutino cum juga sole rubent.  
Ac veluti cum pandit opes Thaumantia proles,  
    Vestitu nituit multicolore solum:  
Non dea tam variis ornavit floribus hortos  
    Alcinoi, Zephyro Chloris amata levi.  
Flumina vernantes lambunt argentea campos,  
    Ditior Hesperio flavet arena Tago.  
Serpit odoriferas per opes levis aura Favoni,  
    Aura sub innumeris humida nata rosis.  
Talis in extremis terræ Gangetidis oris  
    Luciferi regis fingitur esse domus.  
Ipse racemiferis dum densas vitibus umbras,  
    Et pelluentes miror ubique locos,

## Elegiarum Liber

Ecce mihi subito Præsul Wintonius, astat,  
Sidereum nitido fulsit in ore jubar ;  
Vestis ad auratos defluxit candida talos,  
Infula divinum cinxerat alba caput.  
Dumque senex tali incedit venerandus amictu,  
Intremuit læto florea terra sono.  
Agnina genimatis plaudunt cœlestia pennis,  
Pura triumphali personat æthra tubâ.  
Quisque novum amplexu comitem cantuque salutat,  
Hosque aliquis placido misit ab ore sonos :  
“Nate, veni, et patrii felix cape gaudia regni,  
Semper abhinc duro, nate, labore vaca.”  
Dixit, et aligeræ tetigerunt nabilia turmæ :  
At mihi cum tenebris aurea pulsa quies.  
Flebam turbatos Cephaleiâ pellice somnos :  
Talia contingant somnia sæpe mihi.



### ELEG. IV. ANNO ÆTATIS 18.

Ad Thomam Junium<sup>1</sup> præceptorem suum, apud mercatores Anglicos Hamburgæ agentes, Pastoris munere fungentem.

CURRE per immensum subitò, mea littera, pontum :  
I, pete Teutonicos læve per æquor agros :  
Segnes rumpe moras, et nil, precor, obstet eunti,  
Et festinantis nil remoretur iter.  
Ipse ego Sicanio frænantem carcere ventos  
Æolon, et virides sollicitabo Deos,  
Cæruleamque suis comitatam Dorida Nymphis,  
Ut tibi dent placidam per sua regna viam.  
At tu, si poteris, celeres tibi sume jugales,  
Vecta quibus Colchis fugit ab ore viri ;  
Aut queis Triptolemus Scythicas devenit in oras,  
Gratas Eleusina missus ab urbe puer.  
Atque ubi Germanas flavere videbis arenas,  
Ditis ad Hamburgæ mœnia flecte gradum,  
Dicitur occiso quæ ducere nomen ab Hamâ,  
Cimbrica quem fertur clava dedisse neci :

<sup>1</sup> Young was private tutor to Milton before he went to St. Paul's School.

## Elegiarum Liber

Vivit ibi antiquæ clarus pietatis honore  
Præsul, Christicolas pascere doctus oves ;  
Ille quidem est animæ plusquam pars altera nostræ,  
Dimidio vitæ vivere cogor ego.  
Hei mihi quot pelagi, quot montes interjecti,  
Me faciunt aliâ parte carere mei !  
Charior ille mihi, quàm tu, doctissime Graium  
Cliniadi, pronepos qui Telamonis erat ;  
Quàmque Stagyriles generoso magnus alumno,  
Quem peperit Lybico Chaonis alma Jovi.  
Qualis Amyntorides, qualis Philyræius Heros  
Myrmidonum regi, talis et ille mihi.  
Primus ego Aónios illo, præeunte, recessus  
Lustrabam, et bifidi sacra vireta jugi ;  
Pieriosque hausit latices ; Clioque favente,  
Castalio sparsi læta ter ora mero.  
Flammeus at signum ter viderat arictis Æthon,  
Induxitque auro lanea terga novo ;  
Bisque novo terram sparsisti, Chlorig, senilem  
Gramine, bisque tuas abstulit Auster opes :  
Necdum ejus licuit mihi lumina pascere vultu,  
Aut linguæ dulces aure bibisse sonos.  
Vade igitur, cursuque Eurum præverte sonorum,  
Quàm sit opus monitis, res docet ipsa, vides.  
Invenies dulci cum conjuge fortè sedentem,  
Mulcentem gremio pignora chara suo.  
Forsitan aut veterum prælarga volumina patrum  
Versantem, aut veri Biblia sacra Dei :  
Coelestive animas saturantem rore tenellas ;  
Grande salutiferæ religionis opus.  
Utque solet, multam sit dicere cura salutem,  
Dicere quam decuit, si modo adesset, herum.  
Hæc quoque, paulum oculos in humum defixa modestos  
Verba verecundo sis memor ore loqui :  
“ Hæc tibi, si teneris vacat inter prælia Musis,  
Mittit ab Angliaco littore fida manus.  
Accipe sinceram, quamvis sit sera, salutem ;  
Fiat et hoc ipso gratior illa tibi.  
Sera quidem, sed vera fuit, quam casta recepit  
Icaris à lento Penelopeia viro.

## Elegiarum Liber

Ast ego quid volui manifestum tollere crimen  
Ipse quod ex omni parte levare nequit ?  
Arguitur tardus meritò, noxamque fatetur,  
Et pudet officium deseruisse suum.  
Tu modò da veniam fasso, veniamque roganti,  
Crimina diminui, quæ patuere, solent.  
Non fetus in pavidos rictus diducit hiantes,  
Vulnifico pronos nec rapit ungue leo.  
Sæpe sarissiferi crudelia pectora Thracis  
Supplicis ad mœstas deliquere preces :  
Extensæque manus avertunt fulminis ictus,  
Placat et iratos hostia parva Deòs.  
Jamque diu scripsisse tibi fuit impetus illi,  
Neve moras ultra ducere passus Amor ;  
Nam vaga Fama refert, heu nuntia vera malorum.  
In tibi finitimis bella tumere locis,  
Teque tuamque urbem truculento milite cingi,  
Et jam Saxonicos arma parâsse dūces.  
Te circum latè campos populatur Enyo,  
Et sata carne virum jam cruor arva rigat ;  
Germanisque suum concessit Thracia Martem,  
Illuc Odrysios Mars pater egit equos ;  
Perpetuòque comans jam deflorescit oliva,  
Fugit et ærisonam Diva perosa tubam,  
Fugit io terris, et jam non ultima virgo  
Creditor ad superas justa volâsse domos.  
Te tamen interea belli circumsonat horror,  
Vivis et ignoto solus inopsque solo ;  
Et, tibi quam patrii non exhibuere penates,  
Sede peregrinâ quæris egenus opem  
Patria dura parens, et saxis sævior albis  
Spumea quæ pulsat littoris unda tui,  
Siccine te decet innocuos exponere foetus,  
Siccine in externam ferrea cogis humum,  
Et sinis ut terris quærant alimenta remotis  
Quos tibi prospiciens miserat ipse Deus ;  
Et qui læta ferunt de cœlo nuntia, quique,  
Quæ via post cineres ducat ad astra, docent ?  
Digna quidem Stygiis quæ vivas clausa tenebris,  
Æternaque animæ digna perire fame !

## Elegiarum Liber

Haud aliter vates terræ Thesbitidis olim  
Pressit inassueto devia tesqua pede,  
Desertasque Arabum salebras dum regis Achabi  
Effugit, atque tuas, Sidoni dira, manus :  
Talis et horriso laceratus membra flagello,  
Paulus ab Æmathiâ pellitur urbe Cilix.  
Piscosæque ipsum Gergessæ civis Iesum  
Finibus ingratus jussit abire suis.  
At tu sume animos, nec spes cadat anxia curis,  
Nec tua concutiat decolor ossa metus.  
Sis etenim quamvis fulgentibus obsitus armis,  
Intententque tibi millia tela necem,  
At nullis vel inmerme latus violabitur armis,  
Deque tuo cuspis nulla cruore bibet.  
Namque cris ipse Dei radiante sub ægide tutus,  
Ille tibi custos, et pugil ille tibi ;  
Ille Sionæ qui tot sub mœnibus arcis  
Assyrios fudit nocte silente viros ;  
Inque fugam vertit quos in Samaritidas oras  
Misit ab antiquis prisca Damascus agris,  
Terruit et densas pavido cum rege cohortes,  
Aere dum vacuo buccina clara sonat,  
Cornea pulvereum dum verberat ungula campum,  
Currus arenosam dum quatit actus humum,  
Auditurque hinnitus equorum ad bella ruentûm,  
Et strepitus ferri, murmuraque alta virûm.  
Et tu (quod superest miseris) sperare memento,  
Et tua magnanimo pectore vince mala ;  
Nec dubites quandoque frui melioribus annis,  
Atque iterum patrios posse videre lares."



ELEG. V. ANNO ÆTATIS 20.

IN ADVENTUM VERIS.

In se perpetuo Tempus revolubile gyro  
Jam revocat Zephyros, vere tepente, novos ;  
Induiturque brevem Tellus reparata juventam,  
Jamque soluta gelu dulcè virescit humus.

## Elegiarum Liber

Fallor? an et nobis redeunt in carmina vires,  
Ingeniumque mihi munere veris adest?  
Munere veris adest, iterumque vigescit ab illo,  
(Quis putet?) atque aliquod jam sibi poscit opus.  
Castalis ante oculos, bifidumque cacumen oberrat,  
Et mihi Pyrenen somnia nocte ferunt;  
Concitaque arcano fervent mihi pectora motu,  
Et furor, et sonitus me sacer intus agit.  
Delius ipse venit, video Penëide lauro  
Implicitos crines, Delius ipse venit.  
Jam mihi mens liquidi raptatur in ardua cœli,  
Perque vagas nubes corpore liber eo;  
Perque umbras, perque antra feror penetralia vatum,  
Et mihi fana patent interiora Deum;  
Intuiturque animus toto quid agatur Olympo,  
Nec fugiunt oculos Tartara cæca meos.  
Quid tam grande sonat distento spiritus ore?  
Quid parit hæc rabies, quid sacer iste furor?  
Ver mihi, quod dedit ingenium, cantabitur illo;  
Profuerint isto reddita dona modo.  
Jam, Philomela, tuos, foliis adoperta novellis,  
Instituis modulos, dum silet omne nemus:  
Urbe ego, tu sylvâ, simul incipiamus utrique,  
Et simul adventum veris uterque canat.  
Veris io rediere vices, celebremus honores  
Veris, et hoc subeat Musa perennis opus.  
Jam sol Æthiopas fugiens Tithoniaque arva,  
Flectit ad Arctoas aurea lora plagas.  
Est breve noctis iter, brevis est mora noctis opacæ,  
Horrida cum tenebris exulat illa suis.  
Jamque Lycaonius plastrum cœleste Bootes  
Non longa sequitur fessus ut ante viâ;  
Nunc etiam solitas circum Jovis atria toto  
Excubias agitant sidera rara polo:  
Nam dolus, et cædes, et vis cum nocte recessit  
Neve Giganteum Dii timere scelus.  
Fortè aliquis scopuli recubans in vertice pastor,  
Roscida cum primo sole rubescit humus,  
"Hæc," ait, "hæc certè caruisti nocte puellâ,  
Phœbe, tuâ, celeres quæ retineret equos."

## Elegiarum Liber

Læta suas repetit sylvas, pharetramque resumit  
Cynthia, Luciferas ut videt alta rotas ;  
Et tenues ponens radios, gaudere videtur  
Officium fieri tam breve fratris ope.  
“Desere,” Phœbus ait, “thalamos, Aurora, seniles,  
Quid juvat effæto procubuisse toro ?  
Te manet Æolides viridi venator in herbâ :  
Surge, tuos ignes altus Hymettus habet.”  
Flava verecundo dea crimen in ore fatetur,  
Et matutinos ocliis urget equos.  
Exiit invisam Tellus rediviva senectam,  
Et cupit amplexus, Phœbe, subire tuos ;  
Et cupit, et digna est. Quid enim formosius illâ,  
Pandit ut omniferos luxuriosa sinus,  
Atque Arabum spirat messes, et ab ore venusto  
Mitia cum Paphiis fundit amoma rosis ?  
Ecce coronatur sacro frons ardua luco,  
Cingit ut Idæam pinea turris Opim ;  
Et vario madidos intexit flore capillos,  
Floribus et visa est posse placere suis.  
Floribus effusos ut erat redimita capillos,  
Tænario placuit diva Sicana Deo.  
Aspice, Phœbe, tibi faciles hortantur amores,  
Mellitasque movent flamina verna preces :  
Cinnamea Zephyrus leve plaudit odorifer alâ,  
Blanditiasque tibi ferre videntur aves.  
Nec sine dote tuos temeraria quærit amores  
Terra, nec optatos poscit egena toros ;  
Alma salutiferum medicos tibi gramen in usus  
Præbet, et hinc titulos adjuvat ipsa tuos :  
Quòd si te pretium, si te fulgentia tangunt  
Munera, (muneribus sæpe coemptus Amor)  
Illa tibi ostentat quascunque sub æquore vasto,  
Et superinjectis montibus abdit opes.  
Ah, quoties, cum tu clivoso fessus Olympo  
In vespertinas præcipitaris aquas,  
“Cur te,” inquit, “cursu languentem, Phœbe, diurno  
Hesperiiis recipit Cærula mater aquis ?  
Quid tibi cum Tethy ? Quid cum Tartesside lympha ?  
Dia quid immundo perluis ora salo ?



## Elegiarum Liber

Frigora, Phœbe, meâ melius captabis in umbrâ,  
Huc ades, ardentes imbue rore comas.  
Mollior egelidâ veniet tibi somnus in herbâ ;  
Huc ades, et gremio lumina pone meo.  
Quàque jaces, circum mulcebit lene susurrans  
Aura me humentes corpora fusa rosas :  
Nec me (crede mihi) terrent Semelëia fata,  
Nec Phaetonteo fumidus axis equo ;  
Cum tu, Phœbe, tuo sapientiùs uteris igni :  
Huc ades, et gremio lumina pone meo.”  
Sic Tellus lasciva suos suspirat amores ;  
Matris in exemplum cætera turba ruunt :  
Nunc etenim toto currit vagus orbe Cupido,  
Languentesque fovet solis ab igne faces.  
Insonuere novis lethalia cornua nervis,  
Triste micant ferro tela corusca novo.  
Jamque vel invictam tentat superâsse Dianam,  
Quæque sedet sacro Vesta pudica foco.  
Ipsa senescentem reparat Venus annua formam,  
Atque iterum tepido creditur orta mari.  
Marmoreas juvenes clamant Hymenæe per urbes,  
Littus, io Hymen, et cava saxa sonant.  
Cultior ille venit, tunicâque decentior aptâ,  
Puniceum redolet vestis odora crocum.  
Egrediturque frequens, ad amœni gaudia veris,  
Virgineos auro cincta puella sinus :  
Votum est cuique suum, votum est tamen omnibus  
Ut sibi, quem cupiat, det Cytherea virum. [unum,  
Nunc quoque septenâ modulatur arundine pastor,  
Et sua, quæ jungat, carmina Phyllis habet.  
Navita nocturno placat sua sidera cantu,  
Delphinâsque leves ad vada summa vocat.  
Jupiter ipse alto cum conjuge ludit Olympo,  
Convocat et famulos ad sua festa Deos.  
Nunc etiam Satyri, cum sera crepuscula surgunt,  
Pervolitant celeri florea rura choro,  
Sylvanusque sua cyparissi fronde revinctus,  
Semicaperque Deus, semideusque caper.  
Quæque sub arboribus Dryades latuere vetustis.  
Per juga, per solos expatiantur agros.

# Elegiarum Liber

Per sata luxuriat fruticetaque Mænalius Pan,  
Vix Cybele mater, vix sibi tuta Ceres ;  
Atque aliquam cupidus prædatur Oreada Faunus,  
Consulit in tepidos dum sibi nymp̃ha pedes ;  
Jamque latet, latitansque cupit malè tecta videri,  
Et fugit, et fugiens pervehit ipsa capi.  
Dii quoque non dubitant cœlo præponere sylvas,  
Et sua quisque sibi numina lucus habet.  
Et sua quisque diu sibi numina lucus habeto,  
Nec vos arboreâ dii precor ite domo.  
Te referant miseris te, Jupiter, aurea terris  
Sæcla : quid ad nimbos aspera tela redis ?  
Tu saltem lentè rapidos age, Phœbe, jugales,  
Quâ potes, et sensim tempora veris eant ;  
Brumaque productas tardè ferat hispida noctes,  
Ingruat et nostro serior umbra polo.



## ELEG. VI.

AD CAROLUM DEODATUM<sup>1</sup> RURI COMMORANTEM.

Qui cùm Idibus Decemb. scripsisset, et sua carmina excusari postulasset si solito nimis essent bona, quod inter lætities, quibus erat ab amicis exceptus, haud satis felicem operam Musis dare se posse affirmabat, hoc habuit responsum.

MITTO tibi sanam non pleno ventre salutem,  
Quâ tu distento fortè carere potes.  
At tua quid nostram prolectat Musa camœnam,  
Nec sinit optatas posse sequi tenebras ?  
Carmine scire velis quàm te redamemque colamque,  
Crede mihi vix hoc carmine scire queas.  
Nam neque noster amor modulis includitur arctis,  
Nec venit ad claudos integer ipse pedes.  
Quàm bene solennes epulas, hilaremque Decembrim,  
Festaque cœlifugam quæ coluere Deum,  
Deliciasque refers, hiberni gaudia ruris,  
Haustaque per lepidos Gallica musta focos !

<sup>1</sup> See Eleg. I. for note.

## Elegiarum Liber

Quid quereris refugam vino dapibusque poësin?  
Carmen amat Bacchum, carmina Bacchus amat.  
Nec puduit Phœbum virides gestâsse corymbos,  
Atque hederam lauro præposuisse suæ.  
Sæpiùs Aoniis clamavit collibus Euœ  
Mista Thyoneo turba novena choro.  
Naso Corallæis mala carmina misit ab agris:  
Non illic epulæ, non satâ vitis erat.  
Quid nisi vina, rosasque, racemiferumque Lyæum,  
Cantavit brevibus Teia Musa modis?  
Pindaricosque inflat numeros Teumesius Euan,  
Et redolet sumptum pagina quæque merum;  
Dum gravis everso currus crepat axe supinus,  
Et volat Eleo pulvere fuscus eques.  
Quadrimoque madens Lyricen Romanus Iaccho,  
Dulce canit Glyceran, flavicomamque Chloen.  
Jam quoque lauta tibi generoso mensa paratu  
Mentis alit vires, ingeniumque fovet.  
Massica fœcundam despumant pocula venam,  
Fundis et ex ipso condita metra cado.  
Addimus his artes, fusumque per intima Phœbum  
Corda; favent uni Bacchus, Apollo, Ceres.  
Scilicet haud mirum, tam dulcia carmina per te,  
Numine composito, tres peperisse Deos.  
Nunc quoque Thressa tibi cælato barbitos auro  
Insonat argutâ molliter icta manu:  
Auditurque chelys suspensa tapetiâ circum,  
Virgineos tremulâ quæ regat arte pedes.  
Illa tuas saltem teneant spectacula Musas,  
Et revocent, quantum crapula pellit iners.  
Crede mihi, dum psallit ebur, comitataque plectrum  
Implet odoratos festa chorea tholos,  
Percipies tacitum per pectora serpere Phœbum,  
Quale repentinus permeat ossa calor,  
Perque puellares oculos, digitumque sonantem.  
Irruet in totos lapsa Thalia sinus.  
Namque Elegia levis multorum cura Deorum est,  
Et vocat ad numeros quemlibet illa suos;  
Liber adest elegis, Eratoque, Ceresque, Venusque,  
Et cum purpureâ matre tenellus Amor.

## Elegiarum Liber

Talibus inde licent convivia larga poetis,  
Sæpiùs et veteri commaduisse mero :  
At qui bella refert, et adulto sub Jove cœlum,  
Heroasque pios, semideosque duces,  
Et nunc sancta canit superûm consulta deorum,  
Nunc latrata fero regna profunda cane,  
Ille quidem parcè, Samii pro more magistri,  
Vivat, et innocuos præbeat herba cibos ;  
Stet prope fagineo pellucida lympha catillo,  
Sobriaque e puro pocula fonte bibat.  
Additur huic scelerisque vacans, et casta juvenus,  
Et rigidi mores, et sine labe manus :  
Qualis veste nitens sacra, et lustralibus undis,  
Surgis ad infensos augur iture Deos.  
Hoc ritu vixisse ferunt post rapta sagacem  
Lumina Tiresian, Ogygiumque Linon.  
Et lare devoto profugum Calchanta, senemque  
Orpheon, edomitis sola per antra feris ;  
Sic dapis exiguus, sic rivi potor Homerus  
Dulichium vexit per freta longa virum,  
Et per monstrificam Perseïæ Phœbados aulam,  
Et vada fœmineis insidiosa sonis,  
Perque tuas, rex ime, domos, ubi sanguine nigro  
Dicitur umbrarum detinuisse greges.  
Diis etenim sacer est vates, divûmque sacerdos,  
Spirat et occultum pectus et ora Jovem.  
At tu siquid agam scitabere (si modò saltem  
Esse putas tanti noscere siquid agam)  
Paciferum canimus cœlesti semine regem,  
Fausta que sacratis sæcula pacta libris ;  
Vagitumque Dei, et stabulantem paupere tecto  
Qui suprema suo cum patre regna colit ;  
Stelliparumque polum, modulantesque æthere turmas,  
Et subitò elisos ad sua fana Deos.  
Dona quidem dedimus Christi natalibus illa,  
Illa sub auroram lux mihi prima tulit.  
Te quoque pressa manent patriis meditata cicutis ;  
Tu mihi, cui recitem, judicis instar eris,

# Elegiarum Liber

ELEG. VII. ANNO ÆTATIS 19.

1628.

NONDUM, blanda, tuas leges, Amathusia, nôram,  
Et Paphio vacuum pectus ab igne fuit.  
Sæpe cupidineas, puerilia tela, sagittas,  
Atque tuum sprevi, maxime, numen, Amor.  
“Tu, puer, imbelles,” dixi, “transfige columbas,  
Conveniunt tenero mollia bella duci :  
Aut de passeribus timidos age, parve, triumphos,  
Hæc sunt militiæ digna trophæ tuæ.  
In genus humanum quid inania dirigis arma ?  
Non valet in fortes ista pharetra viros.”  
Non tulit hoc Cyprius, neque enim Deus ullus ad iras  
Promptior, et duplici jam ferus igne calet.  
Ver erat, et summæ radians per culmina villæ  
Attulerat primam lux tibi, Maie, diem :  
At mihi adhuc refugam quærebant lumina noctem,  
Nec matutinum sustinuerè jubar.  
Astat Amor lecto, pictis Amor impiger alis ;  
Prodidit astantem mota pharetra Deum :  
Prodidit et facies, et dulcè minantis ocelli,  
Et quicquid puero dignum et Amore fuit.  
Talis in æterno juvenis Sigeius Olympo  
Miscet amatori pocula plena Jovi ;  
Aut, qui formosas pellexit ad oscula nymphas,  
Thiodamantæus Naiade raptus Hylas.  
Addideratque iras, sed et has decuisse putares,  
Addideratque truces, nec sine felle, minas.  
Et “miser exemplo sapuisses tutius,” inquit :  
“Nunc mea quid possit dextera, testis eris.  
Inter et expertos vires numerabere nostras,  
Et faciàm vero per tua damna fidem.  
Ipse ego, si nescis, statò Pythonè superbum  
Edomui Phœbum, cessit et ille mihi ;  
Et quoties meminit Penëidos, ipse fatetur  
Certius et gravius tela nocere mea.  
Me nequit adductum curvare peritiùs arcum,  
Qui post terga solet vincere, Parthus eques :

## Elegiarum Liber

Cydoniusque mihi cedit venator, et ille  
Inscius uxori qui necis author erat.  
Est etiam nobis ingens quoque victus Orion,  
Herculeæque manus, Herculesque comes.  
Jupiter ipse licet sua fulmina torqueat in me,  
Hærebunt lateri spicula nostra Jovis.  
Cætera, quæ dubitas, meliùs mea tela docebunt,  
Et tua non leviter corda petenda mihi.  
Nec te, stulte, tuæ poterunt defendere Musæ,  
Nec tibi Phœbæus porriget anguis opem."  
Dixit, et aurato quatiens mucrone sagittam,  
Evolat in tepidos Cypridos ille sinus.  
At mihi risuro tonuit ferus ore minaci,  
Et mihi de puero non metus ullus erat.  
Et modò quà nostri spatiantur in urbe Quirites,  
Et modò villarum proxima rura placent.  
Turba frequens, facieque simillima turba dearum,  
Splendida per medias itque reditque vias;  
Auctaque luce dies gemino fulgore coruscat:  
Fallor? An et radios hinc quoque Phœbus habet?  
Hæc ego non fugi spectacula grata severus,  
Impetus et quò me fert juvenilis, agor:  
Lumina luminibus malè providus obvia misi,  
Neve oculos potui continuisse meos.  
Unam fortè aliis supereminuisse notabam;  
Principium nostri lux erat illa mali.  
Sic Venus optaret mortalibus ipsa videri,  
Sic regina Deûm conspicienda fuit.  
Hanc memor objecit nobis malus ille Cupido,  
Solutus et hos nobis texuit antè dolos.  
Nec procul ipse vafer latuit; multæque sagittæ,  
Et facis a tergo grande pependit onus:  
Nec mora: nunc ciliis hæsit, nunc virginis ori,  
Insilit hinc labiis, insidet inde genis:  
Et quascunque agilis partes jaculator oberrat,  
Hei mihi, mille locis pectus incerne ferit.  
Protinus insoliti subierunt corda furores,  
Uror amans intus, flammaque totus eram.  
Interea misero quæ jam mihi sola placebat,  
Ablata est oculis non reditura meis.

## Elegiarum Liber

Ast ego progredior tacitè querebundus, et excors  
Et dubius volui sæpe referre pedem.  
Findor, et hæc remanet : sequitur pars altera votum  
Raptaque tam subitò gaudia flere juvat.  
Sic dolet amissum proles Junonia cœlum,  
Inter Lemniacos præcipitata focos :  
Talis et abreptum solem respexit, ad Orcum  
Vectus ab attonitis Amphiarus equis.  
Quid faciam infelix, et luctu victus? Amores  
Nec licet inceptos ponere, neve sequi.  
O utinam, spectare semel mihi detur amatos  
Vultus, et coràm tristia verba loqui !  
Forsitan et duro non est adamante creata,  
Fortè nec ad nostras surdeat illa preces !  
Crede mihi, nullus sic infelicitè arsit,  
Ponar in exemplo primus et unus ego.  
Parce precor, teneri cum sis Deus ales amoris,  
Pugnent officio nec tua facta tuo.  
Jam tuus O certè est mihi formidabilis arcus,  
Nate deâ, jaculis nec minus igne potens ;  
Et tua fumabunt nostris altaria donis,  
Solus et in superis tu mihi summus eris.  
Deme meos tandem, verùm nec deme, furores,  
Nescio cur, miser est suaviter omnis amans :  
Tu modò da facilis, posthæc mea siqua futura est,  
Cuspis amatuos figat ut una duos.

Hæc ego, mente olim lævâ, studioque supino,  
Nequitia posui vana trophæa meæ.  
Scilicet abreptum sic me malus impulit error,  
Indocilisque ætas prava magistra fuit.  
Donec Socraticos umbrosa Academia rivos  
Præbuit, admissum dedocuitque jugum.  
Protinùs, extinctis ex illo tempore flammis,  
Cincta rigent multo pectora nostra gelu.  
Unde suis frigus metuit puer ipse sagittis,  
Et Diomedeam vim timet ipsa Venus.

## EPIGRAMMATUM LIBER.

### I.

#### IN PRODITIONEM BOMBARDICAM.

Cum simul in regem nuper satrapasque Britannos  
Ausus es infandum, perfide Fauxe, nefas,  
Fallor? An et mitis voluisti ex parte videri  
Et pensare malâ cum pietate scelus?  
Scilicet hos alti missurus ad atria cœli,  
Sulphureo curru, flammivolisque rotis:  
Qualiter ille, feris caput inviolabile Parcís,  
Liquit Iôrdanios turbine raptus agros.

### II.

#### IN EANDEM.

SICCINE tentâsti cœlo donâsse Iăcobum,  
Quæ septemgeminò Bellua monte lates?  
Nî meliora tuum poterit dare munera numen,  
Parce, precor, donis insidiosa tuis.  
Ille quidem sine te consortia serus adivit  
Astra, nec infernî pulveris usus op̃e.  
Sic potius fœdos in cœlum pelle cucullos,  
Et quot habet brutos Roma profana Deos:  
Namque hac aut aliâ nisi quemque adjuveris arte,  
Crede mihi, cœli vix bene scandet iter.

### III.

#### IN EANDEM.

PURGATOREM animæ derisit Iăcobus ignem,  
Et sine quo superûm non adeunda domus.  
Frenduit hoc trinâ monstrum Latiale coronâ,  
Movit et horrificum cornua dena minax.



# Epigrammatum Liber

Et "nec inultus," ait, "temnes mea sacra, Britanne:  
Supplicium spretâ religione dabis.  
Et si stelligeras unquam penetraveris arces,  
Non nisi per flammâ triste patebit iter."  
O quàm funesto cecinisti proxima vero,  
Verbaque ponderibus vix caritura suis!  
Nam prope Tartareo sublimine rotatus ab igni,  
Ibat ad æthereas, umbra perusta, plagas.

## IV.

### IN EANDEM.

QUEM modô Roma suis devoverat impia diris,  
Et Styge dannârat, Tænarioque sinu;  
Hunc, vice mutatâ, jam tollere gestit ad astra,  
Et cupit ad superos evehere usque Deos.

## V.

### IN INVENTOREM BOMBARDÆ.

IAPETIONIDEM laudavit cæca vetustas,  
Qui tulit ætheream solis ab axe facem;  
At mihi major erit qui lurida creditur arma,  
Et trifidum fulmen surripuisse Jovi.

## VI.

### AD LEONORAM<sup>1</sup> ROMÆ CANENTEM.

ANGELUS unicuique suus, sic credite, gentes,  
Obtigit æthereis ales ab ordinibus.  
Quid mirum, Leonora, tibi si gloria major?  
Nam tua præsentem vox sonat ipsa Deum.  
Aut Deus, aut vacui certè mens tertia cœli  
Per tua secretò guttura serpit agens;  
Serpit agens, facilisque docet mortalia corda  
Sensim immortalis assuescere posse sono.  
Quod si cuncta quidem Deus est, per cunctaque fusus,  
In te unâ loquitur, cætera mutus habet.

<sup>1</sup> Leonora Baroni, a celebrated singer. Milton met her at Cardinal Barberini's. Her mother accompanied her on the lute.

# Epigrammatum Liber

## VII.

### AD EANDEM.

ALTERA Torquatum cepit Leonora poetam,  
Cujus ab insano cessit amore furens.  
Ah miser ille tuo quanto felicitis aëvo  
Perditus, et propter te, Leonora, foret !  
Et te Pieriâ sensisset voce canentem  
Aurea maternæ fila mōvere lyræ :  
Quamvis Dircaë torsisset lumina Pentheo  
Sævior, aut totus desipuisset iners,  
Tu tamen errantes cæcâ vertigine sensus  
Voce eadem poteras composuisse tuâ ;  
Et poteras, agro spirans sub corde, quietem  
Flexanimo cantu restituisset sibi.

## VIII.

### AD EANDEM.

CREDULA quid liquidam Sirena, Neapoli, jactas,  
Claraque Parthenopes fana Acheloiados ;  
Littoreamque tuâ defunctam Naiada ripâ,  
Corpora Chalcidico sacra dedisse rogo ?  
Illa quidem vivitque, et amœnâ Tîbridis undâ  
Mutavit rauci murmura Pausilipi.  
Illic Romulidum studiis ornata secundis,  
Atque homines cantu detinet atque Deos.

## IX.

### IN SALMASII HUNDREDAM.

QUIS expedit Salmasio suam *Hundredam*,  
Picamque docuit verba nostra conari ?  
Magister artis venter, et Jacobei  
Centum exulantis viscera marsupii regis.  
Quodd si dolosi spes refulserit nummi,  
Ipse, Antichristi qui modò primatum Papæ  
Minatus uno est dissipare sufflatu,  
Cantabit ultrò Cardinalitium melos.

# Epigrammatum Liber

## X.

### IN SALMASIUM.

GAUDETE, scombri, et quicquid est piscium salo  
Qui frigida hyeme incolitis argentes freta !  
Vestrum misertus ille Salmasius Eques  
Bonus, amicire nuditatem cogitat ;  
Chartæque largus, apparat papyrinos  
Vobis cucullos, præferentes Claudii  
Insignia, nomenque et decus, Salmasii :  
Gestetis ut per omne cetarium forum  
Equitis clientes, scriniis mugentium  
Cubito virorum, et capsulis, gratissimos.

## XI.

GALLI ex concubitu gravidam te, Pontia, Mori,  
Quis bene moratam, morigeramque neget ?

## XII.

### APOLOGUS DE RUSTICO ET HERO.

1673.

RUSTICUS ex malo sapidissima poma quotannis  
Legit, et urbano lecta dedit Domino :  
Hic, incredibili fructûs dulcedine captus,  
Malum ipsam in proprias transtulit areolas.  
Hactenus illa ferax, sed longo debilis ævo,  
Mota solo assueto, protinus aret iners.  
Quod tandem ut patuit Domino, spe lusus inani,  
Damnavit celeres in sua damna manus ;  
Atque ait, " Heu quanto satius fuit illa Coloni,  
Parva licet, grato dona tulisse animo !  
Possem ego avaritiam frænare, gulamque voracem ;  
Nunc periire mihi et foetus, et ipse parens."

# Epigrammatum Liber

XIII.

AD CHRISTINAM SUECORUM REGINAM,  
NOMINE CROMWELLI.

BELLIPOTENS Virgo, Septem regina trionum,  
Christina, Arctoi lucida stella poli !  
Cernis, quas merui durâ sub casside rugas,  
Utque senex armis impiger ora tero ;  
Invia fatorum dum per vestigia nitor,  
Exequor et populi fortia jussa manu.  
Ast tibi submittit frontem reverentior umbra :  
Nec sunt hi vultus regibus usque truces.

## SYLVARUM LIBER.



### IN OBITUM PROCANCELLARII, MEDICI.

ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

1626.

PARERE Fati discite legibus,  
Manusque Parcæ jam date supplices,  
Qui pendulum telluris orbem  
Iâpeti colitis nepotes.  
Vos si relictæ Mors vaga Tanaro  
Semel vocârit flebilis, heu, moræ  
Tentantur incassum, dolique ;  
Per tenebras Stygis ire certum est.  
Si destinatam pellere dextera  
Mortem valeret, non ferus Hercules,  
Nessi venenatus cruore,  
Æmathiâ jacnisset Oetâ :  
Nec fraude turpi Palladis invidiæ  
Vidisset occisum Ilion Hectora, aut  
Quem larva Pelidis peremit  
Ense Locro, Jove lacrymante.  
Si triste fatum verba Hecatæia  
Fugare possint, Telegoni parens  
Vixisset infamis, potentique  
Ægiali soror usa virgâ  
Numenque trinum fallere si queant  
Artes medentum, ignotaque gramina,  
Non gnarus herbarum Machaon  
Eurypyli cecidisset hastâ :  
Læsisset et nec te, Philyreie,  
Sagitta Echidnæ perlita sanguine ;  
Nec tela te fulmenque avitum,  
Cæse puer genitricis alvo.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. John Goslyn, Regius Professor of Medicine at Cambridge.

## Sylvarum Liber

Tuque, O alumno major Apolline,  
Gentis togatæ cui regimen datum,  
    Froncosa quem nunc Cirrha luget,  
    Et mediis Helicon in undis;  
Jam præfuiſſes Palladio gregi  
Lætus, ſuperſtes, nec ſine gloriâ;  
    Nec puppe luſtrâſſes Charontis  
    Horribiles barathri recessus.  
At fila rupit Perſephone tua,  
Irata, cum te viderit artibus,  
    Succoque pollenti, tot artiſ  
    Faucibus eripuiſſe mortis.  
Colende Præſes, membra precor tua  
Molli quieſcant cespice, et ex tuo  
    Crescant rosæ calihæque buſto,  
    Purpureoque hyacinthus ore.  
Sit mite de te judicium Æaci,  
Subrideatque Ætnæa Proſerpina :  
    Interque felices perennis  
    Elyſio ſpatiere campo.



IN QUINTUM NOVEMBRIS.

ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

1626.

JAM pius extremâ veniens Iacobus ab arcto,  
Teucrigenas populos, latèdque patentia regna  
Albionum tenuit ; jamque, inviolabile fœdus,  
Sceptra Caledoniis conjunxerat Anglica Scotis :  
Pacificusque novo, felix divesque, sedebat  
In solio, occultique doli securus et hostis :  
Cum ferus ignifluo regnans Acheronte tyrannus,  
Eumenidum pater, æthereo vagus exul Olynipo,  
Forte per immensum terrarum erraverat orbem,  
Dinumerans sceleris socios, vernasque fideles,

## Sylvarum Liber

Participes regni post funera mœsta futuros.  
Hic tempestates medio ciet aëre diras,  
Illic unanimes odium struit inter amicos,  
Armat et invictas in mutua viscera gentes ;  
Regnaque oliviferâ vertit florentia pace :  
Et quoscunque videt puræ virtutis amantes,  
Hos cupit adjicere imperio, fraudumque magister  
Tentat inaccessum sceleri corrumpere pectus ;  
Insidiasque locat tacitas, cassesque latentes  
Tendit, ut incautos rapiat ; seu Caspia tigris  
Insequitur trepidam deserta per avia prædam  
Nocte sub illuni, et somno nictantibus astris :  
Talibus infestat populos Summanus et urbes,  
Cinctus cæruleæ fumanti turbine flammæ.  
Jamque fluentisonis albertia rupibus arva  
Apparent, et terra Deo dilecta marino,  
Cui nomen dederat quondam Neptunia proles ;  
Amphitryoniaden qui non dubitavit atrocem,  
Æquore tranato, furiali poscere bello,  
Ante expugnatae crudelia sæcula Trojæ.

At simul hanc, opibusque et festa pace beatam,  
Aspicit, et pingues donis Cerealibus agros,  
Quodque magis doluit, venerantem numina veri  
Sancta Dei populum, tandem suspiria rupit  
Tartareos ignes et luridum olentia sulphur ;  
Qualia Trinaoriâ trux ab Jove clausus in Ætnâ  
Efflat tabifico monstrosus ob ore Typhœus.  
Ignescunt oculi, stridetque adamantinus ordo  
Dentis, ut armorum fragor, ictaque cuspide cuspis.  
Atque, "Pererrato solum hoc lacrymabile mundo  
Inveni," dixit, "gens hæc mihi sola rebellis,  
Contemtrixque jugi, nostrâque potentior arte.  
Illa tamen, mea si quicquam tentamina possunt,  
Non feret hoc impune diu, non ibit inulta."  
Hactenus ; et piceis liquido natat aëre pennis :  
Quâ volat, adversi præcursant agmine venti,  
Densantur nubes, et crebra tonitrua fulgent.

Jamque pruinosas velox superaverat Alpes,  
Et tenet Ausoniæ fines : a parte sinistra  
Nimbifer Appenninus erat, priscique Sabini,

## Sylvarum Liber

Dextra veneficiis infamis Hetruria ; nec non  
Te furtiva, Tíbris, Thetidi videt oscula dantem ;  
Hinc Mavortigenæ consistit in arce Quirini.  
Reddiderant dubiam jam sera crepuscula lucem,  
Cum circumgreditur totam Tricoronifer urbem,  
Panificosque Deos portat, scapulisque virorum  
Evchitur ; præeunt submisso poplite reges,  
Et mendicantùm series longissima fratrum ;  
Cereaque in manibus gestant funalia cæci,  
Cimmeriis nati in tenebris vitamque trahentes :  
Templa dein multis subeunt lucentia tædis,  
(Vesper erat sacer iste Petro) fremitusque canentùm  
Sæpe tholos implet vacuos, et inane locorum.  
Qualiter exululat Bromius, Bromiique caterva,  
Orgia cantantes in Echionio Aracyntho,  
Dum tremit attonitus vitreis Asopus in undis,  
Et procul ipse cavâ responsat rupe Cithæron.

His igitur tandem solenni more peractis,  
Nox senis amplexus Erebi taciturna reliquit,  
Præcipientesque impellit equos stimulante flagello,  
Captum oculis Typhlonta, Melanchætēque ferocem,  
Atque Acherontæo prognatam patre Siopen  
Torpidam, et hirsutis horrentem Phrica capillis.  
Interea regum domitor, Phlegetontius hæres,  
Ingreditur thalamos, neque enim secretus adulter  
Producit steriles molli sine pellice noctes ;  
At vix compositos somnus claudēbat ocellos,  
Cum niger umbrarum dominus, rectorque silentùm,  
Prædatorque hominum, falsâ sub imagine tectus,  
• Astitit ; assumptis micuerunt tempora canis,  
Barba sinus promissa tegit ; cineracea longo  
Syrmate verrit hunum vestis, pendetque cucullus  
Vertice de raso, et, ne quicquam desit ad artes,  
Cannabeo lumbos constrinxit fune salaces,  
Tarda fenestratis figens vestigia calceis.  
Talis, uti fama est, vasta Franciscus eremo  
Tetra vagabatur solus per lustra ferarum,  
Sylvestrique tulit genti pia verba salutis  
Impius, atque lupos domuit, Libycosque leones.

Subdolus at tali Serpens velatus amictu,



## Sylvarum Liber

Solvit in has fallax ora execrantia voces ;  
“ Dormis nate ? Etiamne tuos sopor opprimit artus ?  
Immemor, O, fidei, pecorumque oblite tuorum !  
Dum cathedram, venerande, tuam, diademaque triplex  
Ridet Hyperboreo gens barbara nata sub axe,  
Dumque pharetrati spernunt tua jura Britannii :  
Surge, age ; surge piger, Latius quem Cæsar adorat,  
Cui reserata patet convexi janua cœli,  
Turgentes animos, et fastus frange procaces,  
Sacrilegique sciant tua quid maledictio possit,  
Et quid Apostolicæ possit custodia clavis ;  
Et memor Hesperiae disjectam ulciscere classem,  
Mersaque Iberorum lato vexilla profundo,  
Sanctorumque cruci tot corpora fixa probrosæ,  
Thermodoontêa nuper regnante puellâ.  
At tu si tenero mavis torpescere lecto,  
Crescentesque negas hosti contundere vires ;  
Tyrrenum implebit numeroso milite pontum  
Signaque Aventino ponet fulgentia colle :  
Reliquias veterum franget, flammisque cremabit ;  
Sacraque calcabit pedibus tua colla profanis,  
Cujus gaudebant soleis dare basia reges.  
Nec tamen hunc bellis et aperto Marte lacesces ;  
Irritus ille labor ; tu callidus utere fraude :  
Quælibet hæreticis disponere retia fas est.  
Jamque ad consilium extremis rex magnus ab oris  
Patricios vocat, et procerum de stirpe creatos,  
Grandævosque patres, trabeâ canisque verendos ;  
Hos tu membratim poteris conspergere in auras,  
Atque dare in cineres, nitrati pulveris igne  
Ædibus injecto, quâ convenere, sub imis.  
Protinus ipse igitur quoscunque habet Anglia fidos  
Propositi, factique, mone : quisquamne tuorum  
Audebit summi non jussa facessere Papæ ?  
Perculsosque metu subito, casuque stupentes,  
Invadat vel Gallus atrox, vel sævus Iberus.  
Sæcula sic illic tandem Mariana redibunt,  
Tuque belligeros iterum dominaberis Anglos.  
Et, nequid timeas, divos divasque secundas  
Accipe, quotque tuis celebrantur numina fastis.”

## Sylvarum Liber

Dixit, et adscitos ponens malefidus amictus,  
Fugit ad infandam, regnum illætabile, Lethen.

Jam rosea Eoas pandens Tithonia portas,  
Vestit inauratas redeunti lumine terras ;  
Mœstaque adhuc nigri deplorans funera nati,  
Irrigat ambrosiis montana cacumina guttis :  
Cum somnos pepulit stellatæ janitor aulæ,  
Nocturnos visus, et somnia grata revolvens.

Est locus æternâ septus caligine noctis,  
Vasta ruinosi quondam fundamina tecti,  
Nunc torvi spelunca Phoni, Prodotaque bilinquis,  
Effera quos uno peperit Discordia partu.  
Hic inter cæmenta jacent, præruptaque saxa,  
Ossa inhumata virum, et trajecta cadavera ferro ;  
Hic Dolus intortis semper sedet ater ocellis,  
Jurgiaque, et stimulis armata Calumnia fauces,  
Et Furor, atque viæ moriendi mille videntur,  
Et Timor, exanguisque locum circumvolat Horror ;  
Perpetuòque leves per muta silentia Manes  
Exululant ; tellus et sanguine conscia stagnat.  
Ipsi etiam pavidì latitant penetralibus antri  
Et Phonos, et Prodotes ; nulloque sequente per antrum,  
Antrum horrens, scopulosum, atrum feralibus umbris,  
Diffugiunt sotes, et retrò lumina vortunt :  
Hos pugiles Romæ per sæcula longa fideles  
Evocat antistes Babylonius, atque ita satur.

“ Finibus occiduis circumfusum incolit æquor  
Gens exosa mihi ; prudens natura negavit  
Indignam penitùs nostro conjungere mundo :  
Illuc, sic jubeo, celeri contendite gressu,  
Tartareoque leves dissilentur pulvere in auras  
Et rex et pariter satrapæ, scelerata propago :  
Et quotquot fidei caluere cupidine veræ,  
Consilii socios adhibete, operisque ministros.”  
Finierat ; rigidi cupidè paruere gemelli.

Interea longo flectens curvamine cœlos  
Despicit æthereâ Dominus qui fulgurat arce,  
Vanaque perversæ ridet conamina turbæ,  
Atque sui causam populi volet ipse tueri.

Esse ferunt spatium, quâ distat ab Aside terrâ

## Sylvarum Liber

Fertilis Europe, et spectat Mareotidas undas ;  
Hic turris posita est Titanido; ardua Famæ,  
Ærea, lata, sonans, inutilis vicinior astris  
Quàm superimpositum vel Athos vel Pelion Ossæ.  
Mille fores aditusque patent, totidemque fenestræ,  
Amplaque per tenues translucent atria muros :  
Excitat hic varios plebs agglomerata susurros ;  
Qualiter instrepitant circum mulcralia bombis  
Agmina muscarum, aut texto per ovilia junco,  
Dum Canis æstivum cœli petit ardua culmen.  
Ipsa quidem summâ sedet ultrix matris in arce ;  
Auribus innumeris cinctum caput eminet olli,  
Queis sonitum exiguum trahit, atque levissima captat  
Murmura, ab extremis patuli confinibus orbis.  
Nec tot, Aristoride servator inique juvencæ  
Isidos, immiti volvebas lumina vultu,  
Lumina non unquam tacito nutantia somno,  
Lumina subjectas latè spectantia terras.  
Istis illa solet loca luce carentia sæpe  
Perlustrare, etiam radianti impervia soli :  
Millenisque loquax auditaque visaque linguis  
Cuilibet effundit temeraria ; veraque mendax  
Nunc minuit, modò confictis sermonibus auget.

Sed tamen a nostro meruisti carmine laudes,  
Fama, bonum quo non aliud veracius ullum,  
Nobis digna cani, nec te memorasse pigebit  
Carmine tam longo ; servati scilicet Angli  
Officiis, vaga diva, tuis, tibi reddimus æqua.  
Te Deus, æternos motu qui temperat ignes,  
Fulmine præmisso alloquitur, terræque tremante :  
“Fama, siles? An te latet impia Papistarum  
Conjurata cohors in meque meosque Britannos,  
Et nova sceptrigero cædes meditata Iäcobo?”

Nec plura ; illa statim sensit mandata Tonantis,  
Et, satis antè fugax, stridentes induit alas,  
Induit et variis exilia corpora plumis ;  
Dextra tubam gestat Temesæo ex ære sonoram.  
Nec mora : jam pennis cedentes remigat auras,  
Atque parum est cursu celeres prævertere nubes ;  
Jam ventos, jam solis equos post terga reliquit :

# Sylvarum Liber

Et primo Angliacas, solito de more, per urbes.  
Ambiguas voces, incertaque murmura spargit :  
Mox arguta dolos, et detestabile vulgat  
Proditionis opus, nec non facta horrida dictu,  
Authoresque addit sceleris, nec garrula cæcis  
Insidiis loca structa silet ; stupuere relatis  
Et pariter juvenes, pariter tremuere puellæ,  
Effœtique senes pariter ; tantæque ruinæ  
Sensus ad ætatem subitò penetraverat omnem.

Attamen interea populi miserescit ab alto  
Æthereus Pater, et crudelibus obstitit ausis  
Papicolûm ; capti pœnas raptantur ad acres :  
At pia thura Deo, et grati solvuntur honores ;  
Compita læta focis genialibus omnia fumant ;  
Turba choros juvenilis agit : Quintoque Novembris  
Nulla dies toto occurrit celebratio anno.



## IN OBITUM PRÆSULIS ELIENSIS.<sup>1</sup>

ANNO ÆTATIS 17.

1626.

ADHUC madentes rore squalebant genæ,  
Et sicca nondum lumina  
Adhuc liquentis imbre turgebant salis,  
Quem nuper effudi pius,  
Dum mœsta charo justa persolvi rogo  
Wintoniensis Præsulis.  
Cum centilinguis Fama, proh ! semper mali  
Cladisque vera nuntia,  
Spargit per urbes divitis Britanniæ,  
Populosque Neptuno satos,  
Cessisse morti, et ferreis sororibus,  
Te, generis humani decus,

<sup>1</sup> Nicholas Felton, Bishop of Ely. He died a few days after Andrew:  
Bishop of Winchester.

## Sylvarum Liber

Qui Rex sacrorum illâ fuisti in insula  
Quæ nomen Anguillæ tenet.  
Tunc inquietum pectus irâ protinûs  
Ebulliebat fervidâ,  
Tumulis potentem sæpe devovens deam :  
Nec vota Naso in Ibida  
Concepit alto diriora pectore ;  
Graiusque vates parciûs  
Turpem Lycambis execratus est dolum,  
Sponsamque Neobulen suam.  
At ecce, diras ipse dum fundo graves,  
Et imprecor Neci necem,  
Audisse tales videor attonitus sonos  
Leni, sub aurâ, flamine :  
“Cæcos furores pone, pone vitream  
Bilemque, et irritas minas ;  
Quid temerè violas non nocenda numina,  
Subitòque ad iras percita ?  
Non est, ut arbitraris elusus miser,  
Mors atra Noctis filia,  
Erebove patre creta, sive Erinnye,  
Vastove nata sub Chao :  
Ast illa, cœlo missa stellato, Dei  
Messes ubique colligit ;  
Animasque mole carneâ reconditas  
In lucem et auras evocat ;  
Ut cum fugaces excitant Horæ diem,  
Themidos Jovisque filiæ ;  
Et sempiterni ducit ad vultus Patris :  
At justa raptat impios  
Sub regna furvi luctuosa Tartari,  
Sedesque subterraneas.  
Hanc ut vocantem lætus audiui, citò  
Fœdum reliqui carcerem,  
Volatilesque faustus inter milites  
Ad astra sublimis feror :  
Vates ut olim raptus ad cœlum senex,  
Auriga currus ignei.  
Non me Boëtis terruere lucidi  
Sarraca tarda frigore, aut

## Sylvarum Liber

Formidolosi Scorpionis brachia,  
Non ensis, Orion, tuus.  
Prætervolavi fulgidi solus globum,  
Longèque sub pedibus deam  
Vidi triformem, dum coercerat suos  
Frænis dracones aureis.  
Erraticorum siderum per ordines,  
Per lacteas vehor plagas,  
Velocitatem sæpe miratus novam ;  
Donec nitentes ad fores  
Ventum est Olympi, et regiam crystallinam, et  
Stratum smaragdis atrium.  
Sed hic tacebo ; nam quis effari queat.  
Oriundus humano patre,  
Amœnitates illius loci ? Mihi  
Sat est in æternum frui."



### NATURAM NON PATI SENIUM.

1628.

HEU, quàm perpetuis erroribus acta fatiscit  
Avia mens hominum, tenebrisque immersa profundis,  
Oedipodioniam volvit sub pectore noctem !  
Quæ vesana suis metiri facta deorum  
Audet, et incisas leges adamante perenni  
Assimilare suis, nulloque solubile sæclo  
Consilium fati perituris alligat horis.  
Ergone marcescet sulcantibus obsita rugis  
Naturæ facies, et rerum publica Mater  
Omniparum contracta uterum sterilescet ab ævo ?  
Et se fassa senem, malè certis passibus ibit  
Sidereum tremebunda caput ? Num tetra vetustas,  
Annorumque æterna fames, squalorque situsque,  
Sidera vexabunt ? An et insatiabile Tempus  
Esuriet Cœlum, rapietque in viscera patrem ?  
Heu ! potuitne suas imprudens Jupiter arces

## Sylvarum Liber

Hoc contra munisse nefas, et Temporis isto  
Exemisse malo, gyrosque dedisse perennes?  
Ergo erit ut quandoque sono dilapsa tremendo  
Convexi tabulata ruant, atque obviu ictu  
Stridat uterque polus, superâque ut Olympius aulâ  
Decidat, horribilisque relectâ Gorgone Pallas;  
Qualis in Ægeam proles Junonia Lemnon  
Deturbata sacro cecidit de limine cœli?  
Tu quoque, Phœbe, tui casus imitabere nati;  
Præcipiti curru, subitaque ferere ruinâ  
Pronus, et extincta fumabit lampade Nereus,  
Et dabit attonito feralia sibila ponto.

Tunc etiam aerei divulsis sedibus Hæmi  
Dissultabit apex, inoque allisa barathro  
Terrebunt Stygium dejecta Ceraunia Ditem,  
In superos quibus usus erat, fraternaue bella.

At Pater Omnipotens, fundatis fortius astris,  
Consuluit rerum summæ, certoque peregit  
Pondere Fatorum lances, atque ordine summo  
Singula perpetuum jussit servare tenorem.  
Volvitur hinc lapsu mundi rota prima diurno;  
Raptat et ambitos sociâ vertigine cœlos.  
Tardior haud solito Saturnus, et acer ut olim  
Fulmineum rutilat cristatâ casside Mavors.  
Floridus æternum Phœbus juvenile coruscat  
Nec fovet effœtas loca per declivia terras  
Devexo temone Deus; sed semper amicâ  
Luce potens, eadem currit per signa rotarum.  
Surgit odoratis pariter formosus ab Indis,  
Æthereum pecus albenti qui cogit Olympo,  
Manè vocans, et serus agens in pascua cœli;  
Temporis et gemino dispertit regna colore.  
Fulget, obitque vices alterno Delia cornu,  
Cæruleumque ignem paribus complectitur ulnis.  
Nec variant elementa fidem, solitoque fragore  
Lurida percussas jaculantur fulmina rupes.  
Nec per inane furit leviori murmure Corus,  
Stringit et armiferos æquali horrore Gelonos  
Trux Aquilo, spiratque hyemem, nimbosque volutat  
Utque solet, Siculi diverberat ima Pelori

## Sylvarum Liber

Rex maris, et raucâ circumstrepit æquora conchâ  
Oceani Tubicen, nec vastâ mole minorem  
Ægeona ferunt dorso Balearica cete.  
Sed neque, Terra, tibi sæcli vigor ille vetusti  
Priscus abest, servatque suum Narcissus odorem.  
Et puer ille suum tenet, et puer ille, decorem,  
Phœbe, tuusque, et, Cypri, tuus ; nec ditior olim  
Terra datum sceleri celavit montibus aurum  
Conscia, vel sub aquis gemmas. Sic denique in ævum  
Ibit cunctarum series justissima rerum ;  
Donec flamma orbem populabitur ultima, latè  
Circumplexa polos, et vasti culmina coeli ;  
Ingentique rogo flagrabit machina mundi.



### DE IDEA PLATONICA QUEMADMODUM ARISTOTELES INTELLEXIT.

DICITE, sacrorum præsides nemorum deæ,  
Tuque O noveni perbeata numinis  
Memoria mater, quæque in inmenso procul  
Antro recumbis otiosa Æternitas,  
Monumenta servans, et ratas leges Jovis,  
Cœlique fastos atque ephemeridas Deûm ;  
Quis ille primus, cujus ex imagine  
Natura solers finxit humanum genus,  
Æternus, incorruptus, æquævus polo,  
Unusque et universus, exemplar Dei ?  
Haud ille Palladis gemellus innubæ  
Interna proles insidet menti Jovis ;  
Sed quamlibet natura sit communior,  
Tamen seorsus extat ad morem unius,  
Et, mira, certo stringitur spatio loci :  
Seu sempiternus ille siderum comes  
Cœli pererrat ordines decemplicis,  
Citimumve terris incolit Lunæ globum :  
Sive, inter animas corpus adituras sedens,  
Obliviosas torpet ad Lethes aquas :



# Sylvarum Liber

Sive in remotâ fortè terrarum plagâ  
Incedit ingens hominis archetypus gigas,  
Et diis tremendus erigit celsum caput,  
Atlante major portitore siderum.  
Non, cui profundum cæcitas lumen dedit,  
Diræus augur vidit hunc alto sinu ;  
Non hunc silenti nocte Pleiones nepos  
Vatum sagaci præpes ostendit choro ;  
Non hunc sacerdos novit Assyrius, licet  
Longos vetusti commemoret atavos Nini,  
Priscumque Belon, inclytumque Osiridem ;  
Non ille trino gloriosus nomine  
Ter magnus Hermes, ut sit arcani sciens,  
Talem reliquit Isidis cultoribus.  
At tu, perenne ruris Academi decus,  
(Hæc monstra si tu primus inducti scholis)  
Jam jam poetas, urbis exules tuæ,  
Revocabis, ipse fabulator maximus,  
Aut institutor ipse migrabis foras.



## AD PATREM.

NUNC mea Pierios cupiam per pectora fontes  
Irriguas torquere vias, totumque per ora  
Volvere laxatum gemino de vertice rivum ;  
Ut tenues oblita sonos audacibus alis  
Surgat in officium venerandi Musa parentis.  
Hoc utcunque tibi gratum, pater optime, carmen  
Exiguum meditatur opus ; nec novimus ipsi  
Aptius a nobis quæ possint munera donis  
Respondere tuis, quamvis nec maxima possint  
Respondere tuis, nedum ut par gratia donis  
Esse queat, vacuis quæ redditur arida verbis.  
Sed tamen hæc nostros ostendit pagina census,  
Et quod habemus opum chartâ numeravimus istâ,  
Quæ mihi sunt nullæ, nisi quas dedit aurea Clio,

## Sylvarum Liber

Quas mihi semoto somni peperere sub antro,  
Et nemoris laureta sacri Parnassides umbræ.

Nec tu vatis opus divinum despice carmen,  
Quo nihil æthereos ortus, et semina cœli,  
Nil magis humanam commendat origine mentem,  
Sancta Prometheæ retinens vestigia flammæ.  
Carmen amant superi, tremebundaque Tartara  
carmen,

Ima ciere valet, divosque ligare profundos,  
Et triplici duos Manes adamante coercet :  
Carmine sepositi retegunt arcana futuri  
Phœbades, et tremulæ pallentes ora Sibyllæ :  
Carmina sacrificus solennes pangit ad aras,  
Aurea seu sternit motantem cornua taurum ;  
Seu cum fata sagax fumantibus abdita fibris  
Consultit, et tepidis Parcam scrutatur in extis.  
Nos etiam patrium tunc cum repetemus Olympum,  
Æternæque moræ stabunt immobilis ævi,  
Ibimus auratis per cœli templa coronis,  
Dulcia suaviloquo sociantes carmina plectro,  
Astra quibus, geminique poli convexa sonabunt,  
Spiritus et rapidos qui circumat igneus orbes,  
Nunc quoque sidereis intercinit ipse choreis  
Immortale melos, et inenarrabile carmen ;  
Torrida dum rutilus compescit sibila Serpens,  
Demissoque ferox gladio mansuescit Orion ;  
Stellarum nec sentit onus Maurusius Atlas.  
Carmina regales epulas ornare solebant,  
Cum nondum luxus, vastæque immensa vorago  
Nota gulæ, et modico spumabat cœna Lyæo.  
Tum de more sedens festa ad convivia vates,  
Æsculeâ intonsos redimitus ab arbore crines,  
Heroumque actus, imitandaque gesta canebat,  
Et Chaos, et positi, latè fundamina mundi,  
Reptantesque deos, et alentes numina glandes,  
Et nondum Ætneo quæsitum fulmen ab antro.  
Denique quid vocis modulamen inane juvabit  
Verborum sensusque vacans, numerique loquacis ?  
Silvestres decet iste chorus, non Orphea cantus,  
Qui tenuit fluvios, et quercubus addidit aures,

## Sylvarum Liber

Carmine, non citharâ ; simulacraque functa canendo  
Compulit in lacrymas : habet has a carmine laudes.

Nec tu perge, precor, sacras contemnere Musas,  
Nec vanas inopesque puta, quarum ipse peritus  
Munere, mille sonos numeros componis ad aptos ;  
Millibus et vocem modulis variare canoram  
Doctus Arionii merito sis nominis hæres.  
Nunc tibi quid mirum, si me genuisse poëtam  
Contigerit, charo si tam propè sanguine juncti,  
Cognatas artes, studiumque affine sequamur ?  
Ipse volens Phœbus se dispertire duobus,  
Altera dona mihi, dedit altera dona parenti ;  
Didivumque Deum, genitorque puerque, tenemus.

Tu tamen ut simules teneras odisse Camœnas,  
Non odisse reor ; neque enim, pater, ire jubebas  
Quà via lata patet, quà pronior area lucri,  
Certaque condendi fulget spes aurea nummi :  
Nec rapis ad leges, malé custoditaque gentis  
Jura, nec insulsis damnas clamoribus aures ;  
Sed magis excultam cupiens ditescere mentem,  
Me procul urbano strepitu, secessibus altis  
Abductum, Aoniæ jucunda per otia ripæ,  
Phœbæo lateri comitem sinis ire beatum.  
Officium chari taceo commune parentis ;  
Me poscunt majora : tuo, pater optime, sumptu  
Cum mihi Romuleæ patuit facundia linguæ,  
Et Latii veneres, et quæ Jovis ora decebant  
Grandia magniloquis elata vocabula Graiis,  
Addere suasisti quos jactat Gallia flores ;  
Et quam degeneri novus Italus ore loquelam  
Fundit, barbaricos testatus voce tumultus ;  
Quæque Palæstinus loquitur mysteria vates.  
Denique quicquid habet cœlum, subjectaque cœlo  
Terra parens, terræque et cœlo interfluit aër,  
Quicquid et unda tegit, pontique agitable marmor  
Per te nôsse licet, per te, si nôsse libebit :  
Dimotâque venit spectanda scientia nube,  
Nudaque conspicuos inclinât ad oscula vultus,  
Ni fugisse velim, ni sit libâsse molestum.

I nunc, confer opes, quisquis malesanus avitas

## Sylvarum Liber

Austriaci gazas, Perŭanaque regna praeoptas.  
Quæ potuit majora pater tribuisse, vel ipse  
Jupiter, excepto, donasset ut omnia, cœlo?  
Non potiora dedit, quamvis et tuta fuissent,  
Publica qui juveni commisit lumina nato,  
Atque Hyperionios curus, et fræna diei,  
Et circum undantem radiata luce tiam.  
Ergo ego, jam doctæ pars quamlibet ima catervæ,  
Victrices hederas inter laurosque sedebo ;  
Jamque nec obscurus populo miscelbor inerti,  
Vitabuntque oculos vestigia nostra profanos.  
Este procul vigiles curæ, procul este querelæ,  
Invidiæque acies transverso tortilis hirquo,  
Sæva nec anguiferos extende, calumnia, rictus ;  
In me triste nihil, foedissima turba, potestis,  
Nec vestri sum juris ego ; securaque tutus  
Pectora, vipereo gradiar sublimis ab ictu.

At tibi, chare pater, postquam non æqua merenti  
Posse referre datur, nec dona rependere factis,  
Sit memorâsse satis, repetitaque munera grato,  
Percensere animo, fidæque reponere menti.

Et vos, O rostri, juvenilia carmina, lusus,  
Si modò perpetuos sperare audebitis annos,  
Et domini superesse rogo, lucemque tueri,  
Nec spisso rapiant obliviam nigra sub Orco ;  
Forsitan has laudes, decantatumque parentis  
Nomen, ad exemplum, sero servabitis ævo.



### AD SALSILLUM, POETAM ROMANUM, ÆGRO- TANTEM.

SCAZONTES.

O MUSA, gressum quæ volens trahis claudum,  
Vulcanioque tarda gaudes incessu,  
Nec sentis illud in loco minus gratum,  
Quam cum decentes flava Deïope suras  
Alternat aureum ante Junonis lectum ;

## Sylvarum Liber

Adesdum, et hæc s'is verba pauca Salsillo  
Refer, Camœna nostra cui tantum est cordi,  
Quamque ille magnis prætulit immeritò divis.  
Hæc ergo alumnus ille Londini Milto,  
Diebus hisce qui suum linquens nidum,  
Polique tractum, pessimus ubi ventorum,  
Insanientis impotensque pulmonis,  
Pernix anhela sub Jove exercet flabra,  
Venit feraces Itali soli ad glebas,  
Visum superbâ cognitas urbes famâ,  
Virosque, doctæque indolem juventutis.  
Tibi optat idem hic fausta multa, Salsille,  
Habitumque fesso corpori penitus sanum ;  
Cui nunc profunda bilis infestat renes,  
Præcordiisque fixa damnosum spirat ;  
Nec id pepercit impia, quod tu Romano  
Tam cultus ore Lesbium condis melos.

O dulce divum munus, O Salus, Hebes  
Germana ! Tuque, Phœbe, morborum terror,  
Pythone cæso, sive tu magis Pæan  
Libenter audis, hic tuus sacerdos est.  
Querceta Fauni, vosque rore vinoso  
Colles benigni, mitis Evandri sedes,  
Siquid salubre vallibus fiondet vestris,  
Levamen ægro ferte certatim vati.  
Sic ille, charis redditus rursùm Musis,  
Vicina dulci prata mulcebit cantu.  
Ipse inter atros emirabitur lucos  
Numa, ubi beatum degit otium æternum,  
Suam reclivis semper Ægeriam spectans.  
Tumidusque et ipse Tibris, hinc delinitus,  
Spei favebit annuæ colonorum ;  
Nec in sepulchris ibit obsessum reges,  
Nimiùm sinistro laxis irruens loro :  
Sed fræna meliùs temperabit undarum,  
Adusque curvi salsa regna Portumni.



# Sylvarum Liber

## MANSUS.

Joannes Baptista Mansus, Marchio Villensis, vir ingenii laude, tum literarum studio, nec non et bellicâ virtute, apud Italos clarus in primis est. Ad quem Torquati Tassi Dialogus extat de Amicitia scriptus; erat enim Tassî amicus; ab quo etiam inter Campaniæ principes celebratur, in illo poemate cui titulus *Gerusalemme Conquistata*, lib. 22.

Fia cavalier magnanimit, è cortesi,  
Risplende il Manso--

Is authorem Neapoli commorantem summa benevolentia prosecutus est, multaque ei detulit humanitatis officia. Ad hunc itaque hospes ille, antequam ab eâ urbe discederet, ut ne ingratum se ostenderet, hoc carmen nasci.

Hæc quoque, Manse, tuæ meditantur carmina laudi  
Pierides, tibi, Manse, choro notissime Phœbi;  
Quandoquidem ille alium haud æquo est dignatus  
honore,  
Post Galli cineres, et Mæcænatis Hetrusci.  
Tu quoque, si nostræ tantæ valet aura Camœnæ,  
Victrices hederas inter laurosque sedebis.  
Te pridem magno felix concordia Tasso  
Junxit, et æternis inscripsit nomina chartis:  
Mox tibi dulciloquum non inscia Musa Marimum  
Tradidit; ille tuum dici se gaudet alumnum,  
Dum canit Assyrios divum prolixus amores;  
Mollis et Ausonias stupefecit carmine nymphas.  
Ille itidem moriens tibi soli debita vates  
Ossa, tibi soli, supremaque vota reliquit:  
Nec manes pietas tua chara fefellit amici;  
Vidimus aridentem operoso ex ære poetam.  
Nec satis hoc visum est in utrumque, et nec pia cessant  
Officia in tumulto; cupis integros rapere Orco,  
Quâ potes, atque avidas Parcarum eludere leges:  
Amborum genus, et variâ sub sorte peractam  
Describis vitam, moresque, et dona Minervæ;  
Æmulus illius, Mycalen qui natus ad altam,  
Rettulit Æolii vitam facundus Homeri.  
Ergo ego te, Clius et magni nomine Phœbi,  
Manse pater, jubeo longum salvere per ævum,  
Missus Hyperboreo juvenis peregrinus ab axe.  
Nec tu longinquam bonus aspernabere Masam,

## Sylvarum Liber

Quæ nuper gelidâ vix enutrita sub Arcto,  
Imprudens Italas ausa est volitare per urbes.  
Nos etiam in nostro modulantes flumine cygnos  
Credimus obscuras noctis sensisse per umbras,  
Quà Thamesis latè puris argenteus urnis  
Oceani glaucos perfundit gurgite crines :  
Quin et in has quondam pervenit Tityrus<sup>1</sup> oras.

Sed neque nos genus incultum, nec inutile Phœbo,  
Quà plaga septeno mundi sulcata Trione  
Brumalem patitur longâ sub nocte Boöten.  
Nos etiam colimus Phœbum, nos munera Phœbo,  
Flaventes spicas, et lutea mala canistris,  
Halantemque crocum, perhibet nisi vana vetustas,  
Mimus, et lectas Druidum de gente choreas.  
Gens Druides antiqua, sacris operata deorum,  
Heroum laudes, imitandaque gesta canebant ;  
Hinc quoties festo cingunt altaria cantu,  
Delo in herbosâ, Graiæ de more puellæ,  
Carminibus lætis memorant Corineïda Loxo,<sup>2</sup>  
Fatidicamque Upin,<sup>3</sup> cum flavicoma Hecaërge,  
Nuda Caledonio variatas pectora fuco.

Fortunate senex, ergo quacunque per orbem  
Torquati decus, et nomen celebrabitur ingens,  
Claraque perpetui succrescet fama Marini ;  
Tu quoque in ora frequens venies, plausumque virorum,  
Et pæuli carpes iter immortale volatu.  
Dicetur tum sponte tuos habitasse penates  
Cynthius, et famulas venisse ad limina Musas :  
At non sponte domum tamen idem, et regis adivit  
Rura Pheretiadæ, cœlo fugitivus Apollo ;  
Ille licet magnum Alciden susceperat hospes ;  
Tantum ubi clamoros placuit vitare bubulcos,  
Nobile mansueti cessit Chironis in antrum,  
Irriguos inter saltus, frondosaque tecta,  
Peneium prope rivum : ibi sæpe sub ilice nigrâ,  
Ad citharæ strepitum, blandâ prece victus amicti,  
Exilii duros lenibat voce labores.

<sup>1</sup> Chaucer, called in Spenser's Pastorals, Titysus.

<sup>2</sup> One of the British maidens that brought offerings to Apollo.

<sup>3</sup> Upin, a Druidical prophetess.

## Sylvarum Liber

Tum neque ripa suo, barathro nec fixa sub imo  
Saxa stetero loco ; nutat Trachinia rupes,  
Nec sentit solitas, immania pondera, silvas ;  
Emotæque suis properant de collibus orni,  
Mulcenturque novo maculosi carmine lynces.

Diis dilecte senex, te Jupiter æquus oportet  
Nascentem, et miti lustrarit lumine Phœbus,  
Atlantisque nepos ; neque enim, nisi charus ab ortu  
Diis superis, poterit magno favisce poetæ.  
Hinc longæva tibi lento sub flore senectus  
Vernat, et Æsonios lucratur vivida fusos ;  
Nondum deciduos servans tibi frontes honores,  
Ingeniumque vicens, et adultum mentis acumen.  
O mihi si mea sors talem concedat amicum,  
Phœbæos decorâsse viros qui tam bene nôrit,  
Si quando indigenas revocabo in carmina reges,  
Arturumque etiam sub terris bella moventem !  
Aut dicam invictæ sociali fœdere mensæ  
Magnanimos heroas ; et, O modo spiritus adsit,  
Frangam Saxonicas Britonum sub Marte phalanges !  
Tandem ubi non tacitæ permensus tempora vitæ,  
Annorumque satur, cineri sua jura relinquam,  
Ille mihi lecto madidis astartet ocellis,  
Astanti sat erit si dicam, sim tibi curæ ;  
Ille meos artus, liventi morte solutos,  
Curaret parvâ componi molliter urnâ :  
Forsitan et nostros ducat de marmore vultus,  
Nectens aut Paphiâ myrti aut Parnasside lauri  
Fronde comas, et ego securâ pace quiescam.  
Tum quoque, si qua fides, si præmia certa bonorum,  
Ipse ego cælicolûm semotus in æthera divûm,  
Quod labor et mens pura vehunt, atque ignea virtus  
Secreti hæc aliquâ mundi de parte videbo,  
Quantum fata sinunt ; et totâ mente serenûm  
Ridens, purpureo suffundar lumine vultus,  
Et simul æthereo plaudam mihi lætus Olympos.





# Sylvarum Liber

## EPITAPHIUM DAMONIS.

### ARGUMENTUM

Thyrsis et Damon, ejusdem vineæ pastores, eadem studiâ sequuti, a pueritiâ amici erant, ut qui plurimum Thyrsis animi causa profectus peregre, de obitu Damonis nuncium accepit. Donum postea reversus, et rem ita esse comperto, se suamque solitudinem hoc carmine deplorat. Damonis autem sub persona hic intelligitur CAROLUS DEONATUS, ex urbe Hetruriæ, Luca paterno genere oriundus, cætera Anglus; ingenio, doctrina, clarissimisque cæteris virtutibus, dum viveret, juvenis egregius.

HIMERIDES Nymphæ (nam vos et Daphnin et Hylan,  
Et plorata diu meministis fata Bionis)  
Dicite Sicelicum Thamesina per oppida carmen :  
Quas miser effudit voces, quæ murmura Thyrsis,  
Et quibus assiduâ exercuit antra querelis,  
Fluminaque, fontesque vagos, nemorumque recessus ;  
Dum sibi præreptum queritur Damona, neque altam  
Luctibus exemit noctem, loca sola pererrans.  
Et jam bis viridi surgebat culmus aristâ,  
Et totidem flavas numerabant horrea messes,  
Ex quo summa dies tulerat Damona sub umbras,  
Nec dum aderat Thyrsis ; pastorem scilicet illum  
Dulcis amor Musæ Thuscâ retinebat in urbe :  
Ast ubi mens expleta domum, pecorisque relictæ  
Cura vocat, simul assuetâ seditque sub ulmo,  
Tum verò amissum tum denique sentit amicum,  
Cœpit et immensum sic exonerare dolorem.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hei mihi ! quæ terris, quæ dicam numina cœlo,  
Postquam te immiti rapuerunt funere, Damon !  
Siccine nos linquis, tua sic sine nomine virtus  
Ibit, et obscuris numero sociabitur umbris ?  
At non ille, animas virgâ qui dividit aureâ,  
Ista velit, dignumque tui te ducat in agmen,  
Ignavumque procul pecus arceat omne silentium.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Quicquid erit, certè nisi me lupo antè videbit,  
Indeplorato non comminuere sepulchro,  
Constabitque tuus tibi honos, longumque vigebit  
Inter pastores. Illi tibi vota secundo

## Sylvarum Liber

Solvere post Daphnin, post Daphnim dicere laudes,  
Gaudebunt, dum rura Pales, dum Faunus amabit :  
Si quid id est, priscamque fidem coluisse, piumque,  
Palladiasque artes, sociumque habuisse canorum.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc tibi certa manent, tibi erunt hæc præmia,  
Damon ;

At mihi quid tandem fiet modò ? quis mihi fidus  
Hærebit lateri comes, ut tu sæpe solebas  
Frigoribus duris, et per loca facta pruinis,  
Aut rapido sub sole, siti morientibus herbis ?  
Sive opus in magnos fuit eminus ire leones,  
Aut avidos terrere lupos præsepibus altis ;  
Quis fando sopire diem, cantuque solebit ?

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Pectora cui credam ? quis me lenire docebit  
Mordaces curas, quis longam fallere noctem  
Dulcibus alloquiis, grato cum sibilat igni  
Molle pyrum, et nucibus strepitat focus, at malus  
Auster

Miscet cuncta foris, et desuper intonat ulmo ?

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Aut æstate, dies medio dum vertitur axe,  
Cum Pan æsculeâ somnum capit abditus umbrâ,  
Et repetunt sub aquis sibi nota sedilia Nymphæ,  
Pastoresque latent, stertit sub sepe colonus ;  
Quis mihi blanditiasque tuas, quis tum mihi risus,  
Cecropiosque sales referet, cultosque lepores ?

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
At jam solus agros, jam pascua solus oberro,  
Sicubi ramosæ densantur vallibus umbræ ;  
Hic serum expecto ; supra caput imber et Euris  
Triste sonant, fractæque agitata crepuscula sylvæ.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Heu, quam culta mihi prius arva procacibus herbis  
Involvuntur, et ipsa situ seges alta fatiscit !  
Innuba neglecto marcescit et uva racemo,  
Nec myrteta juvant ; ovium quoque tædet, at illæ  
Mœrent, inque suum convertunt ora magistrum.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.

## Sylvarum Liber

Tityrus ad corylos vocat, Alphesibœus ad ornos,  
Ad salices Aegon, ad ilumina pulcher Amyntas.  
Hic gelidi fontes, hic illita gramina musco,  
Hic Zephyri, hic placidas interstrepit arbutus undas ;  
Ista canunt surdo, frutices ego nactus abibam.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mopsus ad hæc, nam me redeuntem fortè notârat,  
(Et callebat avium linguas, et sidera Mopsus)  
‘Thyrsi, quid hoc?’ dixit : ‘quæ te coquit improbabilis ?  
Aut te perdit amor, aut te malè fascinat astrum ;  
(Saturni grave saepe fuit pastoribus astrum :)  
Intimaque obliquò figit præcordia plumbo.’

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mirantur nymphae ; et ‘quid te, Thyrsi, futurum est ?  
Quid tibi vis ?’ aiunt ; ‘non hæc solet esse juventæ  
Nubila frons, oculique truces, vultusque severi.  
Illa choros, lususque leves, et semper amorem  
Jure petit : bis ille miser qui serus amavit.’

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Venit Hyas, Dryopeque, et filia Baucidis Aegle,  
Docta modos, citharæque sciens, sed perditâ fastu ;  
Venit Idumanii Chloris vicina fluenti ;  
Nil me blanditiæ, nil me solantia verba,  
Nil me, si quid adest, movet, aut spes ulla futuri.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hei mihi, quam similes ludunt per prata juvenci,  
Omnes unanimi secum sibi lege sodales !  
Nec magis hunc alio quisquam secernit amicum  
De grege ; sic densi veniunt ad pabula thoes,  
Inque vicem hirsuti paribus junguntur onagri ;  
Lex eadem pelagi ; deserto in littore Proteus  
Agmina phocarum numerat, vilisque volucrum  
Passer habet semper quicum sit, et omnia circum  
Farra libens volitet, serò sua tecta revisens ;  
Quem si sors letho objecit, seu milvus adunco  
Fata tulit rostro, seu stravit arundine fossor,  
Protinùs ille alium socio petit inde volatu.  
Nos durum genus, et diris exercita fatis  
Gens, homines, aliena animis, et pectore discors ;  
Vix sibi quisque parem de millibus invenit unum ;

## Sylvarum Liber

Aut si sors dederit tandem non aspera votis,  
Illum inopina dies, quâ non speraveris horâ,  
Surripit, æternum linquens in sæcula damnum.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Heu quis me ignotas traxit vagus error in oras  
Ire per aereas rupes, Alpemque nivosam !  
Ecquid erat tanti Romam vidisse sepultam,  
(Quamvis illa foret, qualem dum viseret olim,  
Tityrus ipse suas et oves et rura reliquit ;)  
Ut te tam dulci possem caruisse sodale,  
Possem tot maria alta, tot interponere montes,  
Tot sylvas, tot saxa tibi, fluviosque sonantes !  
Ah ! certè extremum licuisset tangere dextram,  
Et bene compositos placidè morientis ocellos,  
Et dixisse, ‘Vale, nostri memor ibis ad astra.’

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Quamquam etiam vestri nunquam meminisse pigebit,  
Pastores Thusci, Musis operata juvenus :  
Hic Charis, atque Lepos ; et Thuscus tu quoque  
Damon

Antiquâ genus unde petis Lucumonis ab urbe.  
O ego quantus eram, gelidi cum stratus ad Arni  
Murmura, populeumque nemus, quâ mollior herba,  
Carpere nunc violas, nunc summas carpere myrtos,  
Et potui Lycidæ certantem audire Menalcam !  
Ipse etiam tentare ausus sum ; nec puto multum  
Displicui, nam sunt et apud me munera vestra,  
Fiscellæ, calathique, et cerea vincla cicutæ :  
Quin et nostra suas docuerunt nomina fagos  
Et Datis, et Francinus, erant et vocibus ambo  
Et studiis noti, Lydorum sanguinis ambo.

“Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc mihi tum læto dictabat roscida luna,  
Dum solus teneros claudebam cratibus hædos.  
Ah, quoties dixi, cum te cinis ater habebat,  
Nunc canit, aut lepori nunc tendit retia Damon,  
‘Vimina nunc textit, varios sibi quod sit in usus !’  
Et quæ tum facili sperabam mente futura  
Arripui voto levis, et præsentia sinxi ;  
Heus bone numquid agis ? nisi te quid fortè retardat :

## Sylvarum Liber

Imus? et argutâ paulum recubamus in umbrâ,  
Aut ad aquas Colni, aut ubi jugera Cassibelauni?  
Tu mihi percurres medicos, tua gramina, succos,  
Helleborumque, humilesque crocos, foliumque  
hyacinthi,

Quasque habet ista palus herbas, artesque medentum.

Ah, pereant herbae, pereant artesque medentum,  
Gramina, postquam ipsi nil profecere magistro!  
Ipse etiam, nam nescio quid mihi grande sonabat  
Fistula, ab undecimâ jam lux est altera nocte,  
Et tum tortè novis admioram labra cicutis,  
Dissiluere tamen ruptâ compage, nec ultra  
Ferre graves potuere sonos: dubito quoque ne sim  
Turgidulus, tamen et referam; vos cedite, sylvae.

“Ite domum inpasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.

Ipse ego Dardaniâs Rutupina per æquora puppes  
Dicam, et Pandrasidos regnum vetus Inogeniæ,  
Brennumque Arviragumque duces, priscumque  
Belinum,

Et tandem Armoricos Britonum sub lege colonos;  
Tum gravidam Arturo, fatali fraude, Iogernen,  
Mendaces vultus, assumptaque Gorlois arma,  
Merlini dolus. O mihi tum si vita supersit,  
Tu procul annosâ pendebis, fistula, pinu,  
Multum oblita mihi; aut patriis mutata Camœnis  
Brittonicum strides, quid enim? omnia non licet uni,  
Non sperâsse uni licet omnia, mi satis ampla  
Merces, et mihi grande decus (sim ignotus in ævum  
Tum licet, externo penitusque inglorius orbi)  
Si me flava comas legat Usa, et potor Alauni,  
Vorticibusque frequens Abra, et nemus omne Treantæ,  
Et Thamesis meus ante omnes, et fusca metallis  
Tamara, et extremis me discant Orcades undis.

“Ite domum inpasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.

Hæc tibi servabam lentâ sub cortice lauri,  
Hæc, et plura simul; tum quæ mihi pocula Mansus,  
Mansus, Chalcidicæ non ultima gloria ripæ,  
Bina dedit, mirum artis opus, mirandus et ipse,  
Et circum gemino cælaverat argumento:  
In medio Rubri Maris unda, et odoriferum ver,

## Sylvarum Liber

Littora longa Arabum, et sudantes balsama sylvæ  
Hæc inter Phoenix, divina avis, unica terris,  
Cæruleum fulgens diversicoloribus alis,  
Auroram vitreis surgentem respicit undis;  
Parte alia polus omnipotens, et magnus Olympus;  
Quis putet? hic quoque Amor, pietæque in nube  
    pharetræ,

Arma corusca faces, et spicula tincta pyropo;  
Nec tenues animas, pectusque ignobile vulgi  
Hinc ferit; at circum flammantia lumina torquens,  
Semper in erectum spargit sua tela per orbem  
Impiger, et pronos nunquam collimat ad ictus  
Hinc mentes ardere sacræ, formæque decorum.

“Tu quoque in his, nec me fallit spes lubrica, Damon,  
Tu quoque in his certè es, nam quò tua dulcis abinet  
Sanctæque simplicitas, nam quò tua candida virtus?  
Nec te Lethæo fas quæsisisse sub Orco,  
Nec tibi conveniunt lacrymæ, nec flebimus ultra,  
Ite procul lacrymæ; purum colit æthera Damon,  
Æthera purus habet, pluvium pede repulit arcum;  
Heroumque animas inter, divosque perennes,  
Æthereos haurit latices, et gaudia potat  
Ore sacro. Quin tu, cœli post jura recepta,  
Dexter ades, placidusque fave quicumque vocaris,  
Seu tu noster eris Damon sive æquior audis  
Diodatus, quo te divino nomine cuncti  
Cœlicolæ nôrint, sylvisque vocabere Damon.  
Quòd tibi purpureus pudor, et sine labe juvenus  
Grata fuit, quòd nulla tori libata voluptas,  
En etiam tibi virginei servantur honores;  
Ipse caput nitidum cinctus rutilante coronâ,  
Lætæque frondentis gestans umbracula palmæ,  
Æternum perages immortales hymenæos;  
Cantus ubi, choreisque furit lyra mista beatas,  
Festa Sionæo bacchantur et Orgia thyrso.”



# Sylvarum Liber

JAN. 23, 1646.

## AD JOANNEM ROUSIUM OXONIENSIS ACADEMIÆ BIBLIOTHECARIUM.

De libro Poematum amiss-o, quem ille sibi denuo mitti postulabat, ut cum aliis nostris  
in Bibliothecâ publica reponeret, Ode.

### STROPHE I.

GEMELLÆ cultu simplici gaudens liber,  
Fronde licet geminâ,  
Munditieque nitens non operosâ ;  
Quem manus attulit  
Juvenilis olim,  
Sedula tamen haud nimii poetæ ;  
Dum vagus Ausonias nunc per umbras,  
Nunc Britannica per vireta ludit,  
Insons populi, barbitoque devius  
Indulsit patrio, mox itidem pectine Daunio  
Longinquum intonuit melos  
Vicinis, et humum vix tetigit pede :

### ANTISTROPHE.

Quis te, parve liber, quis te fratribus  
Subduxit reliquis dolo ?  
Cum tu missus ab urbe,  
Docto jugiter obsecrante amico,  
Illustre tendebas iter  
Thamesis ad incunabula  
Cærulei patris,  
Fontes ubi limpidi  
Aonidum, thyasusque sacer,  
Orbi notus per immensos  
Temporum lapsus redeunte cœlo,  
Celeberque futurus in ævum ?

### STROPHE II.

Modò quis deus, aut editus deo,  
Pristinam gentis miseratus indolem,  
(Si satis noxas luimus priores,  
Mollique luxu degener otium)

## Sylvarum Liber

Tollat nefandos civium tumultus,  
Almaque revocet studia sanctus,  
Et relegatas sine sede Musas  
Jam penè totis finibus Angligenûm ;  
Immundasque volucres,  
Unguibus imminentes,  
Figat Apollineâ pharetrâ,  
Phineamque abigat pestem procul amne Pegaseo ?

### ANTISTROPHE.

Quin tu, libelle, nuntii licet malâ  
Fide, vel oscitantîâ,  
Semel erraveris agmine fratrum,  
Seu quis te teneat specus,  
Seu qua te latebra, forsân unde vili.  
Callo tereris institoris insulsi,  
Lætare felix : en iterum tibi  
Spes nova fulget, posse profundam  
Fugere Lethen, vehique superam  
In Jovis aulam, remige pennâ :

### STROPHE III.

Nam te Roûsius sui  
Optat peculi, numeroque justo  
Sibi pollicitum queritur abesse ;  
Rogatque venias ille, cujus inclyta  
Sunt data virûm monumenta curæ :  
Teque adytis etiam sacris  
Voluit reponi, quibus et ipse præsidet  
Æternorum operum custos fidelis ;  
Quæstorque gazæ nobilioris,  
Quam cui præfuit Ion,  
Clarus Erechtheides,  
Opulenta dei per templa parentis,  
Fulvosque tripodas, donaque Delphica,  
Ion Actæa genitus Creusâ.

### ANTISTROPHE.

Ergo, tu visere lucos  
Musarum ibis amœnos ;



## Sylvarum Liber

Diamque Phœbi rursus ibis in domum,  
Oxoniâ quam valle colit,  
Delo posthabitâ,  
Bifidoque Parnassi jugo :  
Ibis honestus,  
Postquam egregiam tu quoque sortem  
Nactus abis, dextri prece sollicitatus amici.  
Illic legeris inter alta nomina  
Authorum, Graiar simul et Latinæ  
Antiqua gentis lumina, et verum decus.

### EPIDOS.

Vos tandem, haud vacui mei labores,  
Quicquid hoc sterile fudit ingenium,  
Jam serò placidam sperare jubeo  
Perfunctam invidiâ requiem, sedesque beatas,  
Quas bonus Hermes,  
Et tutela dabit solers Roûsi ;  
Quò neque lingua procax vulgi penetrabit, atque longè  
Turba legentûm prava facesset :  
At ultimi nepotes,  
Et cordatior ætas,  
Judicia rebus æquiora forsitan  
Adhibebit, integro sinu.  
Tum, livore sepulto,  
Sì quid meremur sana posteritas sciet,  
Roûsio favente.

Ode tribus constat Strophis, totidemque Antistrophis, unâ demum Epodo clausis ; quas tametsi omnes nec versuum numero nec certis ubique colis exactè respondeant, ita tamen secuimus, commodè legendi potius, quam ad antiquos concinendi modos rationem spectantes. Alioquin hoc genus rectius fortasse dici monostrophicum debuerat. Metra partim sunt *κατὰ σχέσιν*, partim *ἀπολελειμένα*. Phaleucia quæ sunt, Spondaum tertio loco bis admittunt, quod idem in secundo loco Catullus ad libitum fecit.

# Bibliography



A BIBLIOGRAPHY of all Milton's works, and the works written on his life and works would fill a small volume. We shall give only the principal editions of the Poems.

The "Epitaph on Shakespeare" was his first printed poem ; it appeared in the Folio of the Plays in 1632. "Comus" was the first of his works published. It appeared in 1634 ; anonymously, edited by Henry Lawes, the musician. It was twice published afterwards by Milton, the title being only "A Masque, presented at Ludlow Castle, 1634."

"Lycidas" was published at Cambridge in 1638, in a collection of elegies on the death of Mr. Edward King. "Poems by me, John Milton, in English and Latin," appeared in 1645. They included the beautiful "Allegro" and "Penseroso." Then followed an interval of twenty-two years, during which the poet wrote prose, with the exception of occasional sonnets.

In 1667 appeared "Paradise Lost, a poem written in ten books, by John Milton." It was in 4to.

In 1671, "Paradise Regained, a poem in four books, to which is added Samson Agonistes. Author, J. Milton."

In 1673, "Poems on several Occasions, both English and Latin, composed at several times."

In 1674 he published a second edition of the "Paradise Lost," dividing the ten books into twelve. This was "The Second Edition, revised and augmented by the Author." 8vo.

Milton died in the November of this year, and the next edition was brought out in 1688, "Adorned with Sculptures," that is illustrated. It was in folio, and under Milton's portrait were printed Dryden's celebrated lines. It was published by subscription.

In 1695, P. Hume edited Milton's Poems, adding notes to "Paradise Lost."

Thomas Tickell, the friend of Addison, edited the next

# Bibliography

edition, to which he appended the paper from the *Spectator*, 1720.

Eljah Lenton edited the twelfth edition of *Paradise Lost* in 1726, and prefixed a Memoir of the Author.

Then followed in 1735 Bentleys Edition and objectionable emendations.

Toland had in 1699 published a Life of Milton. In 1734, J. Richardson published Explanatory Notes and Remarks on *Paradise Lost*, and a Life of the Author.

It was followed in 1735 by a good edition of the *Paradise Lost*, by Bishop Newton in two volumes with a Life, Addition, Critique and Note. This went through many editions. In 1752 the bishop edited *Paradise Regained*, and the minor poems. In 1755 Thomas Warton edited the 'Poem upon several Occasions, with Notes Critical and Explanatory.

In 1775 Charles Dunster edited *Paradise Regained*, and prefixed the Argument to each book.

Then came the Standard Edition by the Rev. H. J. Todd, Rector of Allhallows in which all the poetical work of Milton were given with the Poets Life and Note. It was in six volumes, and was a standard work till it was superseded by the Aldine Edition.

The Aldine Edition, published in 1826 was extremely good. It was re-edited in 1857 by John Mitford who added an excellent Life. It has been re-edited by John Braithwaite, M.A., F.L.D. with Mitford's Life (which occupied a volume) suppressed and a Memoir by the new editor.

Sir Herbert Brydges Edition 1835.

In 1870 the Clarendon Press issued an edition of the Poem, edited by R. C. Brown.

In 1872 the Chandos Edition appeared.

In 1874, David Masson edited the Poetical Works, with Introduction, Notes and Essay. It was re-edited in 1897. The Globe Edition is by the same editor.

The Life of Milton has been many times written. The first, by his nephew Philips, is the most valuable, but Masson's Life, etc., in six volumes, is an exhaustive and excellent one, that by Mark Pattison is also good.

The following are the principal authors who have written on Milton and his works. Macaulay in *Edinburgh Review*, 1825, Channing, De Quincey, Lowell, Matthew Arnold, Dean Inge, James Montgomery, Leigh Hunt, W. Howitt.





